





# GOD OF SLAUGHTER

BOOK 07

*Ni Cang Tian*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# God Of Slaughter

(杀神)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆蒼天)

# Synopsis

---

Growing up parentless, Shi Yan, who was left with a large amount of inheritance money, bore a general disinterest in life.

The only times he felt alive was when adrenaline coursed thorough his veins. He quickly found that extreme sports, bungyjumping, cave diving & skydiving, gave him the biggest kicks. The bigger the adrenaline kick, the closer he was to death, the more alive he felt.

Waking up in a pile of dead bodies in an unknown land, after a diving adventure had ended disastrously, he quickly realizes the body he now possessed was not his own.

Follow Shi Yan as he explores this new world where danger lurks around every corner, and death is only a breath away; a world in which Shi Yan could not feel any more alive.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 601: Refining secret treasures

---

The color of the thick golden shell on Shi Yan's body faded away, and its light also dimmed out. Strange energy fluctuations rippled fiercely from the body covered in the golden shell. From time to time, they became more turbulent.

Boom!

The hard gold shell fragmented into small pieces, just like a torn sheet of fabric. It revealed Shi Yan, with the gold color body inside as if he were wearing glittering gold clothes, which looked both beautiful and dazzling.

While squinting, Shi Yan was really joyful. Gradually, he laughed out loud.

He used the Soul Consciousness to check his body. His bones were now golden, which were refined by the Golden Marrow, exactly the same as the Golden Skeleton.

Not only that, the Golden Marrow had flooded his flesh and vessels, turning into a strange gold energy that blended into his five main internal organs and the great eight meridians to nurture his body.

The reason why his body had the golden hue was because of the Petrification Martial Spirit. After the marrow washing process, Shi Yan's Petrification Martial Spirit had evolved one more time. Now, it was gold, and not red anymore.

In the Shi family, the Petrification Martial Spirit had four levels. In each level, the skin color would be different: ash-gray, dark-brown, yellowish-green, and purple-red.

Before that, when his martial spirit had changed, he had got the purple-red hue, which was considered entering the peak of the Shi family's Petrification Martial Spirit.

He thought that it was the final form, and his body wouldn't

change furthermore.

However, he recognized that he was wrong, as his Petrification Martial Spirit had entered another level after the Golden Marrow washing and nurturing process. Now, his body was gold.

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan felt the changes of his body in silence. He didn't urge his thought, just relaxed his mind. The color of his body faded, returning to the original skin color.

However, when his nerves got tense, or his fighting will was triggered, his body, including blood and flesh, would turn gold. Each muscle of his would be filled with an immense life power. Each meridian would become strangely tenacious, which would accelerate the moving speed of Essence Qi. The muscles of his entire body would release a torrential gold energy, which was sharply irreversible.

The golden body that was washed and refined by the Golden Marrow obviously had a part of the Golden Giant's energy.

Shi Yan laughed contentedly as he was overjoyed.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea slowly got up from the ditch. Their whole bodies glistened with a golden hue. They had collected all the left Golden Marrow in the ditch. Now, they were using the secret techniques of the Corpse Clan to rebuild their bones.

Members of the Corpse Clan understood how to use the Five Elements powers well. After Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea had taken the Golden Marrow of the Golden Giant, their physical strength had increased tremendously.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were sparkling with a golden hue. At the same time, their eyes showed an imposing and solemn divine aura. This surprised Shi Yan a lot.

They were the clansmen of the Corpse Clan, but they had the aura that only the Golden Giant had after taking in the Golden Marrow. It made them truly extraordinary.

Boundless prospects!

Shi Yan was shocked discreetly, giving them a compliment. He knew the two of them had received the Corpse Clan's inheritance. In the future, their world would be much wider.

His strange living beings, including the War Devil, the Ghost Hunter, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Devouring Gold Silkworm, all disappeared except for the War Devil.

While frowning, Shi Yan checked the mountain. He felt a greater surprise. Not long after that, his eyes showed his joy.

The Ghost Hunter, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Devouring Gold Silkworm were strange demonic beasts. The Holy Spirit God wasn't a beast, but it had a body. To these strange creatures, the beast skeletons in this space were the best nutrients.

When demonic beasts reached level 9, even if it had died for ten thousand years and its body was all decayed, its energy still remained in the bones. Although it was feeble, this energy was scattering from time to time. If it were too long ago, this sort of energy would drain up.

However, the time of death of these skeletons in this space wasn't too long. Their bones still kept some energy.

Furthermore, there were level 10 beasts here!

At this level, ten thousand years wasn't enough to disperse the energy in the bones.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea had taken the bones here to absorb the energy from them. The Ghost Hunter, King of Demonic Insects, Devouring Gold Silkworm, and the Holy Spirit God were doing the same.

The four strange creatures scattered around. They found a giant beast skeleton each and took in the energy using different methods.



The white-jade, translucent bones were turning gray, as the energy inside was taken. After they had drained the energy out, those bones would turn into gray ashes immediately.

It seemed these four had started a long time ago. From the mountain, he could see four skeletons, which were hundreds of meters tall, about to be depleted.

At this speed, not long after that, those skeletons would become scraps, and they would have nothing else of value.

After watching for a while, Shi Yan contemplated and then plunged away from the mountain peak. He flew towards the dragon-shaped beast skeleton, the one that the four strange living beings hadn't laid their eyes on. This skeleton was completely preserved. It was still as beautiful as a masterpiece of white jade, shining with silver rays.

Swoosh!

The Earth Flame shot out from his palm, moving according to his thought. It fiercely tangled with the giant skeleton.

The Storage Ring flashed, as auxiliary materials flew out. Enhanced with different techniques, they were poured into the skeleton and melted together with the bones under the heat of the Earth Flame.

Bone Refining Technique was a popular refining treasure method. It used the good quality bones to be the main material. This technique didn't change the structure of the primary material, but purified it with the fiery flame. Then, the auxiliary materials were used to enhance the toughness and hardness of the bones, which directly turned the bones into a secret treasure.

Bone Refining Technique wouldn't change the original shape of the main material. The blacksmith only needed to carve the formation to enhance the firmness, and create a Yin and Yang Generating Formation to maintain and generate the energy of the

bones. This step completed the treasure.

This refining method wasn't complicated, but it had a high requirement of the main materials. If the key material wasn't of good quality, even if the blacksmith added more auxiliary substances, he couldn't carve the formation.

That dragon skeleton was undoubtedly that of a level 10 beast. After so many years, it was still white as jade, even though the energy was worn out. This showed that the beast must have been a formidable one when it was still alive.

The skeleton of a level 10 beast was the absolutely perfect main material. With the Bone Refining Technique as the basis, Shi Yan was making many complex and ever-changing hand seals. Written charms were portrayed around that skeleton.

Crack Crack Crack!

Under the heat of the Earth Flame, the skeleton fractured gradually. Contaminants were separated. The skeleton started to shrink. The energy inside the bones started to flow out from the three thigh bones which were around hundreds of meters long.

Gathering and condensing the energy of the bones to the essence was the feature of the Bone Refining Technique.

He had condensed the energy of the seven-hundred-meters tall dragon skeleton using the Earth Flame and the auxiliary materials into three giant thighbones. After losing the energy, under the heat of the Earth Flame, the skeleton was burned into ashes, scattering away.

Shi Yan squinted, as a light flashed in his eyes. His Soul Consciousness moved like a saber, carving the formation on the three massive thighbones. His hands were moving, forming numerous hand seals.

Long afterward...

The hundreds-meter tall thighbones were shrunk to three

meters. They looked like three spears with many complicated and mysterious scriptures covering the jade-like bone, which made the spears more exquisite, splendid, and pretty sharp.

He could see the delicate energy fibers perfectly moving inside the three long spears following the formations carved on them.

Shi Yan suddenly sat down neatly. His finger was placed on his glabella. The host soul flew out, entering the spears directly to mark his soul seal into the three spears. This helped him manipulate the spears as he pleased.

The three bones from the level 10 beast were as sharp as lightning strikes. When his mind flickered, they flew and drew sharp, cold curves in the air, which could frighten people easily.

Unfortunately, the beast' soul had long scattered. He couldn't take the soul to add into these Bone Thorns to give them intelligence. Without intelligence, the Bone Thorn couldn't become a Divine Grade treasure. At rank 3, it was good enough.

Three flows of his Soul Consciousness poured into the Bone Thorns as Shi Yan urged his Soul Consciousness with space power. The Bone Thorns disappeared instantly. After fifteen minutes, they could reappear a thousand miles away, as if they could teleport in just a blink.

Shi Yan cracked a smile and nodded silently.

"Come back!" He shouted. The three bones tore the space as rapidly as the. They appeared abruptly at the time he stopped thinking.

His finger pointed at the void, and the three bones turned into three white beams of light, disappearing into his Storage Ring. They became the first secret treasures that he had ever made. And, they were Sacred Grade treasures.

At this moment, he got to know that warriors in Antiquity Time all knew how to refine and forge weapons. God Realm warriors

could even use their host soul as the mediator to refine the Divine Grade weapon of their lives.

The life weapon and its master were interlinked mentally, and its power would be tremendous. If the life weapon were damaged, the master would be wounded the same. However, the life weapon brought up a great advantage. Together with the master's increasing realm, it could also improve its quality and power.

During that epoch, the life weapon was the most precious asset of a warrior, even more important than his wife.

The three Bone Thorns that he had created using the Bone Refining Technique weren't divine weapons, and they couldn't be his life divine weapons. Also, their power didn't reach that level, and they wouldn't bind with him either.

He put the three Bone Thorns away and took another round around this space. However, he couldn't find more suitable materials. Energy in the skeletons of some level 7 or level 8 demonic beasts was almost drained off. They didn't have a high value to him.

The Ghost Hunter, King of Demonic Insects, the Devouring Gold Silkworm, and the Holy Spirit God had occupied the valuable skeletons, absorbing the energy with joy.

While he was waiting begrudgingly, Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea descended from the broken mountain. The two of them said before they had even reached near him, "Somebody is breaking into our territory."

# Chapter 602: Ghost Hunter breaks through!

---

"Breaking in your territory? Out there?" Shi Yan was surprised.

He knew that Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea could use their souls to contact the members of the Corpse Clan out there and report the situation quickly. Anyway, at this time, the forces in the Endless Sea were all well-behaved, and Qing Ming was dead. Logically, there shouldn't be anyone who dared to provoke the Cold Wind Island.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea nodded, as a malicious light sparkled in their deep green eyes. Obviously, they were enraged.

The essence of the Golden Marrow had absorbed into their bones, which made these two members of the Corpse Clan extremely robust and tenacious. Perhaps, when they joined hands, even a Third Sky of Spirit Realm warrior couldn't defeat them.

"We should check it out," Shi Yan pondered. At first, he sent his thought to the Ghost Hunter, the Devouring Gold Silkworm, and King of Demonic Insects to ask them to stay here and absorb more energy from the skeletons. Then, he left with the War Devil.

The sharp wind howled through the Cold Wind Island. Corpses piled up like mountain ranges. Many clansmen of the Corpse Clan, who obviously had wisdom, had the emotional light that only high-grade races could have in their eyes.

Two members of the Corpse Clan wearing ash-gray armor came out from the crowd. They came and greeted Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea with great respect. Then, they used their own language to report Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea.

"The Cao family," The ever-pale face of Corpse Mount was surprised for a while. He looked at the South-West direction of the Cold Wind Island. "Let's go there and check."

Shi Yan didn't have any opinion, and he was suspicious too. He

had no clue why members of the Cao family came here.

When Shi Yan, Corpse Mount, and Corpse Sea stood firmly on a burial area in the South-West of the Cold Wind Island, they had their faces changed as their fright grew bigger in their hearts.

Cao Qiu Dao, Cao Zhi Lan, Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun, Man Gu...

Many outstanding warriors of the Tuta Sea appeared together at this burial area. However, their distressed appearances made Shi Yan curious. Even Cao Qiu Dao looked a bit miserable as if he had fought with a big enemy.

Man Gu and Fan Xiang Yun had a glum expression. There was no bright light in their eyes, and they looked miserable. Shi Yan didn't know what they had suffered.

After they saw Shi Yan, they were even more shocked than him. All of them screamed in awe.

Cao Zhi Lan's beautiful eyes brightened, but then dimmed out as if she had remembered something, her face longing.

Cao Qiu Dao was frank. He took a deep breath, frowned, then said solemnly, "We just passed by, and we wanted to notify you that you should leave. Currently, the Endless Sea..."

"What did you say?" Shi Yan shuddered. He knew something earth-shaken had happened. "What happened?"

"Dark Clan's hotshots from the Seven-layered Underworld and the Demon Area have invaded the Endless Sea again. Besides your Kyara Sea, human forces in the other seas have been invaded..."

Cao Qiu Dao was bitter. His complexion was lonely and grim. He shook his head and then sighed.

Shi Yan discolored as he shouted, "How could it be?"

"You've been here for more than one year. Of course, you didn't know the situation out there." Cao Qiu Dao was quite sad. "One

year ago, you killed Qing Ming. Then, you entered the Cold Wind Island. During one year, storms have raged over the Endless Sea again. The Dark Clan and the Demon Clan have invaded us one more time. They are stronger than the previous time. In the Endless Sea, no one can resist them."

"No one can resist them? Even you?" Shi Yan was frightened.

"Whether they are the Dark Clan or the Demon Clan, they all have True God Realm experts. You say if I can deal with them or not." Cao Qiu Dao grimaced. "The Tuta Sea's over. The Yin Yang Fairyland and the Desolate Barbarian School are almost eradicated. Except for us here, the members of the Cao family have all perished. I basically don't have the power to overturn this."

Cao Zhi Lan's pretty face was covered with tears. She trembled gently as she was utterly heartbroken.

The Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun, who was always charming, was now paled with grief. She clenched her teeth as her eyes were filled with a sinister light. Man Gu's expression was wild and brutal, as though he was an imprisoned beast who wanted to bite everybody. His eyes were congested.

Shi Yan was startled.

He didn't realize that he had spent over one year in that strange space with the beast skeletons. The Endless Sea had such a big change, which was beyond his estimation.

It was his luck that he had completed the Teleport connecting the Yang family and the Radiant God Cult...

This made him relax his tense nerves a little bit. He knew that with the Teleportation Formation, when the Yang family sensed the situation wasn't going well, they would mobilize the core generation to the Radiant God Cult in the Divine Great Land.

The Radiant God Cult had Yun Hao, a True God Realm warrior, to guard the place. The seven old factions in the Divine Great Land

all had such intimidating existences; they even had the divine weapons. When these strong forces joined hands, the Divine Great Land shouldn't meet unexpected things shortly.

As long as the Yang family was safe, he didn't need to be worried much. "I haven't been out for one year, so I'm not clear about the whole picture of the Endless Sea. Precursor Cao, could you please explain in detail?"

He didn't have a good feeling towards Cao Qiu Dao. This old man was sinister, and the members of the Cao family had aimed at him many times. Cao Zhi Lan's heart was as menacing as a viper. He had received a lot of bitter fruits from them. Today, seeing their misfortune, Shi Yan felt a little bit pleased.

"Alright," Cao Qiu Dao didn't hesitate and frankly told him what had happened during this year in detail.

Due to the great change in the world, the Heaven Gates connected the Seven-layered Underworld and the Fourth Demon Area were broken. People from the three areas could enter the other area through the space channel. When it first happened, warriors of the Endless Sea thought it was a lucky chance. They had organized many troops to get into the two other worlds to collect cultivating materials.

However, they knew they were wrong shortly.

They found that the Fourth Demon Area had Demon Clan's hotshot, who was stronger than the Spirit Realm! They discovered that Abi, Dark Sky, and Hades, the three great Yama Kings, had all entered the True God Realm!

When their news reached the Endless Sea, all forces there were startled. However, the other didn't wait for them to find a countermeasure. Hotshots of the Dark Clan led by Abi, Dark Sky, and Hades descended on the Endless Sea for the second time.

Abi, Hades, and Dark Sky, the three Yama Kings had reached the



True God Realm. In the Endless Sea, no one could resist them.

Each of the three great Yama Kings was in charge of one Sea. They carried out invasion the Tuta Sea, the Yuan Luo Sea, and the Dark Water Territory. People in these three sea areas had fallen into misery. Human warriors were almost uprooted.

At the same time, experts of the Demon Clan had also entered the Kyara Sea and the Vault of Heaven Sea. The Yang family had soon prepared. They sent their core disciples away. The Yang family didn't suffer a significant loss. Tang Yuan Nan of the Three Gods Sect had received the request from Yang Tian Emperor, so he had moved his disciples to the Radiant God Cult before. All had escaped this calamity.

However, because the Martial Spirit Palace and the Penglai Holy Land in the Vault of Heaven Sea didn't have the Teleport Formation to leave, they no longer existed. Yang Yi Tian, the Master of the Spirit Martial, who was at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, was killed by a True God Realm expert of the Demon Clan. The Penglai Holy Land was eradicated.

It was just one year, but the human forces around the Endless Sea were all crushed, just like people breaking dried branches. Besides the Yang family and the Three Gods Sect, almost all forces were destroyed.

Cao Qiu Dao's force was at the end of the escape road. Since they knew the Corpse God Sect had a special space slit, they ran to this place to find shelter in that space slit. They hoped to escape the pursuit of Yama King Hades, who was in charge of the Tuta Sea.

"It has not been easy for you to survive until now," Shi Yan mused for a while. He smiled, but his eyes didn't smile. "Too bad, your fortune isn't good enough..."

"Why do you say that?" Cao Qiu Dao was trembling, but he was still calm.

"The area that space slit leads to isn't big enough. Moreover, it's a dead area. You can't go there." Shi Yan laughed evilly. "In other words, if you get there, you will be like a fish in the tank. You will never have the second chance to run away."

At this point, those human experts all felt disappointed. They sighed as they thought that their lives had come to an end.

"We still want to go there and check," Cao Qiu Dao was persistent.

Shi Yan smiled and shook his head. "I'm sorry. This place doesn't belong to you guys. You should return to where you came from."

Cao Qiu Dao was enraged. "Shi Yan, I don't want to mess with you. We want to live! Don't force me!"

"Cao Qiu Dao, honestly, you don't have the power that I have to be afraid of." Shi Yan didn't take notice of Cao Qiu Dao's threat. He smiled faintly, calling the Ghost Hunter, the Devouring Gold Silkworm, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Holy Spirit God. While waiting for them, he said neither slowly nor fast. "If you want to die, actually, you don't need to wait for Yama King Hades. I can help you with it."

Cao Qiu Dao turned his head. With only one glance, his face turned the color of the soil.

ROAR!

A raging roar soared up into the sky from the Ghost Hunter. Its murderous, ruthless aura had triggered the energy of earth and heaven. Clusters of cloud that were filled with a murderous aura gathered above the Cold Wind Island, covering the light from the sun, moon, and stars. It created a tremendous pressure on everybody.

Low-realm warriors like Cao Zhi Land paled. They were shivering, as a helpless feeling rose from deep inside their souls.

Even Cao Qiu Dao was frightened, his eyes dull.

Shi Yan was amazed, too. He looked at the Ghost Hunter and found that this monster had a halo that looked like silvery liquid lingering on its body. On its fierce face, an incomparably evil red pair of eyes sparkled with brutal, murderous intents.

The aura of the Ghost Hunter was like a range of mountains that people couldn't reach, giving people an inexplicable subduing feeling that could even oppress the souls.

Level 9 beast!

At first glance, Shi Yan knew that the Ghost Hunter had broken through to a brand new realm.

"Master, I'm Ghost Hunter. Do you need me to kill all of them?" The Ghost Hunter sauntered towards him. Its ferocious face slowly changed, while the thorns had retreated into its body.

He still strolled towards Shi Yan. However, before he'd reached him, he had turned into a young man with a garnet pair of eyes. His bearing was strange and evil. The physique of this young man was sharp and truncate. His delicate, handsome face could dazzle many women. Although he had attractive features outlined by silver clothes, he still had a faint scent of blood.

Shi Yan was stunned like a wooden rooster.

# Chapter 603: The Race Catastrophe

---

"Do you want me to kill all of them?"

The Ghost Hunter talked to him softly, without any emotions. He made it look like killing Cao Qiu Dao's group wasn't harder than smashing an ant. His face was like he didn't put them into his eyes.

However, Cao Qiu Dao, Cao Zhi Lan, and Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun felt as if they had fallen into an ice chamber. Even their souls felt chilled.

The Ghost Hunter had reached level 9!

At this level, the beast was as strong as a human True God Realm expert. Only with their physical strength, they could move the mountain or level the sea. Not only they had the wisdom, but also the innate supernatural powers, which made them more dangerous than a new True God Realm warrior.

The good-looking face of the Ghost Hunter exposed his cold and brutal aura. Looking into his red-blood eyes, people knew right away he wasn't a good person.

The Ghost Hunter had just broken through a new realm, so he really wanted to try his new abilities. He wanted to use Cao Qiu Dao to test his new strength.

Shi Yan squinted as he cracked a forced smile. "You... I didn't think that you could break through that fast. You're such an alien."

The Ghost Hunter's level up speed was much faster than his. Shi Yan still remembered the first time he saw the Ghost Hunter. At that time, this beast was just a level 6 beast. It had been just a few years, and the Ghost Hunter had entered level 9, a high rank of demonic beasts. The power of this level wouldn't be less than his.

Shi Yan's smile bloomed as he was giving the beast compliments in his heart. He squinted and looked at Cao Qiu Dao's group.

Under his scrutinizing look, Cao Qiu Dao, Fan Xiang Yun, and the others kept their mouths shut. They had reached the Spirit Realm, but they were begrudging at this moment, as they regretted turning their back on Shi Yan that year.

The one who had the biggest regret was Cao Zhi Lan...

That year, she had favored Shi Yan's potential a lot, so she did want to create a good relationship with him. When his martial spirit got mutated and he was hurt by Chi Yan, she thought that Shi Yan's future had ended from here. That's why she had changed her attitude.

If she could be more persistent, she would have found that Shi Yan's potential wasn't something she could predict.

Unfortunately, one wrong move would make for a lifetime of regret. She was always confident that she was wise with eyes like the torch. But her deeds planned on Shi Yan had affected the Cao family.

'If, If I had endured, and I still stood next to him, perhaps the Cao family would have stepped in the Divine Great Land now.' Cao Zhi Lan was sad, tears lingering in her eyes.

"Do you still want to provoke me?" Shi Yan curled his lips, smiling quietly. He waved his hand nonchalantly. "I don't want to do anything with you guys. You should return to where you come from."

With the power and the position he had now, if he wanted to humiliate Cao Zhi Lan, he could do as he pleased. Cao Qiu Dao, because of the general picture, wouldn't dare to protest against him.

However, as his vision was wider, he wasn't as narrow-minded as before. At this moment, the pagans were raging all over the Endless Sea. Human warriors fell everywhere. Even Yang Yi Tian was killed. The hotshots remaining included only Cao Qiu Dao and

Fan Xiang Yun.

Anyway, they were all human. In this calamity, they shouldn't develop grudges against each other.

"We aren't provoking," Cao Qiu Dao took a deep breath, his face grim. "Shi Yan, we just want to live, a difficult dream at this moment. If you could help us, we agree to give you everything."

"Everything?" Shi Yan frowned. His eyes sparkled coldly. "What do you have to give? To me, all of you aren't worth my help."

"Shi Yan, it's all my fault. I beg you to help us." All of a sudden, Cao Zhi Lan stepped forward. In front of everybody, she kneeled down. Her white neck craned as she was whining. "As long as you save the Cao family from this calamity, I'm willing to receive any punishment."

"Little Lan!"

Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun screamed in unison. They hurried to lift her up.

However, she was so stubborn. She kneeled down, tearing rolling on her face. She was looking at Shi Yan with yearning and begging intentions in her eyes.

"Don't beg him!" Cao Qiu Dao was indignant, thundering. "Our Cao family has stood firm in the Endless Sea for thousands of years. It's not easy to uproot us all. We will definitely have a chance to live."

"No, it's different this time... It's different..." Cao Zhi Lan scooped and cried. "No one can help us this time. They are... They are so strong. Yang Yi Tian and Gu Xiao are dead. One by one, they both died. The Endless Sea is now hell on Earth. If we don't leave, we can't survive."

Cao Zhi Lan was grim and mournful.

Fan Xiang Yun intended to advise Cao Zhi Lan, but having heard

her say so, she just sighed, shaking her head and not saying anything. She then turned to Shi Yan, her eyes begging.

"Shi Yan, if you are a man, don't be arrogant!" Man Gu shouted. "If you can save us, my life will belong to you! No matter what you want to do to me, kill me or hit me, you can do anything!"

Shi Yan was surprised.

Swinging his hand to signal everybody to calm down, he closed his eyes and released his Soul Consciousness to survey the entire Tuta Sea.

The Soul Consciousness with space power glided rapidly above the Tuta Sea like lightning. Images of numerous islets there were sent to his Sea of Consciousness like stars in the sky. He received the direct-view situation of the Tuta Sea.

The Tuta Sea had many islets. Under his Soul Consciousness surveying, he saw all the inhabited islands ruined and burned down. Columns of black smoke appeared on some islets as the houses were all burned.

The vast jungle was charred in a sea of fire. Countless spiritual mountains and lakes were gray and desolate.

Creatures were living in misery everywhere his Soul Consciousness had passed by. This picture was like hell on Earth. Civilians became slaves, as the warriors of the Underworld drove them like a herd of sheep towards the Underworld boundary.

Against the human warriors with relatively high cultivation base, the hotshots of the Underworld had used some mysterious treasures to force their vitality and Essence Qi out of their bodies. Their deaths were tragic as, all of them had turned into withered corpses.

At the main base of the Yin Yang Fairyland and the Desolate Barbarian School, warrior corpses flooded the place. Many blood-dripping skulls were kept around the small island, as if bragging

about their bloody and imposing triumph.

...

Many unbearable footages were sent to him through the Soul Consciousness, projecting on his Sea of Consciousness.

He was a coldhearted man, and he didn't want to interfere. However, when his mind opened, his calm face started to become indignant and brutal.

So cruel!

The race war made genocide their goal. Getting the images of those terrible operations, Shi Yan, a coldhearted man, couldn't help but let the anger inflame him.

"You don't need to be enraged. No matter which epoch it is, the war between races is always merciless and ruthless." The Ice Cold Flame sent its soul fluctuations from the Blood Vein Ring. "As far as I've known, to get the ruling position, mankind had done the same to the other races no matter it was the Dark Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, or the Ghost Mark Clan. That's why they had a deep resentment to mankind. It wasn't something unreasonable..."

Shi Yan's face darkened. He nodded quietly as he had accepted what the Ice Cold Flame had told him. But it didn't mean he approved and would let the situation develop furthermore.

The situation was like this in the Tuta Sea. Perhaps, it was the same bloody scenes in the other sea areas in the Endless Sea.

Musing for a while, he took a deep breath, then talked to Cao Qiu Dao, "From now on, all of you will join the Yang family. I'm going to help you get out of this place. I'll try my best to protect you and not to let you suffer from genocide."

"Join your Yang family?" Fan Xiang Yun was stunned.

"We can!" Cao Qiu Dao was frank enough. He agreed curtly and turned around to talk to Fan Xiang Yun. "At this moment, the Cao



family and the Ying Yang Fairyland only have the name left. In fact, we don't have anything left. The Endless Sea is now in chaos. I think the other places should be the same. We should gather the human forces. We should join hands to resist this genocide catastrophe. It's the duty we can't deny."

Fan Xiang Yun was struck. Her eyes brightened as she gritted her teeth and said vehemently. "As long as we can kill these pagans, I will do anything I'm told!"

"What's the deal?" asked Cao Qiu Dao immediately.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan darkened his visage. "We don't need any deal. As long as I'm strong enough to subdue you, I think you know what to do. If you are getting stronger one day, our agreement has nothing powerful to bind you."

Having experienced so many things, he had soon known that strong power was more important than anything else. Without power, the so-called agreement was even thinner than the hymen, which could be pierced through with just one poke.

"Alright!" Cao Qiu Dao nodded.

Shi Yan didn't say anything else. He nodded to the Ghost Hunter and sent his thought to the other strange creatures to tell them to get back to that special space.

There were many skeletons with available energy in that space. No matter it was the Ghost Hunter, the King of Demonic Insects, or the Devouring Gold Silkworm, they could use this sort of energy to enhance their strength. That's why Shi Yan gave them more time.

"I don't need it anymore. Just let them go," said the Ghost Hunter with an emotionless countenance. His garnet eyes glared at the Devouring Gold Silkworm, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Holy Spirit God.

Of course, these three monsters obeyed Shi Yan a lot. They got

back to the space slit once again.

Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. He thought for a while and then said, "As things have come to this, perhaps the Teleport in the Yang family is broken. Yeah, I need to build another one."

"Teleportation Formation? Where does it lead to?" Cao Qiu Dao's eyes brightened.

"To the Divine Great Land."

Cao Qiu Dao, Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun, and the others got stirred up, as if they were about to have a new life. They glowed happily.

"First, you need to defend all directions. I'm going to build the Teleportation Formation." Shi Yan assigned the Ghost Hunter then talked to Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun. "I need many auxiliary materials. I thought you guys must have them. I'm going to tell you the names of the required materials. You should get them for me."

"No problem."

The two were frank and generous. They nodded, took out the Storage Rings on their fingers, and sent their Soul Consciousness into them to sort out their cultivating materials while waiting for Shi Yan's order.

# Chapter 604: Dark Sea overflows

---

The Cao family and the Yin Yang Fairyland were one of the strongest, oldest forces of the Endless Sea. Through thousands of years, the assets they had accumulated could stun people.

Shi Yan told them the auxiliary materials needed to build a Teleportation Formation. Cao Qiu Dao and Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun nodded immediately, which told him that they had all the materials he required.

The materials that were scarce in the Divine Great Land seemed not strange to Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun. When Shi Yan said the names, they could take the exact materials from the Storage Ring.

When they left their families, they had stashed the properties their families had collected for thousands of years into different Storage Rings. There were more than ten Storage Rings with different colors on Cao Qiu Dao's and Fan Xiang Yun's fingers. Shi Yan was quite amazed.

To be able to build the Teleportation Formation as quickly as possible, it seemed these two people didn't want to hold anything back.

Shi Yan was astounded. As his thought flickered, he couldn't help but tell them the names of some other materials.

The Heaven Flame Refining Devine Technique required a huge amount of auxiliary materials. As he was worried about how to collect them, seeing Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun, the two filthy rich people, he didn't want to be polite by not asking them for the required materials that he lacked.

Thus, Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun couldn't bear it; their faces became grimaced.

The Heaven Flame Refining Devine Technique was a strange

method to refine the heaven flames that needed many different types of materials, of which, some were never seen before. Their names could be seen only in some ancient books.

Fan Xiang Yun and Cao Qiu Dao had a broad knowledge, and their families were much stronger than the other small forces in the Divine Great Land. However, they had never heard about many materials Shi Yan had asked them. Light dimmed in their eyes.

They started to worry.

They thought that those auxiliary materials were all needed to build the Teleportation Formation. As they didn't have enough materials, their faces became glum.

Shi Yan was actually astounded.

When he told them the materials that needed for the Heaven Flame Refining Divine Technique, he didn't think that they could have any of them. However, it turned over his expectation. These two had some mysterious materials that he didn't know how to find.

This thrilled him.

"Don't worry. We have the other way around to make up for the missing materials," Shi Yan comforted them. "I have something, too. If you don't have them, I can lend you some. I'm sure you can leave the Endless Sea. Don't worry."

Shi Yan smiled, his mood was good. He took all the cultivating materials that were piled up on the ground.

Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun were the freaks who had lived for more than one hundred years. Of course, it was hard to deceive them. They had observed for a while, and immediately knew Shi Yan had seized the chance to rob them.

Naturally, they wouldn't say anything, as they could ease their minds now. As long as he could build the Teleportation Formation, even if Shi Yan had tricked them to take some more materials, they

could let it go.

"I'm going to carry it out. You guys should protect me during the process. Yeah, except for the time when I carve the formation, you can take rest. Don't worry too much." Shi Yan smiled until his eyes narrowed. After he had taken the materials, he started to keep himself busy, not noticing the others.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were standing next to him. Before he started his work, they discussed with him for a while.

Right after that, Corpse Mount, Corpse Sea, and a crowd of the newly formed members of the Corpse Clan followed the Devouring Gold Silkworm and the King of Demonic Insects to that mysterious space. The energy in the skeleton there was pretty useful for them to increase their powers.

That space had many jade-like bones that they could absorb energy from. To Shi Yan, this sort of material didn't have much value. However, to the members of the Corpse Clan, it was the energy that could enlighten them. It would help them gain intellect sooner.

Everybody was busy with their own stuff.

Ghost Hunter and Cao Qiu Dao's team were patrolling around. Shi Yan focused on creating a new Teleportation Formation. Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were taking their clansmen to take the energy from the bones.

Time flew by. It had been five days.

That day, in the immense light, the Ghost Hunter howled. His whistle stormed out violently, raising big waves on the sea in front of them.

Cao Qiu Dao and the others were startled. They knew something was going to happen. Then, they hurried to gather near Shi Yan.

Covering himself with a strange halo inside a round structure around hundreds of meters squared, Shi Yan was using the Earth

Flame to refine the materials. The Ghost Hunter's whistle had awakened him.

His Soul Consciousness moved as Shi Yan retrieved a glorious piece of silver jade. He frowned, looking at the thick cloud in front of him.

Dark Clan's hotshots.

In the cold, evil Dark Qi, Dark Dwellers were floating around. They all looked thin, their eyes sinister. Each Dark Dweller was slender, wearing a dark armor. Their hair and skin were silver, gray, or garnet.

A Dark Clan's expert standing in the front was around two meters tall, but he was as thin as a stick. He was holding a bronze mirror, his face indifferent. He had a distinctive aura of the True God Realm warriors, which led to the change of heaven and earth's aura around him.

Yama King Hades, one of the three great warriors of the Underworld, was the one in charge of clearing the Tuta Sea.

Standing behind Yama King Hades were three Third Sky of Spirit Realm experts. They were all middle-aged, their faces were brutal and vicious. A malicious light sparkled from their eyes.

"Cao Qiu Dao, wind has changed. The Tuta Sea will never be under your Cao family's control again." Yama King Hades was standing in a dark cloud, talking arrogantly.

Above his head, sunlight and moonlight seemed to be covered, such that they couldn't shine on the ground. Only the stars could be seen twinkling from time to time.

"Hades..."

The one who had answered him wasn't Cao Qiu Dao, it was the Ghost Hunter. He was floating up from the Cold Wind Island. This beast now looked like a young, heartless man. The curves of his mouth were both cold and sharp like a saber. His eyes were garnet,

while he was exuding the distinctive aura of the Underworld.

"It's you!"

Hades had soon realized something abnormal in the Cold Wind Island. But he didn't expect that what made him anxious was the Ghost Hunter.

He knew the Ghost Hunter's profile well. The Ghost Hunter was the hybrid of the two imposing demonic beasts of the Underworld and the Demon Area. He had both Dark Qi and Demon Qi in his body. He could be considered the most inexplicably magical creature in the universe. His birth had astounded them a lot.

"Yeah," the Ghost Hunter was always cold. "You should leave. This place isn't the place you can control. My Master's here. You won't take the things you want."

"Master?" Hades laughed fiendishly. "An intimidating beast like you is willing to take a disgusting human your Master? Ghost Hunter, you are the most inexplicable living being in this world! Chi Yan, Bo Xun, and we had always treated you as our friend. We didn't want to enslave you. He's just a lowly human. Is he worth your life?"

"Don't babble. There's something I can't explain clearly. But I know that being with him benefits my future a lot." The Ghost Hunter wasn't moved but answered honestly.

"Future?" Hades mocked, "Do you think he still has a future? Muahaha. I'm here today. Well, as long as they're human, they have to die all. What future does he have?"

Swoosh Swoosh!

Two clear sounds of things crossing through space echoed from the space crack not far from there. Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea appeared together, standing next to Ghost Hunter.

"It's you!" Hades suddenly got enraged. He pointed furiously at Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea. "Due to the change of heaven and

earth, you should have received the inheritance already. You know what had happened, right? You are the intimidating Corpse Clan, the high-grade creatures like our Dark Clan! We should walk the same road. You two, are you going to protect this low human? Do you know what you are doing?"

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea didn't change as much as the Ghost Hunter. They were too lazy to answer. They stood still and didn't move, but their attitude was clear.

"Good! Good! Good!" Hades was furious like a bloodthirsty beast. His eyes were sinister and evil as he said with a hoarse, cold voice, "If you are persistent, don't blame me for killing you all. Befriending humans is your humiliation! You have no right to live in this world anymore, so that the other high-grade races won't laugh on your faces!"

The bronze mirror in his hand struck out, as the Dark Sea of the Underworld appeared in the mirror. The seawater torrentially rose from the bronze mirror, covering the entire Cold Wind Island.

The water of the Dark Sea was the original fountain that gave birth and nurtured the Dark Dwellers. It was the symbol of power.

Each member of the Dark Clan, after soaking the body into the Dark Sea, would have their power enhanced. Then, they could perform many secret techniques of the Dark Clan.

However, this seawater was the most poisonous toxin to the other races.

The Dark Sea water could drag the soul of the other races members in for a short time. As long as the creature was soaked into the water, the waves would drag their soul out of the body. Then, the soul would lose its memory and consciousness. Eventually, it would become a primitive resentful spirit of the Underworld.

After the three Yama Kings Abi, Hades, and Dark Sky were hurt



severely in the Endless Sea, Yang Tian Emperor, and Cao Qiu Dao didn't dare to attack the Underworld because of the Dark Sea in the Underworld.

The Dark Sea was strange and evil. There was no method to eliminate the sea's effect on souls. If the Dark Sea seawater touched the warriors a little bit, their souls would lose a part of memory.

The bronze mirror in Yama King Hades wasn't a strong treasure, but it could draw the seawater of the Dark Sea, which was terribly intimidating.

If the Dark Sea of the Underworld flooded the Endless Sea, human warriors there would be erased, leaving no trace. They didn't need a single battle to get what they wanted.

The torrential waves of the Dark Sea furiously gushed out from the bronze mirror, pouring on the Cold Wind Island. Shortly, the Cold Wind Island was flooded with the Dark Sea's water.

All creatures, no matter they were human, demonic beasts, or the members of the Corpse Clan like Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea, were releasing different types of halo and light cages to separate their bodies from the seawater.

"No use. You can't endure for a long time. And me, I have plenty of free time." Hades laughed contentedly.

# Chapter 605: Underworld God Sacrifice

---

Yama King Hades wasn't hurried. He led a group of Dark Clan's experts, hiding in the thick dark clouds of the Underworld. They were enjoying the Dark Qi of the Dark Sea while waiting for the opponent to be weakened.

As long as the creature had a soul, the Dark Sea water would drain its soul power, and it couldn't resist for a long time.

Human warriors like Cao Qiu Dao and Queen of Heaven Fan Xiang Yun had used their Essence Qi to create different colored light balls, covering their bodies to prevent the Dark Sea water from touching them.

As Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun had reached the Spirit Realm, countering the soul erosion wasn't too difficult. However, Cao Zhi Lan and Man Gu were struggling hard. Under the erosive effect of the Dark Sea, their souls fell into the endless darkness, their consciousness blurry.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were also a kind of creature. Even though they were the clansmen of the Corpse Clan, the Dark Sea could still affect them.

Fortunately, these two had a strong physique, and they were good at using the Five Elements power. They had urged the Earth power to create a thick soil wall to shield them. The seawater couldn't touch them.

Shi Yan was using the same method as Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea.

Seeing the experts of the Underworld, Shi Yan wasn't anxious. He was still staying inside the center of the giant formation to build the Teleportation Formation. He was gently whetting the exquisite, magical formation, pouring his Soul Consciousness, winding around the shape of the formation that was getting more

perfect over time.

The copious Dark Sea water swarmed over, covering him. However, Shi Yan wasn't affected even though he was soaked in the seawater. He was still working on his formation.

Yama King Hades came here for Cao Qiu Dao's group. However, after he found Ghost Hunter, Corpse Mount, and Corpse Sea accompanying Shi Yan, he got indignant and made Shi Yan his primary target.

He led the Dark Sea water here to catch all those people. But Shi Yan was safe and sound, which enraged him more.

"Kid, an inferior existence like you shouldn't continue to live," Yama King Hades snorted, as an ash-gray light glowed behind his back. A strange soul fluctuation poured into the Dark Sea all of a sudden.

Gold ash-gray light dots arose in the Dark Sea water. They were like creatures living in the sea, slowly swelling. Gradually, they became the strange, ugly creatures with sharp claws and thick white fangs. They were as agile as shuttles moving in the Dark Sea.

The Sharp Edge Dark Beast was the endemic creature in the Dark Sea. It could nibble all kinds of creatures with its special skill called Shivering Soul.

This kind of a bizarre beast of the Underworld didn't have a specific level. They could always evolve quickly, but the obstacles in their cultivating process were tough. Most of the time, many of them died while breaking through.

The Sharp Edge Dark Beasts had a pointy body, like a cone with sharp teeth, and the innate soul technique called Shivering Soul. Even the hotshot of the Underworld didn't want to mess up with them in the Dark Sea.

They moved in schools, and their innate Shivering Soul ability could join and release together dangerously.

The Sharp Edge Dark Beasts were gliding and surfing like fast fish in the Dark Sea at a fast speed.

Soul energy quickly gathered in the Dark Sea. Each Sharp Edge Dark Beast became a cage that could trap the soul as they swarmed forward.

Shi Yan was squinting to focus on his Teleportation Formation. He was adding more auxiliary materials when he felt his Sea of Consciousness suddenly shudder. Flows of strange soul energy had intruded his Sea of Consciousness. Those flows were scattering, but they seemed to follow some sort of natural soul formation, which would make the soul power of the host soul tremble continually. This situation would put the warrior into a coma.

After Shi Yan had studied the formations in the Blacksmith's Secrets of Success, he had a new cognition of using different natural powers. He knew that even demonic beasts knew how to use the formation in the most natural way.

Shivering Soul skill of the Sharp Edge Dark Beasts used the scattering feeble souls, joining them with their endemic fellows to create the highest attack mode.

Shi Yan frowned and he temporarily stopped his work. A strange light dot glistened in his eyes as the soul fluctuations in his Sea of Consciousness became fierce.

Die Out!

His host soul floating in the Sea of Consciousness shouted a pair of soul words. That word then condensed into a solid square, sparkling with a silver light, flying towards the barrier in the Sea of Consciousness.

A gloomy soul light of the Sharp Edge Dark Beasts shimmered on the barrier in his Sea of Consciousness, creating a soul formation that had formed an octagonal natural formation. It shot out rapidly toward his host soul.

The symbol 'Die Out' was condensed from the soul, which carried the meaning of the Death Intent Domain. The mournful, dismay aura of death overflowed, covering each gloomy soul light dot.

Under the Death Intent Domain, a will of death furiously flooded the soul light dots, destroying their belief in life.

The Sharp Edge Dark Beast dashed to him, but they all lost their vitality right before they could touch him. The Soul Consciousness of Hades added in them vanished.

The Sharp Edge Dark Beast sank into the deep place. They got killed silently like that.

Yama King Hades felt something. He groaned in the Dark Qi above the Dark Sea. His voice was low at first, but its echoes were increasing. Explosions as loud as thunder filled the Dark Sea.

Refined Dark Qi dispersed in the Dark Sea. Under the explosion, it condensed into an Underworld's giant resentful spirit. This resentful spirit looked exactly like Hades, lively, dark, and evil.

The spirit laughed fiendishly. It glided above the Dark Sea towards Shi Yan, then opened its giant mouth to bite his head.

"Well, your bad luck then."

Shi Yan curled his lips, cracking a smile while muttering something under his breath. A dark light ball detached from the Storage Ring.

The light ball suddenly released waves of energy that could absorb the soul energy. Just like billions of tentacles, it started to capture and pull the resentful spirit towards the light ball.

"Soul Gathering Pearl!"

Yama King Hades discolored in fear. While he was fluttering, he bit the tip of his tongue. His blood was urged. Abruptly, his eyes now had a bizarre white hue, so people couldn't see his pupils.

The resentful spirit struggled harder, as if it had been added with God power. Flows of gloomy energy detached from his body, shooting in every direction.

Shortly, half of the energy that condensed the resentful spirit divided and escaped this way. However, the Soul Gathering Pearl had absorbed one-thirds of its energy. Its original power was damaged severely.

When the resentful spirit ran away, Yama King Hades' white eyes became normal. His complexion was grim like never before. He thundered, "I didn't think that a kid like you can have so many evil techniques, which are even crueler than the technique our pagan tribes are cultivating."

Shi Yan lifted his head to look at him. He chuckled, then continued to build his formation.

He sent his thought, "Don't let him disturb me. I need to focus. You shoo him away for me."

The Ghost Hunter covered in the Dark Sea around one hundred meters away from him nodded, then a strange soul fluctuation released from him.

The good-looking figure of the Ghost Hunter looked ethereal in the Dark Sea. He was like an illusion that was changing his position constantly, using the Dark Qi of the Dark Sea to adjust his physical status.

His case wasn't similar to the others. In the Dark Sea, he was the only one who wasn't affected. Actually, his soul had gained benefit from the seawater.

He was a hybrid of the demonic beasts of the Underworld and the Demon Area. He was born with the gift of being able to use the Dark Qi of the Underworld. The Dark Sea was the fountain of origin of the Underworld. To him, it could give him a strange but useful energy to grow his soul.

He had stayed idle to let the Dark Sea refine his soul and body, which had just been upgraded.

This brought a big advantage to his future cultivation.

"Hades, you should leave immediately. Or else, don't blame me for being impolite." The Ghost Hunter's body looked like fractured images reflected in a broken mirror. All of a sudden, it broke into small pieces, which seemed extremely strange!

Yama King Hades was shaken, while his eyes showed his rage. He rumbled. "Ghost Hunter! You dare attack me!"

After his thundering roar, Yama King Hades' body started to distort as if numerous sharp blades were cutting him off. This scene gave people a fierce anxiety deep in their hearts.

The Ghost Hunter's body turned into countless pieces, disappearing into the Dark Sea. The tranquil Dark Sea then started to surge vehemently like an enraged beast. Columns of water shot up to the sky, attacking the experts of the Dark Clan hiding in the sky.

Each water column had the strange garnet eyes of the Ghost Hunter, as though he was hiding himself in each flow of his attack.

"Alright! If you don't care about your life, don't blame me!"

Yama King Hades was filled with rage. His eyes turned back to its original color. His arms, which were hiding in the loose sleeves, were as pale as the ghost claws. However, they didn't have any flesh. This sent shivers down people's spines.

His hands were forming white hand seals, shooting into the air. They were triangular, conical, or round, etc.

Each hand seal was shiny white, revealing the unique gloomy aura of the Underworld. They seemed to promote the Underworld's aura to the acme.

Many white pale seals gathered under his feet. Gradually, they

formed a pallid sacrificial altar, which was filled with resentful spirits. The resentful spirits there were exuding a white mist.

The sacrificial altar descended rumblingly, snatching at the Ghost Hunter. Countless resentful spirit on the altar gushed out white mist, swarming towards the Ghost Hunter.

The altar was covered in the white mist. A soul destructive aura diffused from the altar, as if it was judging the creatures. The aura there was grim and solemn.

The Ghost Hunter was besieged in the altar. All of a sudden, it turned back to the ferocious beast form, furiously roaring and attacking the white-jade barrier of the sacrificial altar, releasing its strange and brutal energy.

White bunches of light entangled the Ghost Hunter, piercing and intruding his body.



# Chapter 606: Separate

---

The Ghost Hunter roared in pain. This bunch of light had cut off the sharp thorns on his body. Fine cracks also appeared on the Ghost Hunter's armor.

"Are you convinced?" Yama King Hades shouted with his dark face. "This is the 'Underworld God Sacrifice.' I got it from the holy land. Even the True God Realm expert would become a sacrifice to the Underworld God. If you leave that kid and work for our Dark Clan, I can spare you from this calamity."

The Ghost Hunter was screaming and howling, but he didn't answer the Yama King. The armor on his body started to crack.

Shi Yan was concentrating on building the Teleportation Formation. Suddenly, he turned around, facing the sky above his head. He had thought that the Ghost Hunter could stop Hades. He didn't expect that the beast would fall into this situation.

Normally, a level 9 demonic beast was a little bit stronger than an expert who had just entered the True God Realm. Although the Ghost Hunter had just reached level 9, Yama King Hades seemed to have reached the True God Realm not long before himself. According to his estimation, he thought the Ghost Hunter would win.

He had underestimated Hades' competence. Also, he didn't know that Yama King Hades had received a big harvest from the three bottom levels of the Underworld.

He should speed up building the Teleportation Formation. He didn't know when more pagan experts would come here after Yama King Hades. Thus, he was determined to finish this stuff at the fastest speed.

As for Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun, he deemed that they wouldn't be eroded shortly. Thus, he wasn't going to protect them

at the moment.

However, from the current situation, things had gone beyond his estimation.

"Underworld God Sacrifice..."

Shi Yan scooped his head and muttered while his face became colder. While his thought flickered, the Storage Ring flashed.

Three bone spears he had just refined shot out with a sharp whistle. The white light zoomed out as fast as lightning, crossed the space and appeared behind Yama King Hades, stabbing furiously.

Puff!

Yama King Hades trembled and fell forward. Three blood holes appeared on his back.

As his soul was controlling the Underworld God Sacrifice, when he got hurt, the power of the altar reduced greatly.

The Ghost Hunter finally had a moment of freedom in the white altar. He took out the Demonic Bell and shook it crazily.

Demon waves rippled from the bell. Amidst the strange jingling, the waves hit the sacrificial altar, and fire sparked everywhere. The ear-splitting explosions reverberated in the sky.

Yama King Hades' soul was screaming heavily. Blood trickled from the corners of his mouth as he gazed at Shi Yan, talking through his gritted teeth. "Damn you, human!"

A pallid Underworld hand seal that looked like layers of white cloud descended rumblingly on Shi Yan's head, as imposing as a mountain Three Bone Thorns appeared next to him out of thin air. Shi Yan cracked a smile, his eyes bright.

The Bone Thorns were refined from a level 10 beast's bones. Although they weren't divine weapons, however, after Shi Yan had added his Soul Consciousness, they became strange and

unpredictable. They could cross spaces easily, which was the special feature of his Soul Consciousness.

Space power could tear space, that no one could track down. It could storm out from any angles to perform the most dangerous ambush.

Yama King Hades, a True God Realm warrior, was his first experimental subject. Luckily, it worked alright at the first trial.

Three Bone Thorns had left three fist-sized blood holes on Hades' back. If Yama King Hades weren't strong enough, that strike could take his life.

Shi Yan felt contented.

Shi Yan wasn't worried about the mountain-like Underworld Hand Seal above his head. He smiled quietly, urging his soul power again.

The Underworld Hand Seal snatched down. But all of a sudden, a space crack appeared above Shi Yan's head.

Yama King Hades was stunned, looking at the Underworld Hand Seal falling into that space crack and disappearing completely, leaving nothing behind.

Shi Yan could counter the attack of the Ghost Mark Clan's sages at the True God Realm, which gave him a deeper understanding of space power. Now, he could tear the space quickly and swallow all furious attacks.

"Ghost Hunter, give him brutal attack!"

After he had dissolved the Underworld Hand Sea, Shi Yan's soul was a little bit tired. He hurried to assign the Ghost Hunter.

The Ghost Hunter was roaring and screaming crazily. The Demonic Bell in his hand was shaken constantly. Demonic light waves continually rippled, creating a barrier covering all Underworld's hotshots. Even Yama King Hades couldn't escape

that demonic light.

The demonic beast's power was much crazier and more ruthless than the Underworld's warriors. The tantrum of the Ghost Hunter had pushed the Underworld's experts backward.

As Shi Yan had successfully ambushed Yama King Hades, the latter was bleeding badly. Since his Underworld Hand Seal with his soul energy was swallowed by a space crack, and his soul was hurt, Hades couldn't urge the Underworld God Sacrifice again. He was distraught.

Seeing the Ghost Hunter's rage, Yama King Hades had no way to counter. He knew that even if he could gather his energy, he wasn't the Ghost Hunter's match. Hades had to retreat. At a place far away from the Cold Wind Island, he threw the bronze mirror out again to retrieve the Dark Sea water, which was covering the entire Cold Wind Island, like a whale taking in water.

"Ghost Hunter, wait for me. The next time I'm here is the time of your death!" Hades roared indignantly. His figure faded away and eventually disappeared.

The giant body of the Ghost Hunter changed. Shortly, he returned to the cold, handsome, but evil-looking young man. He sneered, his face disdainful.

Yama King Hades left, so Cao Qiu Dao's group restored quickly. Cao Qiu Dao didn't get hurt. While Ghost Hunter and Hades were engaging in their battle, he had disappeared mysteriously for a while.

Cao Qiu Dao had mastered his Shadowless Path. Once he disappeared and reappeared again, it was the time his life-taking attack came into effect.

The reason why Yama King Hades had to retreat quickly was that he was afraid the Shadowless Path of Cao Qiu Dao. He understood well how dangerous Cao Qiu Dao was. He was like a toxic viper

hiding in the dark, which could emerge at any minute.

"Shi Yan, what means did you use to dissolve Yama King Hades' attack?" Cao Qiu Dao was surprised. He strolled to Shi Yan and asked. "I'm good at hiding, and I have a profound knowledge of ambushing. I was behind Hades, but I didn't see the trajectory of the three bone spears. How did you do that?"

Fan Xiang Yun also looked at him with an odd expression, waiting for his explanation.

"If you can break space, no one can track you down," Shi Yan answered nonchalantly. He didn't explain further, concentrating on the Teleportation Formation in front of him.

Cao Qiu Dao contemplated. He vaguely got something, but Fan Xiang Yun and the others didn't get the meaning behind Shi Yan's words.

However, they didn't want to chase him. Seeing Shi Yan focusing on building the Teleportation Formation, they all shut their mouths and scattered to protect him from a distance.

Shi Yan knew he didn't have too much time. He wholeheartedly put his mind to work. Three days later, he had finished the formation, using his soul to carve the space nodes to connect this formation to the formation of the Northern Gem Mountain.

The Teleport Formation suddenly glowed like a lamp, as unique space fluctuations rippled.

"We can leave now," Shi Yan exhaled, wiping the sweat from his forehead. "Go through the Teleportation Formation, and you can arrive at the Divine Great Land directly. If you don't have any other ideas, we can go now."

Cao Qiu Dao's group understood well that they couldn't linger in the Endless Sea anymore. They all nodded without any hesitation. On the other side, Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea acted strangely. The two of them were using a soft tone to summon the other

members of the Corpse Clan.

"You guys..." Shi Yan was surprised.

"Is there a place called the Ancient Corpse Tomb in that land?" Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea asked in unison.

A strange light crossed Shi Yan's eyes. He didn't want to conceal. "True. There's a place called the Ancient Corpse Tomb. How did you know that?"

"The inheritance we got came from that area. Our fellows are still calling for us from that area using our Corpse Clan's unique method..." Corpse Mount talked slowly, but he couldn't explain clearly with unnatural pauses.

However, both Shi Yan and Cao Qiu Dao understood his words, their faces scared.

Shi Yan tried to press down the anxiety in his heart. He pondered, then gritted his teeth. "Go. You should call your fellows, I'll take you guys there."

"Shi Yan !" Cao Qiu Dao couldn't help but shout.

"Don't say anything. I know what you're thinking," Shi Yan looked cold. "Even if they get stronger in the future and become the strongest force of the Corpse Clan, I have no problem with that. As things have turned into this, a little more chaotic is not much different to me."

Cao Qiu Dao was upset. But still, he didn't try to persuade him further, and just nodded begrudgingly.

He and Shi Yan understood that the Ancient Corpse Tomb in the Divine Great Land would absolutely have formidable experts of the Corpse Clan!

Once they let Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea come to the Ancient Corpse Tomb, even though they had a good relationship with Shi Yan, they would be brainwashed. With the stronger power they

could get from the Ancient Corpse Tomb, they would become the executioners slaughtering mankind.

"I want to stay here for a while. They do, too." However, at this moment, the Ghost Hunter walked over with the Devouring Gold Silkworm, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Holy Spirit God. "There's power in the Heavenly Demon Mountain Range in the Vault of Heaven Sea that could make us stronger. We want to get it."

"What kind of power?" Shi Yan changed his expression.

"Don't know. But I can feel it," Ghost Hunter mused for a while. "Wait until we can have that power in the Heavenly Demon Mountain Range, we will be stronger. At that time, we can support you better."

The Devouring Gold Silkworm, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Holy Spirit God stood silently near him, letting him talk for them.

Shi Yan was moved. He knew the situation was changing massively in the way he couldn't understand. This world would become the battlefield of many races. If he could gather enough forces, he would survive the upcoming violent war.

Of course, he wouldn't hinder them. He advised them to be careful.

Eventually, the Ghost Hunter, the Devouring Gold Silkworm, the King of Demonic Insects, and the Holy Spirit God left. They separated from him at the Cold Wind Island.

Shi Yan activated the Teleportation Formation. He took Cao Qiu Dao's group and the crowd of members of the Corpse Clan to the Northern Gem Mountain in the Divine Great Land group by group.

However, right after he appeared in the Teleportation Formation he built in the Northern Gem Mountain, he changed his complexion into a dark and sinister one.

# Chapter 607: Catastrophe

---

Columns of thick black smoke soaring into the sky looked like long dragons meandering on the horizon. Images sent to his eyes were all about ruins. It was the whole vast area of silence under his Soul Consciousness' surveying.

The Northern Gem City situated next to the Northern Gem Mountain had no fluctuations of life. It seemed that everybody living in the city had died.

The Teleportation Formation he had built in a flank of a mountain in the Northern Gem Mountain wasn't damaged, but there was no man of the Yang family here. The entire Northern Gem Mountain had fallen into silence and darkness. Apparently, a big change had happened here.

Floating above the Northern Gem Mountain, Shi Yan was worried, his eyes gloomy and serious. He continued to guide his Soul Consciousness around the area, then moved towards the Radiant God Cult.

Places where his Soul Consciousness glided above had no signs of mankind. The Spirit Temples of the Radiant God Cult were just ruins now. Many cities and manors had been burned into ashes.

The situation of the Radiant God Cult was strangely similar to the Endless Sea's. This was a genocide war!

Cao Qiu Dao, Fan Xiang Yun, and the others also felt insecure. They were hovering in the sky, gathering their minds to observe everywhere. Their complexion darkened. The hope they just had developed seemed to be dragged out of their hearts little by little.

However, the clansmen of the Corpse Clan including Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea acted as if they didn't see the miseries around. They kneeled down and bowed towards the general direction of the Ancient Corpse Tomb, as though their God and



their belief were there.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness moved quickly. After a while, he descended on a mountain of the Northern Gem Mountain. His face was grim as he took a cold breath. "The event happening in the Endless Sea also takes place in the Divine Great Land. Perhaps the situation here is more severe than in the Endless Sea."

Cao Qiu Dao was stupefied. He sighed and then nodded.

"You guys should make up your mind. I haven't destroyed the Teleportation Formation in the Cold Wind Island. If you want to go back now, I can take you there." Shi Yan's face was ice cold. He didn't want to conceal anymore. "As far as I am concerned, the Divine Great Land's now more dangerous. If you stay here, I'm not sure what would happen."

"We need to discuss," Cao Qiu Dao didn't decide immediately. He pondered, then muttered to Fan Xiang Yun and the others. "We need to discuss. Whether leaving or staying, we need to decide quickly."

"I'll go and check for a while. You guys stay here and make up your mind." Shi Yan frowned. Abruptly, he flew towards the Spirit Treasure Sect. Shortly, he was in the adjacent area between the Spirit Treasure Sect and the Northern Gem Mountain. Shi Yan urged his Soul Consciousness to sense the Wonderful Stone City.

A deadly silent area!

Shi Yan discolored in fright. The surprise in his heart swelled bigger. From deep inside his soul, an anxious, frightful feeling arose.

What had happened?

The Radiant God Cult and the Spirit Treasure Sect were both destroyed. Why had such strong ancient factions collapsed, and their main gates struck down?

He had stayed in the Endless Sea for only one year. It was a short

period. However, the Divine Great Land seemed to have an earth-shaking calamity. Everything had changed, and only one thing remained; the sun, the moon, and the stars were still shining together in the sky.

Due to the change of heaven and earth, the powers of his martial spirits had been increased rapidly, which made him feel lucky. However, looking at the phenomenon in the sky, he only felt chilled.

Was it the sign of an apocalypse? Was it the sign that mankind was about to be destroyed and replaced?

With a stupefied complexion, he suddenly felt lost. He returned to the Northern Gem Mountain in a daze.

"We had decided to stay," Cao Qiu Dao said determinedly. "The Dark Clan and the Demon Clan are slaughtering the entire Endless Sea. Once we go back, we'll become the biggest targets. Although we don't know what has happened in the Divine Great Land, at least we haven't met any enemy yet. Perhaps, we won't become the main targets..."

At this moment, Shi Yan felt really distressed. He didn't think much and just said deliberately. "If you want to stay, just stay. As things have accelerated to this point, I have no means to support you much. I've said that you guys could be members of the Yang family. Forget it, we shall separate from here."

"We know nothing about this place," Cao Zhi Lan sighed piteously.

"Before this event, I had known something about this place. But at this moment, you and I are the same." Shi Yan beamed a forced smile, waving his hand. "From now on, you should find your way to survive. I actually have no way to help you furthermore."

He was really twitchy.

The calamity that happened to the Radiant God Cult told him

that something really terrible had happened throughout the Divine Great Land. Nobody remained in this area. Even if he wanted to ask for information, he couldn't find anyone.

He couldn't guess whether his family in the Yang family and the Shi family were still alive or dead, which put him deep into sorrow.

"As far as I've known, your Yang family's Immortal Blood has magical effects. It can even sense the existence of the opponents and what will happen in the future..." Cao Qiu Dao's eyes sparkled with strange light, talking to him with a soft tone.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

It was true! The Immortal Blood did have magical effects!

"You guys should take a rest." Shi Yan's face was moved. He found a cave and sat down cross-legged. He used his mind to control the Immortal Rebirth Secret to condense the Immortal Blood. Then, he could use the secret technique to predict.

A ruby drop of Immortal Blood turned into scarlet mist under his power.

Flows of pure energy rumblingly poured into the scarlet mist. His soul and Soul consciousness started to change and cooperate with the red mist. He was using the obsessiveness in his mind to call for one person, using his thought to sense him.

An immense light glowed inside the scarlet mist, turning into a hazy mirror. An image slowly appeared in it— Yang Zhuo.

Yang Zhuo's shadow became clearer; he was in a desolate jungle. The big trees there seemed to wither. The flora there was tall and strong, jutting from the greenish-gray ground. Thick grass was reaching around people's waist.

Shi Yan could see the vague images of some persons standing next to Yang Zhuo. With a close look, he could recognize them. They were Yang Mu, Yang Xue, Shi Jian, and the other seniors of

the Shi family. Many people were gathering and discussing something. It gave Shi Yan a severe and solemn feeling.

Shi Yan was struck. He poured more soul power into the red mist to expand it.

Abruptly, the red mist projected more shadows, all of them being vague. Shi Yan couldn't see their original appearances. However, from their shapes, he knew they were all humans.

Switching his view, he recognized many shadows moving in that vast jungle. He didn't know how many people were gathering there.

Swoosh!

A beam of light shot out from the jungle, piercing through the red mist in front of him. His fog dispersed.

The effect of the Immortal Blood was over at this moment. Shi Yan's soul and spirit were exhausted, and He woke up.

Cao Qiu Dao and his team could feel the energy moving in this area. They wanted to get closer, but the War Devil had stopped them. Cao Qiu Dao got it. As the War Devil had stopped them, they didn't try to barge in, just waiting at their spots.

Inside the cave, Shi Yan took the Soul Gathering Pearl out of the Storage Ring. Watching the fine fibers moving inside the black pearl, he felt happy. Putting the Soul Gathering Pearl at his glabella, Shi Yan used his Sea of Consciousness to draw that pure soul energy bit by bit.

After half a minute, he got up. His spirit was high, and the anxiety on his face was washed away.

"How was it?" Cao Qiu Dao saw him walking out, so he hurried to greet him, his face longing.

"They're okay. They have moved to a place we don't know. Not only the Radiant God Cult, but also the hotshots of the other

factions are there," Shi Yan talked about the vague images he had seen. "I think, the seven ancient factions of the Divine Great Land have joined hands. They are gathering at the same place to counter the strong enemies. As long as we can find their location, you guys can go there, too."

As Cao Qiu Dao heard him say so, his spirit was lifted up.

"You guys..." Shi Yan was hesitant, looking at the members of the Corpse Clan standing far from him.

"We want to go to the Ancient Corpse Tomb," Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea replied him without any hesitation.

Cao Qiu Dao's face was dark and cold while a brutal light sparkled in his eyes.

Shi Yan squinted, looking at him coldly before he talked to Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea. "You guys can leave now. I hope when we meet again, you still know who I am..."

"We will."

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea answered him in unison. Then, they used the special etiquette of the Corpse Clan to bid him farewell. The two Corpse Kings led their clansmen strolling towards the Ancient Corpse Tomb.

Shi Yan looked at them leaving, his face odd, sad, and mournful.

"You should kill them!" Cao Qiu Dao said with a cold tone. "They are all pagans. Sooner or later, they will become your enemies! Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea have unpredictably huge potential. If they get to the Ancient Corpse Tomb, their powers would skyrocket. Perhaps, they will become the future leaders of the Corpse Clan. Your deed shows that you are irresponsible towards the entire mankind!"

"It's okay," Shi Yan shrugged. "According to my experience, sometimes, the pagan tribes are more trustworthy."

Cao Qiu Dao was surprised, looking at him dazedly without saying anything.

"What should we do now?" Fan Xiang Yun asked, "How do we know the gathering spot of humans in the Divine Great Land? Shi Yan, do you have any clue?"

"I have no idea at this moment," Shi Yan shook his head. But, suddenly, he smiled. "You guys should stay here first. For a short period at least, this place should be safe enough. I want to go out to find someone and ask for the current situation."

"Who are you looking for?"

"Anybody. As long as it's a living creature, I can use my soul to contact them. Even if it is a pagan, as long as it's alive, it should know what had happened in the Divine Great Land."

"Be careful."

"Alright. You guys should be more careful. I'm going to block the Teleportation Formation here. Don't worry. No one can get here from the Endless Sea through this formation. You just need to watch over the situation around here."

Cao Qiu Dao's group listened to him. They nodded silently, and they didn't ask to go with him.

Shi Yan didn't say any more nonsense. He advised them and then flew towards the Spirit Treasure Sect.

He could confirm that the calamity happened in the Divine Great Land is related to the alien tribes here. The Dark Spirit Clan and the Ghost Mark Clan must have had a part in this. About the Corpse Clan, he didn't dare to confirm.

The Spirit Treasure Sect had the Shady Firmament Old Mound, the gathering spot of the Ghost Mark Clan. Going in that direction, he could find something as long as he was careful.

# Chapter 608: Ringleader

---

He didn't tell Cao Qiu Dao's team that he had gotten the location of Yang Zhuo and the others through the Immortal Blood. They were in the territory of the Martial Spirit Palace.

He had to pass the Spirit Treasure Sect to go to the Martial Spirit Palace. He wanted to visit the Spirit Treasure Sect first to check the situation, and then he would decide whether to go to the Martial Spirit Palace's area or not.

Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun had a relatively high cultivation base. However, they were taking almost a hundred warriors with different cultivation bases. When such a force went towards the Martial Spirit Palace, it would be hazardous.

He had locked the Teleportation Formation in the Northern Gem Mountain. Since he had built this formation himself, when he found Yang Zhuo's group, he could create a new one, then use the space nodes to break the lock of the formation in the Northern Gem Mountain. At that time, Cao Qiu Dao's team could get there from thousands of miles away.

With a careful calculation, he used the fastest speed to glide above the Spirit Treasure Sect.

Several days later, he arrived at the Wonderful Stone City. Hovering above the Wonderful Stone City, his face darkened as he let out a long sigh.

The Wonderful Stone City was devastated. The city walls were broken badly, and the city was like a young maid who was raped many times. This scene looked incomparably pathetic. He saw no shadows in the city. Places where the packed stores used to stand were all empty. All the materials were robbed.

Decaying bodies exuded a pungent smell in the whole city. Insects moved in schools, operating happily in every corner.

Shi Yan shook his head while his Soul Consciousness was moving. He understood that the pagan clans had attacked the city.

Fortunately, there weren't many bodies in the city, just around several thousand. This number was much different from the number of human warriors staying in the Wonderful Stone City. This meant many people had escaped this calamity.

The body of a Spirit Realm warrior had an evident difference from the ordinary warriors; it wouldn't decompose in a short time. Using his Soul Consciousness to sense for a while, he didn't find any warriors at this realm. Thus, he was sure Zhu Yi's group was still alive.

Gliding through the Wonderful Stone City, he flew towards the Shady Firmament Old Mound. Shi Yan concealed his aura and the anger in his heart.

Shady Firmament Old Mound was the gathering place of the Ghost Mark Clan. As the catastrophe had happened in the Divine Great Land, members of the Ghost Mark Clan should have their powers recovered. They wouldn't hide anymore, and would operate everywhere.

With this assumption, he was ready to fight when he reached the Shady Firmament Old Mound.

Arriving at that bleak plain, looking at the burrows leading underground, Shi Yan squinted as he was sensing the cold aura diffusing from the holes. His eyes sparkled with cold light.

A flow of Soul Consciousness that he had disguised and concealed sneaked into a burrow, entering deeper into the Shady Firmament Old Mound.

Swoosh!

His Soul Consciousness had barged onto an invisible barrier, causing fire to spark.

Shi Yan was shaken as he thought the situation wasn't good. He



retreated his Soul Consciousness and ran away immediately.

Not long after he had left, a Second Sky of Spirit Realm warrior of the Ghost Mark Clan walked out from the burrow Shi Yan had sent his Soul Consciousness into. That man was wearing a new armor with strange patterns. He wasn't bony anymore. Quite the contrary, this man was sturdy as his body was releasing waves of a dangerous energy.

He stood at the entrance, snorted, then released his soul power to sense. After a while, he frowned, retrieving his Soul Consciousness and getting back to the cave with regret.

However, right at this moment, the three narrow, snow-white Bone Thorns appeared behind him like lightning and stabbed him in just a blink of an eye.

At the same time, under the dazzling sunlight above that warrior's head, a red light spot enlarged. A man that looked like an angel holding a giant sword with a brutal aura rumblingly descended from the sky. The sword was full of the destructive negative energy, storming into the warrior's Sea of Consciousness.

Puff!

The ghost scripture armor on his back was pierced through instantly, leaving three arm-sized holes in the middle of his back. Blood gushed out fiercely.

Blood trickled from the corners of his mouth as the Ghost Mark Clan's warrior couldn't help but shout painfully. However, his scream was hindered as a torrential wave of air ruthlessly was pressing from the sky.

That warrior didn't have time to use the superior attainment of the Ghost Mark Clan; he could only urge the ghost tattoo, creating a dead wood spirit armor to cover his body.

"Courting death!"

The man above his head smiled faintly. The giant sword in his

hand was slashing down like a massive mountain on the warrior's head.

Bang Bang!

That man felt his brain was shaken, and his Sea of Consciousness was disordered. Blood was continually streaming from the wounds on his back, then he went unconscious shortly.

The young man holding the giant sword revealed himself at this moment. He grabbed the warrior by his neck and hurried to flee away from this area.

After half an hour, two members of the Ghost Mark Clan with Spirit Realm cultivation base appeared at the entrance of that cave.

"Someone had fought here!" One of the two discolored. He walked towards a blood puddle, touched it then said coldly, "It's the blood of our clansmen!"

"Damn it! Someone has ambushed here!"

"Report it! We shall chase and kill that murderer!"

The two hotshots of the Ghost Mark Clan immediately released their Soul Consciousness, using their soul to contact some secret place in the subterranean Shady Firmament Old Mound to report their findings.

Not long afterward, many members of the Ghost Mark Clan appeared in this bleak plain, all having an excellent cultivation base. Cold Yin aura diffused from them as they scattered to every direction to search for the target...

...

The Northern Cold City was deadly silent. Just like the Wonderful Stone City, the Northern Cold City was one of the primary cities of the Spirit Treasure Sect. But today, it was just a desolate city, as if its prosperity was just something in the past.

Cold air exuded in a shabby store in the South of the city. A

member of the Ghost Mark Clan was covered in thick ice, sparing only his head. Blood covered his face, which made him look fiercer.

Shi Yan was standing in front of him, increasing the power of the Ice Cold Flame to keep that man conscious.

"I want to know what has happened in the Divine Great Land during the past year." He asked coldly as a scarlet flame burst out from his fingertip. He put his finger on that man's chest.

As his body was sealed in the ice, the flame drilled through the whole block of ice. In the extremely cold ice, the scorching flame didn't bring him any bit of warmth. Quite the contrary, it was a torture making him want to kill himself.

However, when his thought had just appeared, his Sea of Consciousness surged, and that thought was dispersed.

"As you have the Second Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base, in the Ghost Mark Clan, you shouldn't be someone that no one knows. However, if you want to use the treasure to report or make your soul collapse to exchange for sending the information here, it isn't appropriate, you know." Shi Yan curled his lips and laughed. "I know your Ghost Mark Clan's soul Upanishads, so don't do your tricks in front of me."

"Shi Yan! You are Shi Yan!"

The Ghost Mark Clan's expert suddenly shouted, his face indignant.

"Eh?" Shi Yan beamed a smile, "You know me?"

"Our Ghost Mark Clan had poured the calamity on the Spirit Treasure Sect. We got your profile from many experts of the Spirit Treasure Sect. Haha, it's you. It's you who broke into the place and let the Ghost Mark Clan see the sunlight again. Also, it's you who has activated the universe barrier, leading to the great change of heaven and earth! Haha! The catastrophe of the Divine Great Land

is because of you! We must remember your favor! Well, my benefactor, you are the benefactor of our clan, but you are the sinner of the entire humanity!"

The Ghost Mark Clan's expert laughed until tears rolled down his face. He looked both insane and joyful.

With his words, Shi Yan was struck hard. He stood stupefied, not moving an inch.

Ringleader... He was the ringleader!

Previously, he could vaguely feel that the change of heaven and earth was somehow related to him. However, he didn't want to accept it; he didn't want to overthink. He just wanted to avoid the fact.

Today, through this Ghost Mark Clan's warrior, he had finally known that he was the cause of the change in this world.

Thinking about the catastrophe of the Endless Sea, about numerous human beings in the Grace Mainland that were killed, Shi Yan was petrified. A massive painful and bitter shame overflowed from his soul, entering his brain and occupying all of his thoughts.

He stood there emotionlessly, as if he had lost his soul. He didn't react to the provocation of that Ghost Mark Clan's warrior. It seemed something hard in his heart was fractured abruptly, pushing him into a big devil inner barrier that he couldn't restore his sound mind.

"It's related to you, but it isn't your responsibility. This is the trend of evolution. Without you, the space division would still happen. You just made it happen earlier. The other races have the right to live. Should they be expelled forever? Should their clans go extinct?"

The Ice Cold Flame's thought sent to him from the Blood Vein Ring. It was using its own way to console Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was still absentminded as if he couldn't hear anything.

"You shouldn't let resentment nibble you. At this moment, you should use your best to save the situation. You have something you want to hold on. You have someone you want to protect. If you can't awake, things will never overturn," the Ice Cold Flame continued to comfort him.

Shi Yan's soul seemed to gather once again as he was restoring his consciousness. His dim eyes started to brighten.

"Well, just say I did it," He nodded to that member of the Ghost Mark Clan all of a sudden. "I've dragged you guys out. If it's my mistake, I can put you back. Everything's fine then."

"Hahaha!" The Ghost Mark Clan's warrior laughed crazily. "What the heck are you? Only you, well, do you think you can seal us again? A human kid with his Spirit Realm cultivation base dares to have this idea. Haha... Funny... You're funny."

"Well then, I don't need to ask you for the information bit by bit like this. Nothing's interesting anyways." Shi Yan pondered for a while and then said, "I remember your Ghost Mark Clan has a soul technique called the Great Soul Search Technique..."

The smile on that man's face froze, turning into a great panic as he shouted in fear. "You dare!"

Shi Yan shook his head and didn't answer him. He extended his arm, putting on that man's forehead then closing his eyes. He sent his soul into that man's head.

The Ghost Mark Clan's warrior was struggling hard, but he stopped right away. Like a clog, he didn't have any vitality anymore as his Sea of Consciousness was grabbed and squeezed.

Changes of the Divine Great Land during this year turned into the tide of memory and slowly emerged in Shi Yan's brain fully.

# Chapter 609: Opportunity

---

Not long after he had left the Divine Great Land, the alien tribes with the Dark Spirit Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan, and the Corpse Clan as their representatives had carried out their invasion to the forces in the Divine Great Land.

Shortly, the seven ancient factions, including the Radiant God Cult, were targeted. The pagans' invasion this time was fierce, with the participation of many True God Realm warriors. Yun Hao and the leader of the Pure Land weren't their opponents. They had to cooperate to retreat.

An earth-shaking, bloody war washed over the Divine Great Land. Forces everywhere were attacked, and many high-class human warriors fell.

The powers of the Dark Spirit Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan, and the Corpse Clan were imposingly beyond their estimation. Human warriors didn't know what to do. Their manpower was drained in battles as more and more warriors died every day.

The dead souls' evils lair of the Dark Spirit Clan appeared everywhere. They could land all of a sudden in a random area. Right after that, warriors of the Dark Spirit Clan would appear. Their force had caused the seven ancient factions a significant loss.

The Ghost Mark Clan's members had soon recovered their energy. During the battles, the power of this clan slowly increased. After each battle, the power of the Ghost Mark Clan's members would be enhanced, as if it had no limit.

The Corpse Clan was more dangerous; they couldn't die. Their rigid bodies gave human warriors a headache like their heads were about to crack.

The Five Elements space on the Divine Great Land was the place the Corpse Clan trained their bodies. It became their backyard,

where they gathered, collected cultivating materials and refining treasures.

To human warriors, the Five Elements space was a dangerous area. With only one wrong move, they would never return.

However, members of the Corpse Clan could stay in the Five Elements space at ease. With the abundant cultivating materials there, they could refine armors and treasures. This boosted their general force to another big level.

After the Dark Spirit Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan, and the Corpse Clan, there appeared the Demon Clan and the Monster Clan.

The Divine Great Land now had more races. Compared to the Endless Sea, they were stronger and more brutal. True God Realm warriors of the alien tribes appeared one by one, which completely snatched away the confidence of Yun Hao's group.

Massive retreat...

The seven ancient factions took the lead. Forces everywhere in the Divine Great Land started to gather and move towards the Martial Spirit Palace. They disappeared into the Martial Spirit Palace's territory.

The alien tribes had searched through the Martial Spirit Palace's territory, but they couldn't find the warriors of the seven ancient factions. However, many pagans had their bodies buried in this place. This kept the hotshots of the alien tribes from operating furthermore, and they didn't enter the area of the Martial Spirit Palace.

The alien tribes were planning something. It seemed they were discussing a new plan to capture all the human hotshots at once.

Shi Yan closed his eyes, putting one hand on the head of that warrior. He was using the Great Searching Soul Technique of the Ghost Mark Clan to search through the man's memory.

When flows of memory entered his brain, the member of the

Ghost Mark Clan gradually lost his living aura as his life came to an end.

The Great Searching Soul Technique was a sinister technique of the Ghost Mark Clan. It burned the victim's soul to generate the energy to draw the memory out of the victim's head. After the soul was burned out, most of the victims would die tragically. Some who survived would become retarded without memory.

Retreating his hand, Shi Yan took a deep breath and put a little force on that man.

Bang!

A flow of surging energy struck the pagan's head, as though it was stirring something, making his head a mess of brain and blood.

Right after the Spirit Realm hotshot of the Ghost Mark Clan died, energy threads started to fly out of his body. All these entered Shi Yan's acupuncture points, leaving nothing behind.

Shi Yan was struck as if he had swallowed a pill. The light in his eyes got brighter while his soul fluctuations became more robust.

The development of the situation was beyond his imagination. He didn't think that the Divine Great Land's whole picture had become that fierce. He had thought that this place would be safer. However, after he got here, he came to know that the place was much more chaotic than the Endless Sea.

Looking at the strange phenomenon where the sun, the moon, and the stars all appeared in the sky, Shi Yan was sentimental.

All things that happened were because of him.

The existence of the massive space crack had led to the great change of the power in heaven and earth, that awakened many alien tribes. This gave the strong power to the creatures that shouldn't exist in this world.



The Dark Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, the Demon Clan, the Monster Clan, and the Ghost Mark Clan were the alien tribes that had disappeared for dozens of thousands of years. But now, they had escaped the foreign lands and returned to the Divine Great Land. This was the additional brush stroke for this long-term calamity.

Sizzle Sizzle Sizzle!

Flows of light smoke exuded from his acupuncture points. Under the effect of the negative moods, Shi Yan became hot-tempered. He suddenly had the mood to destroy everything.

Thump Thump Thump!

His heartbeat increased. His anger was like a scorching flame burning in his body. It was raising vehemently from time to time.

Not good!

His face changed. Shi Yan knew that if it continued this way, he would lose control again and fall into bedevilment.

As a Second Sky of Spirit Realm warrior, he could easily receive the accumulated energy of the opponent with the condition that he had to keep his mind firm, and he must not let his spirit disorder.

However, what that man said had stirred up the picture he didn't want to see. Thus, he became more sensitive. When the negative mood arose, he hadn't prepared yet. The negative mood then flooded his mind directly, breaking his reason.

Phew Phew Phew!

Shi Yan panted heavily, and his face reddened. Sweat soaked him, with veins bulging out of his neck like some little worms. He looked terrible and fearsome.

His muscles enlarged and shriveled from time to time. His body had a bizarre change. It looked like his change had stimulated the Blood Vein Ring. The ring started to emit energy fluctuations,

releasing a hazy red light, which was strange but beautiful.

The energy in his acupuncture points wasn't controlled anymore. At first, it started to wreck his body. Gradually, it became more maniacal, and couldn't be controlled. Afterward, it deluged to his arm towards the Blood Vein Ring.

The Essence Qi of his entire body blended with the soul that had reached the Spirit Realm added with space power shot out like an incomparable light.

Light bloomed from the Blood Vein Ring.

Crack!

Some firm barrier was shattered, turning into countless light spots, scattering everywhere.

The space inside the Blood Vein Ring expanded rapidly, and the spacious area was enlarged. Flows of memory turned into spiritual thoughts and started to imprint onto a deep place of his soul.

Shi Yan was struck severely. The blood-like light appeared in his eyes. The brutal mood eventually calmed down, and the murderous aura of his body started to settle.

He stood there, using his soul to sense the thoughts in his head. He flipped between the imprints in his soul to search.

...

"Found him!"

Three Spirit Realm warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan stood outside the Northern Cold City, their appearance cold. They were holding a strange, magical silver ball, laughing out loud.

Rays of light appeared densely like the willow catkin. They vaguely marked the location of the Northern Cold City.

"Kelly is dead!"

A man with countless portrayed lines on his face said. His aura

was like that of a snake, cold and evil.

"Keller! No matter who the opponent is, we will capture him. We will take revenge for your brother!" said a member of the Ghost Mark Clan firmly.

The hotshot of the Ghost Mark Clan called Keller had the Third Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base. He was really strong among the three. He was like rigid ice in an extremely cold place, which gave people an annoying feeling.

"I want his soul to be tortured for thousands of years!" Keller gritted his teeth, his face pale. Abruptly, he dashed towards the Northern Cold City.

A wide sword made of the extremely cold iron released a cold halo of metal while shooting out loudly, dragging a long light tail in the air, which was strangely beautiful.

The extremely cold iron was the rare product of the Ghost Mark Clan's secret territory. Each block was more than ten thousand jin, carrying the cold and the Yin Qi of the iron, which could get into people's bones and marrows. This material was really intimidating.

The broadsword flew in the air, and shortly, it arrived above Shi Yan's head. Without giving time for Shi Yan to react, the broadsword slashed down directly, making a sharp whistle.

Shi Yan was still sinking in some strange realm, and he looked like he was studying that realm. Hearing the whistle, Shi Yan instinctively swung his arms.

Death and Life Seal!

With the Death Intent Domain as the foundation of energy, seals piled up in the air. The Death Intent Domain expanded, covering his body.

The sharp tip of the broadsword collided with the Death and Life Seal. It tilted and couldn't slash down vertically.

At this moment, Shi Yan suddenly opened his eyes and then snorted. The Blood Vein Ring on his finger flashed, and the Sky Destroyer divine sword emerged.

He didn't give Keller more chances. Eyes on the Sky Destroyer opened one by one. By the time one-third of the eyes opened, a crazy, murderous aura bloomed out from Shi Yan as the core.

The Sky Destroyer divine sword had turned into a surging blood sea, which held an endless murderous aura, covering Keller's wide sword, which was made of the extremely cold iron. This blood sea washed the energy Keller had poured into the sword completely.

"Courting death!"

The two members of the Ghost Mark Clan, who arrived together with Keller, couldn't hold their laughter. They then performed the secret technique of the Ghost Mark Clan; one was on the left, and the other was on the right. Their soul energies fused, creating a Ghost Hiss soul sword, thrusting towards Shi Yan's host soul.

"Get out!"

Shi Yan squinted, using his soul to call the Inner World Five Devils. The Five Devils turned into five gray silhouettes and flew out from his Sea of Consciousness. Shortly, they caught that Ghost Hiss soul sword.

The Five Devils used force, grasped the soul sword and pulled it in five different directions. Shortly, the soul sword was divided into five pieces.

The souls of Keller's team shuddered. They sprayed out blood at the same time. Apparently, they all got hurt.

"Well, the three of you, I couldn't ask for anything better. I will use your deaths to enter the new realm." Shi Yan felt the Essence Qi in his body was one grade lower than required. He sneered and then released the War Devil. At the same time, he urged the negative energy. The Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame appeared

on his shoulders respectively as he started his slaughter.

He knew that after he killed these three, he could use their Essence Qi to reach the Second Sky of Spirit Realm.

His soul's realm had crossed the bottleneck beforehand.

# Chapter 610: Bao Ao

---

(Bao Ao - lit. untamed and violent – TL)

Keller had the Third Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base, which ordinary warriors would find hard to deal with.

Members of the Ghost Mark Clan had accumulated their attainment for dozens of thousands of years. They had a varied experience in fighting. The clansmen were innate fighters with magical martial spirits. At the same time, their understanding of soul Upanishads was more profound than the others.

Keller's realm could subdue Shi Yan. According to common sense, it shouldn't have been so strenuous for him to kill Shi Yan. However, when he really did that, he got to know things were never as they seemed.

When Shi Yan used the Rampage Realm's ability, his power would accelerate massively. His body, which was refined with the Golden Marrow of the giant, had become even more tenacious. At this moment, he was at the non-human monster level!

His sturdy body accompanied by the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was more dangerous, especially with the magical recovery ability. Adding the unknown sword, his power was enough to provoke warriors at higher realms.

BANG!

The blood halo of the Sky Destroyer divine sword flashed. The extremely cold iron broadsword Keller had flung away was blocked, deviated into a curved trajectory.

Keller's soul trembled. He put forth everything to deal with the Inner World Five Devils, and didn't have the extra force to enhance the power of the broadsword.

When Keller wanted to retrieve the flying broadsword, he found it was too late. He could only keep his mind and spirit to prevent

the Five Devils from eroding his soul.

"It's you who courts death. Don't blame me," Shi Yan wore a ruthless countenance. He asked the Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame to find the chance and kill him.

At the moment he was sinking in that magical Intent Domain, he had some images carved into his head, his memory. However, they were scattered and disordered. If he couldn't re-order those images, he couldn't know what situation it was.

Vaguely, he knew that if he could understand those images in his head, he could know the profile of the Blood Vein Ring's previous owner.

Those images didn't bring any technique or power, but a mournful aura of the old times. That aura stormed directly into his heart, which made his soul resonate altogether. Those images seemed to picture the most glorious experience of one's life.

However, Keller's team had attacked him maliciously without saying a word, while Shi Yan hadn't had enough time to understand them thoroughly.

From the Radiant God Cult to the Wonderful Stone City and the Northern Cold City, Shi Yan had observed many tragic scenes. Human bodies were everywhere in the cities. Many of them had a pathetic death, and Shi Yan couldn't endure the sight.

Everything was because of the pagans. The massacre in the Spirit Treasure Sect's territory was created by the Ghost Mark Clan.

At this moment, he had no good feeling or mercy towards the Ghost Mark Clan. He just wanted to kill them all.

"Kill him for me!" Keller spat out blood while shouting, "Do not use soul power. This man's familiar with our clan's soul technique. The Five Devils are tough, too!"

As the Five Devils were entangling them, Keller and the other two couldn't endure. They had to spend a part of their power to

deal with the Inner World Five Devils.

Shi Yan was emotionless, his eyes as cold as a saber. He held the Sky Destroyer divine sword while gazing at Keller. Shi Yan then performed the mysterious sword martial techniques. Beams of light shot out like meteors, swooshing over their heads like a raging storm.

The War Devil with its heavy armor was like a steel tank, as it rumblingly crushed over, attacking the other two from Keller's team.

The two Ghost Mark Clan's clansmen were struggling hard under the War Devil's attacks. The mysterious soul techniques they knew had no effect on the War Devil.

Seizing the chance, the Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame discreetly took action. The freezing flame and the scorching halo flew out from the dark, hurting the other two instantly.

At first, the Ice Cold Flame sealed them. While they felt the extremely cold temperature, blazing light entangled them, intruding their body and burning their internal organs.

The War Devil barged in like a collapsing iron mountain while they were screaming painfully. Under this severe impact, their bones fractured right at the spot.

Two souls scattered.

Shi Yan beamed a faint smile, throwing the Soul Gathering Pearl to capture those two souls. He turned to Keller and shouted, "Don't let him run away!"

While he was shouting, his soul energy had turned into the simple space blades, attacking Keller's Sea of Consciousness.

Each flow of his soul had been added with space power. Once he made an attack, it would turn into a simple space blade. Although it couldn't mince the opponent's Sea of Consciousness, it could steal the sensation of the opponent's Sea of Consciousness for a



while.

Keller's Sea of Consciousness was intruded. He seemed as if struck by the Body Fixed Technique, his eyes dull.

The three attacking spears, War Devil, Ice Cold Flame, and Earth Flame took the chance and froze Keller's body instantly. Then, under the heavy pressure, Keller broke into countless pieces.

The Soul Gathering Pearl took Keller's soul while his Essence Qi flew out, entering Shi Yan's body.

Shi Yan was struck all of a sudden as he felt the surging energy was flooding his body. He assigned the War Devil, the Ice Cold Flame, and the Earth Flame before sitting down cross-legged. He didn't bother with the location, just calmed down his mind to cultivate, refining the negative energy to produce the mysterious, strange power.

During this process, the blurred images in his head became clearer, starting to flash in his head.

His eyes were as bright as diamonds. He was condensing his energy while paying attention to the magical images in his head. He wanted to re-order those images to know what had happened after all.

Thick dark clouds from the horizon drifted in the sky of the Northern Cold City, covering the sun. A demonic dragon which was more than hundreds of meters long was meandering inside the dark clouds. This demonic dragon was covered with black scales, that looked to be made of black iron. The dragon had a pair of curly horns, with a massive, ominous aura.

A man in his thirties was sitting upright on the head of the demonic dragon. He had long black hair draped over his shoulder, and looked handsome in a gray robe. He was imposingly majestic. A strange triangle mark lied in the center of his forehead, shimmering with an evil, gloomy halo.

It was like that middle-aged man riding the demonic dragon had passed the Northern Cold City by chance. His pair of dark eyes that didn't have any light squinted as he was looking ahead of him nonchalantly.

All of a sudden, the demonic dragon roared rumblingly as it started to descend from ten thousand meters in the sky.

The majestic man sitting on the demonic dragon's neck was surprised. He knitted his beautiful eyebrows and scooped down to observe the situation on the ground.

At first glance, he saw the black iron War Devil.

"Ah!"

The man was terrified and emotional. Astonishment flooded his deep pupils as he muttered to himself, "Using the Dark Qi to quench the antiquity time fighting puppet War Devil is the technique that only the Demon Clan's precursors know. Strange! Have our clan's precursors come back from the foreign land...?"

He mumbled, then let the Demonic Dragon hover in the sky so he could watch the situation down there.

Behind the Demonic Dragon were thousands of demonic beasts of the Demon Area, lining up neatly. Each demonic beast carried a hotshot of the Demon Clan, who had at least the Sky Realm cultivation base. Among them, there were more than ten warriors at the Spirit Realm, and two more True God Realm experts.

The formation of the demonic beasts of the Demon Area maintained a distance from the Demonic Dragon that led them. When they found the Demonic Dragon had stopped, several thousand demonic beasts had halted silently behind it. A heavy pressure like a mountain diffused from the hotshots of the Demon Clan.

"Why has Master Bao Ao stopped here?"

Sitting on a dragon beast of the Demon Area was a tall and

muscular scarred man. He was almost three meters tall, and a python wound around his waist. He had just spoken loudly to the others. As he had the black scale armor on his body, people could recognize that he was the member of the Black Scale Clan. His aura was brutal and murderous.

"Certainly, Master Bao Ao has found something," said an elegant woman. She was wearing male costumes, holding a pretty maid of the Night Charming Race in her lap. They were riding a level 8 seven-headed Black Brilliance bird. She laughed and then talked to the muscular man next to her. "Gu Da Si, later on when we arrive at the Ghost Mark Clan, if you see the young girls of the Ghost Mark Clan, help me ask if they sell them, okay?" While the woman was talking, a thorny tail extended under her long white dress.

"Bo Ruo, we come to the Ghost Mark Clan to discuss how to uproot the humans!" The muscular man of the Black Scale Clan was called Gu Da Si. Scars on his face twisted like a bunch of worms as he grinned fiendishly. "Young maids of the human race have the softest body. They aren't as rough as our Demon Clan. I love them the most."

"You're disgusting!" Bo Ruo glared at him begrudgingly. "You butcher, you're wasting the world's treasures. If you see them, remember to let me taste first. Once I'm done with them, you can eat them."

"You are disgusting!" Gu Da Si snorted, his face disdainful. "Well, the women you've touched are so dirty. If anyone eats them, he will puke out for the rest of his life!"

"Get lost!" Bo Ruo's voice was like an arrow shooting towards Gu Da Si.

"Motherf\*cker! Here she goes again!" The tall man shouted indignantly. He jolted up to counter the attack, rubbing his fists and jumping up. Black scales rose on his body, making the sound like the wind blowing through pine tree forest, which had stirred

up the energy of heaven and earth.

More than ten experts at the Spirit Realm stayed behind them. They were sitting neatly with a serious countenance. They seemed not to bother with the fight in front of them, but the beast they rode were moving away discreetly, as if they were afraid of getting involved.

In the front of the formation, the handsome middle-aged man was standing on the hundred-meter-long dragon, looking at the Northern Cold City under his feet. His gloomy pupils gradually rested on Shi Yan.

A tiny beam of surprise sparkled deep inside his pupils. He looked at the five gray shadows, couldn't help but hold his forehead and groan. He let out a light shout as if he were insane. "The one who controls the five great negative emotions, the Antiquity Demogorgon... Damn it! What's going on...?"

"Bao Ao-ge, that kid has space power in his Sea of Consciousness," The Demonic Dragon sent him its thought.

"Space power?" The middle-aged man was startled. Then he revealed his astonishment. "Is it... The great change that has divided spaces is because of this kid?" Suddenly, the man laughed out loud. "Interesting. I didn't expect to see the ringleader this time. It's interesting indeed."

Then, he jumped off the Demonic Dragon, deliberately walking in the void towards the man in the corner of the Northern Cold City with a smiling face.

# Chapter 611: The Ancient 'Bao' (Cruel) Family

---

Shi Yan sat emotionlessly as magical and mysterious images crossed his head as fast as lightning. Most of them were about the great fierce wars.

During the wars, Shi Yan saw the ancient clans including the Dark Spirit Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan, and the Giant Clan.

Members of these alien clans projected in the images all had earth-shaking power. They could smash an entire mountain with only one strike, leaving a hundred-meter-deep ditch on the ground.

However, those images weren't continual. It was hard to re-order them precisely.

In his head, every image came with the unceasingly rumbling thunder.

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan tried to arrange some images, but he found that it was too difficult to do that. He couldn't restore their original sequence.

During this process, it seemed some seal had been unlocked in this world. Some scattered memoirs in heaven and earth had turned into flows of ancient soul fluctuation, pouring in him. Gradually, a vague mark had formed at his glabella.

Five pentagonal blood clouds appeared!

The five clusters of blood-red cloud were like an ancient mark or some family crest imprinted at his glabella. Blood halo bloomed gloriously, giving people a feeling of something both beautiful and savage

He didn't know what was happening to him. Shi Yan still sat neatly on the ground as he was watching some magical images

detaching from his head and poured into the mark.

After receiving some images, the ancient mark got clearer and more complete. This gave him a new strange aura.

A middle-aged man walked toward him with hands clasping behind his back. He stopped around one hundred meters away from Shi Yan, smiling until his eyes squinted.

The War Devil suddenly reacted. From deep inside its empty pair, a black, evil light shot out, furious as if it could swallow the bright light.

The five gray shadows that were winding around him all reacted. They buzzed, sending their soul fluctuations as they were anxious, placing their attention on that middle-aged man.

That strange middle-aged man also had a triangle mark on his forehead, which became clearer at this moment.

"Haha! Haha! Interesting, indeed, so interesting!" Bao Ao mumbled to himself. The smile on his face became warmer. He felt happier and even more excited, rubbing his hands like a child seeing the toy he had been yearning for. The middle-aged man couldn't control his joy.

The Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame flew on Shi Yan's left and right shoulders. Their flames were flickering indefinitely; they couldn't relax. Three fierce flows of soul fluctuation stormed into the deep place inside Shi Yan's soul. His host soul trembled violently then woke up.

Some magical images in his head flew and merged into the strange blood cloud on his glabella. He couldn't re-order them, so he felt a little bit regret.

He didn't know he had a mysterious mark on his forehead now. Sinking in the loss, he shook his head then opened his eyes, shouting using his soul. "What are you doing?"

The Inner World Five Devils, the Earth Flame, and the Ice Cold

Flame sent him their thoughts rapidly together with the alarming fluctuation.

Shi Yan shuddered. He utterly woke up now. His pupils shrank as his aura bloomed out fiercely. He glared at the middle-aged man standing opposite to him. Pores in his entire body opened. Flows of negative energy that looked like real pallid tentacles emerged from his pores and acupuncture points.

Shi Yan seemed to turn into a strange demon with many pale tentacles covering his body. Each tentacle was around two meters long, with the brutal negative energy. They were moving like octopus tentacles around him.

He immediately knew that his negative energy had condensed to the ultimate level, turning from the air form to a more solid form. His power was increasing robustly.

Each tentacle connected to one of his acupuncture points. Seven hundred and twenty tentacles were spreading all over his body, which gave him a magical feeling.

It seemed these tentacles were parts of his body, carrying the strange, mysterious power.

This was the performance of the Rampage Upanishads, which had promoted the negative energy of his entire body. When he calmed down his mind, the tentacles shrank and retreated into his acupuncture points, returning to the pure negative energy.

At the same time, the Sea of Consciousness in his brain was shaken. Shi Yan sensed and found that his Essence Qi Ancient Tree had grown twice.

His eyes sparkled.

Abruptly, he knew that he had entered the Second Sky of Spirit Realm from the First Sky of Spirit Realm unknowingly. His Sea of Consciousness expanded, and his soul was finer. Together with his mind and spirit, they had a magical union. His flesh and blood also

had a mighty strength.

Level up!

"Congratulations, little brother," Bao Ao smiled quietly. He strolled towards Shi Yan without caring about the gaze of the War Devil, the Ice Cold Flame, and the Earth Flame. He looked quite casual and at ease.

Shi Yan felt tense. The Sky Destroyer divine sword emerged from thin air and gradually appeared in his palm.

"Who are you?"

Shi Yan couldn't sense any kind of energy from that man. At the Second Sky of Spirit Realm, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness couldn't sense the aura of the other. In his cognition, the man standing in front of him seemed not to exist.

He had experienced this feeling when facing Yun Hao.

He immediately knew that the one standing opposite to him was an existence at Yun Hao's level. He was even more dangerous than Yun Hao.

"Who am I?" Bao Ao burst out laughing. He shook his head and then said, "Seems you little brother hasn't received the inheritance yet. Yeah, we aren't hurried. Just take your time. Little brother, you will receive more memory seals. At that time, you can try to sense the wonderful connection between you and me."

Shi Yan was stunned. He had no clue.

He realized that he didn't understand the words that came out of the other's mouth. It seemed the other had known about him, but he couldn't sense that man's realm or anything else.

Seeing Bao Ao walking towards him, Shi Yan tried his best to adjust the aura. Flows of pure Essence Qi grumbly overflowed the Sky Destroyer divine sword in his hand.

"Don't be tense. I mean no harm." Bao Ao threw his arms into the



air and laughed. His voice was soft that could comfort people. "If I had bad intentions, well, even if there were one hundred of you here, all of you would be dead."

Shi Yan discolored.

"Well, I told you not to be tense. See, you're getting tense again," laughed Bao Ao.

While he was talking, he arrived in front of Shi Yan. The man stopped while his deep dark eyes were scanning Shi Yan. He nodded and then smiled. "I was just passing by, and saw you were breaking through your realm. I was suddenly interested in it, so I came to see. I don't have other intentions."

Shi Yan didn't answer. He was trying to guess the other's identity.

Warriors who had this realm weren't someone not famous in the Divine Great Land. Perhaps he had the same realm as Yun Hao. Was he the Master of the Martial Spirit Palace, perhaps? The Master of the Spirit Treasure Sect?

"Little brother, this one is for you. Later on, if you can't live with humans anymore, come to me." Bao Ao patted his head as if he had just recalled something. His slender index finger touched his forehead.

The strange triangle mark suddenly glowed, as a dark gold token flew out from his mark.

That small token wasn't made of gold or jade. It was a whole intact plaque covered in ancient symbols. The simple curves on the token interlinked, giving people a strange but evil feeling.

That small token had a triangular shape, similar to the mark on that man's forehead. However, it was a real token.

This token looked like it had a life. It didn't wait for Shi Yan to receive it, moving directly to his forehead.

However, that small token trembled as if it were wiped away right before it could touch the mark on Shi Yan's glabella.

The smile on Bao Ao's face widened as if he had predicted the event before. He laughed and then touched the small token in the air. Afterward, the token quit entering the mark on Shi Yan's forehead, but stuck on his neck, just like a leech clutching on the skin under his right ear.

A triangle mark glowed, sparkling along with Shi Yan's changing energy.

When Shi Yan gathered himself together again and didn't urge his power, the mark dimmed and faded out, as though it had sunk into his skin.

A cold feeling of cold jade spread from his neck. Shi Yan discolored. He was more frightened. "What have you done to me?"

Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness to sense. Right when he touched the token, the energy in the token had stirred it up. Shi Yan couldn't see the situation inside the small token or what kind of restraint it was.

Shi Yan was distraught. A token was integrated into his body. He felt that he was enslaved already. This feeling irritated him a lot.

However, he didn't dare to provoke the other. Even though that middle-aged man didn't reveal any dangerous intention, Shi Yan had a premonition that if that man wanted his life, he couldn't do anything to resist.

Bao Ao laughed while watching his reaction. It seemed he found it interesting to watch Shi Yan in panic.

"Don't be scared. Haha. I just want good things for you. You'll get it later," Bao Ao contemplated for a while and then pointed at Shi Yan's forehead, reminding him. "Be careful. You'd better not let anyone else see this mark, especially the human experts. Haha, or else, you will become the common enemy of the entire humanity.

Yeah... That's it. You should deal with it. If you can't live with humans anymore, remember to find me. I am Bao Ao. If you want to find me, you just need to put your soul thought into that token. I'll get it immediately."

Bao Ao smiled, waving his hand frankly. "Do your best."

After that, Bao Ao slowly ascended into the air. Under Shi Yan's attentive look, he walked towards the Demonic Dragon hovering thousands of meters in the void.

"Humanity..." Shi Yan was suddenly struck with fear. He shouted, "Are you pagan?"

"I'm from the Demon Clan. Bao Ao from the Ancient Bao family. Each family with the name 'Ancient' has at least one hundred thousand years of inheritance." Bao Ao beamed a faint smile as he sat on the Demonic Dragon and left with a big laughter.

When Bao Ao started to move, all the terrifying demonic beasts of the Demon Area behind him slowly appeared from the clouds. This great formation was moving towards the Shady Firmament Old Mound.

Shi Yan could vaguely see the fearful hotshots with different appearance of the Demon Clan riding those giant demonic beasts. They were all looking at him with astonishment.

Shi Yan was stupefied like a wooden rooster, his body cold.

# Chapter 612: Ancient Mark

---

After Bao Ao had left the Northern Cold City and got back to his dragon, the two True God Realm experts of the Demon Clan Gu Da Si and Bo Ruo walked to him with suspicions.

"Master Bao Ao, who is that kid? He's just a human. Why didn't you kill him?" Gu Da Si felt puzzled.

Bo Ruo's beautiful eyes sparkled.

"Haha, he has the bloodline of our Demon Clan. He's the one who has received the inheritance of the oldest family in our Demon Clan." Bao Ao beamed a faint smile. "That kid's really interesting. When he grows up, he'll be really dangerous. If his inheritance awakens, human beings won't receive him any more. Sooner or later, he will belong to our side."

"Why did he have the oldest inheritance of the Demonic Clan?" Gu Da Si was surprised.

"Members of the Human Clan have their blood mixed with many other clans. This isn't a surprise." Bao Ao was patient to explain. "If it weren't because of that, this race wouldn't have occupied this continent for so many years. The bloodline of the Human Clan is the worst. But this clan has the ability to adapt well to other races. Their bloodline can blend with almost every other race. Through this kind of breeding, this race could develop further."

"Isn't it our purpose to kill them all?" Bo Ruo chuckled. "Even if their bloodline is mixed, their power is still much less than ours. Many martial techniques and power Upanishads are lost."

"Don't underestimate them," Bao Ao was serious, his face grim. "In the war that year, if we hadn't underestimated them, we wouldn't have had such a great defeat. This race has a tremendous adaptive faculty. As long as we give them time to cultivate, they can burst out their energy, which can terrify everybody."

Gu De Si and Bo Ruo listened to him, but their faces were still disdainful. Apparently, they didn't keep Bao Ao's words in their minds.

Bao Ao sighed in his heart, not wanting to talk more. He also knew that the Human Clan was weaker. Otherwise, they couldn't be swept away shortly like that. Now they could only try to retreat their heads and hold the last breath.

"Let's go. We should get to the Shady Firmament Old Mound first. We need to check if we can bring more members out of there. Sigh, it's been so many years. Actually, the survivors of our Clan aren't many. We just have to try our best."

Gu Da Si and Ba Ruo were also emotional. They didn't talk more, and just continued their journey.

...

Shi Yan looked at the herd of Demon Area's demonic beasts gliding above his head. He felt as cold as ice.

The power this clan showed off at this moment was enough to destroy any of the seven ancient factions in the Divine Great Land. Even if the Radiant God Cult and the Pure Land joined hands, being destroyed was their only final result.

The real competence of the Demon Clan shouldn't be that simple.

Besides the Demon Clan, the Divine Great Land now had the Ghost Mark Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, the Corpse Clan, the Dark Clan, and the Monster Clan. It wasn't easy for them to survive until this moment. Once they could fully restore their power, it wasn't something the Human Clan could resist.

Shi Yan suddenly had the premonition that the humanity's apocalypse was about to come.

Touching the mark on his neck, Shi Yan felt distressed – he couldn't erase it.

He had unknowingly received a mark on his body, which gave him an irritated feeling, making him nervous. He didn't know whether the man called Bao Ao could lock him in some corner using this mark, or, if he could bring him to death at any minute.

It was like a person who had gotten the seed of death in his body. When his opponent wanted him to die, he just needed to flicker his thought, and Shi Yan would die a tragic death.

As he was restrained, a devil barrier would arise in his heart, which would affect his cultivation later. This could always scare his spirit and mind, and his level up process would be hindered from now on.

The cold energy moved in his palm, as an ice mirror emerged. Glaring at the mirror, he immediately saw the blood mark on his glabella. The mark was shimmering with blood halo, giving him a brutal, bloody aura.

This was an ancient mark, the mark that only the oldest family of the Demon Clan could have. The mark was the sign that someone belonged to a family. Through this mark, they could receive the inheritance of the family.

He didn't need anybody to remind him to know that the Blood Vein Ring and his transformation in the Blood Pond related to a strong expert of the ancient Demon Clan in the Antiquity Time.

‘I must erase this mark!’

He took a deep breath then sit down neatly, trying to use different methods to wipe out the mark at his glabella.

After a long time, he quit helplessly.

That mark had become part of his soul. No matter what he did, he couldn't wipe it away.

He had even cut off the skin on his forehead. When the Immortal Martial Spirit restored his skin, the mark was still there visibly.

He had tried continually, and he understood that this mark wouldn't fade away shortly. Begrudgingly, he could only wear a black band on his head to cover the mark.

The ancient mark brought the inheritance of an ancient family of the Demon Clan. This meant he was half demon.

All of a sudden, he felt puzzled, not knowing where he was heading. He was hesitant, and didn't know whether he should go to the Martial Spirit Palace or not.

Shi Yan frowned, thinking about his family and friends in the Shi family and the Yang family...

Everything he had experienced flashed once again in his head. Shi Jian, who had always protected him... The Yang family's hope... And Xia Xin Yan...

Gradually, his eyes became determined. His uneasy spirit was calibrated as he adjusted his direction one more time.

Leaving the mark on his neck aside, Shi Yan pondered and restarted his journey, walking towards the Martial Spirit Palace. However, he was more careful, as he intended to avoid the areas where the pagans could gather.

His journey was safe this time. Ten days had passed as fast as lightning. Finally, Shi Yan arrived at the Martial Spirit Palace's territory.

Similar to the Radiant God Cult and the Spirit Treasure Sect, the Martial Spirit Palace's land was filled with the heavy pressure of death. Many civil kingdoms had depended on the Martial Spirit Palace. Now, their cities were all empty. Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness to check, but he couldn't detect any living fluctuations.

However, he was glad that he didn't see many terrifying scenes in the territory of the Martial Spirit Palace. As he had watched so many tragic scenes, he couldn't help but curse.

As the Martial Spirit Palace had soon prepared, they had gathered the members of Human Clan everywhere in the entire territory and hid in some corner to survive.

After two days, he arrived at the famous Perpetual Night Forest of the Divine Great Land.

The Perpetual Night Forest was situated in the Martial Spirit Palace's. Big trees towered the ground, some of them as big as a mountain, which had been growing for ten thousand years.

The reason why this forest was called Perpetual Night was because of the dense ancient trees here. Their branches were too thick, so they blocked the sunlight from the sky. This forest didn't receive the sunlight year around, and it always looked as dark as night.

Currently, the sun, moon, and stars had all appeared in the sky of the Divine Great Land, and there was no night anymore. Regions in the continent were always illuminated.

Only the Perpetual Night Forest remained in its original state. All the natural light was blocked. Even the sun and the moon in the sky couldn't fill this forest with light.

Walking through the Perpetual Night Forest and looking at the thick leaves and branches in above his head, Shi Yan got to know the meaning of the forest's name.

Indeed, there was no light in this forest. The entire place was gloomy. Only some tiny beams of strong sunlight could reach the ground. But it was very scarce.

In this wet and dark forest, there were many translucent streams and lakes. Fishes there looked fat and delicious. Also, the air in the forest was fresh, which could reinvigorate people.

In his knowledge, the Perpetual Night Forest was the largest area in the Martial Spirit Palace's territory. It was situated on an area of millions of miles squared. It would take years to cross through this



forest. Many mysteries hid inside this forest. People could see the ruins of ancient temples and graves here and there in the forest.

Many experts, who decided to have a secluded life, had chosen to stay in the Perpetual Night forest, which had abundant cultivating materials spiritual aura. Living in this forest, they didn't need to worry about the cultivating materials.

After one day and one night of walking in the Perpetual Night Forest, Shi Yan hadn't sensed any aura of living creatures. He hadn't met any human or beast.

A forest should have a vibrant atmosphere, but the ambiance here was heavy, which made people feel uncomfortable.

All of a sudden, he smelled the scent of blood. As his thought flickered, his body moved swiftly like an electric current. Instantly, he had crossed one thousand meters forward and then halted by a pool.

The pool wasn't big, towered by many hundred-meter-tall ancient trees. Dead bodies scattered around the pool. The clean pool water was now dyed red by the blood.

Shi Yan's face became cold and dark.

The dead bodies by the pool were the members of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Winged Clan. These two clans had submitted to him, deeming him their master. At least one hundred pagans were slaughtered. Moreover, their bodies were torn into pieces.

The opponent's action was savagely brutal!

He suddenly recalled something terrible – How had the Demonic Sound Clan and the Winged Clan been?

Returning to the past, perhaps the Demonic Sound Clan and the Winged Clan had been in the Divine Great Land. However, after the great change of heaven and earth, alien races had depended on the Ghost Mark Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, and the Demon Clan to slaughter humans. Wherever they went through, they left people

in miseries. Human Clan should be filled with resentment.

The Demonic Sound Clan and the Winged Clan should be safe if they went with the other alien tribes.

However, they were with the Yang family...

Members of the Yang family had used the Teleportation Formation to go to the Northern Gem Mountain in the Radiant God Cult. Had Yun Hao – the Master of the Radiant God Cult – accepted them? At the moment the alien tribes were massacring humans, would the Demonic Sound Clan and the Winged Clan be the targets to vent out their anger?

Although Yun Hao could give him face to not attack them, how about the others? Would the Pure Land, the Spirit Treasure Sect, and the Martial Spirit Palace leave them alone?

The Demonic Sound Clan and the Winged Clan had become the pagans that could join any side. In the eyes of the alien clans, they were betrayers. To humanity, they were the aliens who deserved death...

Arriving at this thought, Shi Yan felt chilled. He could almost confirm that the Demonic Sound Clan and the Winged Clan on his side had become the most pathetic force in the Divine Great Land.

Both the alien tribes and the mankind would aim at them.

His face darkened. He pressed down the worries in his heart and continued to move through the Perpetual Night Forest.

It had been three days, and he had met many places where dead bodies piled up. Without a single exception, they were all the members of the Demonic Sound Clan and the Winged Clan. Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo should have met a big purge.

Perhaps, even Di Shan and Yi Tian Mo got killed.

The realm of Di Shan's group wasn't bad in the Endless Sea, but in this Divine Great Land, compared to the True God Realm

experts like Yun Hao, they were nothing.

Shi Yan's face became darker. He couldn't wash away the shame in his heart. This was the first time he had the thought of being responsible for a race. He had to save them!

# Chapter 613: Blood animosity

---

(Translator's note: from this chapter, the Demonic Sound Clan will be revised to Dark Devil Clan. I'm currently checking the previous chapters and re-translating them. I found this mistake in chapter 233. For the consistency of the novel, I will use Dark Devil Clan from now on. I'm sorry for this inconvenience.)

The Perpetual Night Forest was a spacious area several million miles squared. This place was shady year around. Demonic beasts swaggered here and there.

After several days of walking in the forest, Shi Yan found more dead bodies of the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan. Moreover, he saw many signs of deaths, which belonged to the Yang family's warriors.

Along the way, his heart sank deeper as he suffered a big sorrow.

Shi Yan had thought that he didn't need to care about the great change of the Grace Mainland, and he just needed to protect his family, saving them from harm.

But now he knew how funny his idea was. The whole continent was sinking in a great tsunami. Pagans were slaughtering and robbing everywhere. Who was lucky enough to escape this calamity?

All of a sudden, he felt a strong soul fluctuation in his Sea of Consciousness!

Shi Yan accelerated, dashing at his max speed toward the East.

BOOM!

His energy exploded everywhere. On his way, all the flora was crushed.

Level 3 and level 4 demonic beasts along his way scattered disorderly when they sensed his intimidating aura.

Shi Yan halted.

Three level 7 demonic beasts were surrounding ten members of the Dark Devil Clan by a swamp.

The leader of this group had only the Third Sky of Nirvana Realm. He was wounded badly. Blood was gushing out from one of his arms.

The three level 7 beasts included a one-horned rhino, a jasper spider, and an eight-legged blue blood frog. They all had intellect with quick moves.

This group of ten clansmen of the Dark Devil Clan couldn't resist anymore, obviously. If no one helped them, they would perish soon.

Yi Mu paled, looking at his fellows falling one by one. Hatred overflowed his heart. He regretted that his competence wasn't enough to take revenge for his fellows. Looking at the dismembered bodies, he was about to get crazy.

The Jasper spider looked like a round object. Its legs sparkled with a cold, blue light. Every time they stomped on the ground, they dug a deep hole.

The Jasper spider was like an experienced hunter. It wasn't hurried as it was slowly weaving a web. This arachnid wanted to capture Yi Mu's group alive and then eat their brains little by little.

This beast was smart. It knew that the human brain tasted best when they were alive, so it didn't rush. First, it would drain Yi Mu's group, then it could slowly enjoy the fine food.

When the energy of heaven and earth changed, demonic beasts in the Grace Mainland seemed to gain intellect as well. The genuine beasts were now all cunning. Apparently, they formed the so-called Monster Clan.

When the beasts reached level 7, not only their wisdom increased, but they also gained some magical cultivating

techniques of the Monster Clan. This would enhance their power on a massive scale. Vaguely, they had become the official members of the Monster Clan.

Swoosh!

Shi Yan's figure halted in between the three beasts while a murderous aura diffused from him.

Demonic beasts at level 7 all had wisdom. They showed that they were scared of Shi Yan's imposing aura when they just sensed it. The beasts retreated quickly.

Hwee Hwoo Hwoo!

These beasts had used the strange whistling to communicate. Three beasts scattered, moving to three different directions as they wanted to flee away from this man as far as possible.

"Young Master Yan!"

Yi Mu's eyes seemed to rupture, sparkling with a strange light as he couldn't help but shout. This man was Yi Tian Mo's nephew, so he had met Shi Yan several times. At the most critical time, he almost burst into tears on seeing Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's countenance was cold. He didn't say anything. His mind flickered as he released the War Devil, assigning it to kill.

The War Devil was like a steel and iron war chariot, barging rumblingly and moving directly towards the Jasper spider.

The web the jasper spider had weaved was smashed. The War Devil wildly stomped his ten-thousand-jun (a jun = 30 jin = 15 kilograms) foot on the Jasper spider. Its heavy foot pierced through the spider.

The War Devil turned around, dashing towards the other two beasts.

Shi Yan didn't watch the battle. He came to Yi Mo, who was bleeding badly, took out a jade bottle and gave it to him. "Swallow

them. Three pills for each of you. Sit down and restore yourself now."

It was the Great Original Qi pellet he had exchanged in the Spirit Potion Valley. It was considered a rare spiritual medicine in the Divine Great Land to nurture the body and restore the warrior's spirit, mind, and soul.

Tears lingered in Yi Mu's eyes. He didn't talk more, nodded, and swallowed three pills. Then, he handed the remaining pills to the other fellows.

Thirteen members of the Dark Devil Clan received three pills each.

As Shi Yan had advised them, they sat down and started to adjust their bodies to recover their wounds.

Shi Yan watched here and there. He found five bodies of the Dark Devil Clan around one thousand meters away from them. All were ripped apart and headless. The beasts must have eaten them.

Shi Yan sighed in his heart, his face sad. He knew he was one step late.

Bang Bang Bang!

The sound of the War Devil's stomping arose not far from them. After ten seconds, that noise stopped.

Shi Yan knew the other two beasts were killed.

Shortly, the War Devil came back. Its armor covered its steel body perfectly, without a bloodstain.

The War Devil stopped next to him. There was no light in its empty eyes as though it was a dead thing.

Shi Yan also stood stupefied, waiting in silence while his heart was chilled.

After one hour, Yi Mu had restored. He was the first one to wake up. He kneeled down in front of Shi Yan, choking with sobs.

"There are not more than one-third folks left in our clan. It's the same with the Winged Clan. Since we've come to the Divine Great Land, we have always been running. We hide everywhere! We just want to survive."

Shi Yan's face was furious. He gritted his teeth and nodded. "After all, what's happened? Where are Yi Tian Mo and the others?"

"Our General and the others are also in the Perpetual Night Forest. They are hiding. At this moment, they have cut the soul connection using a barrier to prevent stealth operation." Tears rolled down Yi Mu's face, his eyes bloodshot. "The number of our members who died in the hands of the seven ancient factions is more than the number that the beasts have killed! Young Master Yan, you have to take revenge for us!"

"Seven ancient factions!" A drop of dark red blood trickled from the corner of Shi Yan's mouth as if it was the tear of the Devil in hell. He thundered, "What's happened after all?"

"When we had just arrived in the Divine Great Land, the Radiant God Cult treated us not too badly. The Cult Master had come to the Northern Gem Mountain to feast with the Yang family's head. However, not long after that, the alien tribes started their invasion. They massacred in every corner of the Divine Great Land."

Yi Mu was on his knees as he explained with a resentful tone. "The seven ancient factions couldn't resist the savage attack. They joined hands and moved to the general direction of the Martial Spirit Palace. We heard that the Martial Spirit Palace had a secret domain that they could get in and hide away from the pagan slaughter. At that time, we went with the disciples of the Radiant God Cult. But when we arrived in the Martial Spirit Palace's territory, meeting up with the other factions of the seven ancient factions, everything changed. Except for the Radiant God Cult, the other six factions wanted to kill us all when they saw the Winged



Clan and our clan."

"Master Yun Hao of the Radiant God Cult couldn't stop that. He couldn't help but let us detach from their formation. We had no choice but to come to the Perpetual Night Forest to hide. Not long afterward, the other factions started to ambush and kill us. There are level 9 demonic beasts here. The other beasts also have intellect. They know how to besiege and kill us. In this place, both the beasts and humanity want to kill us. It's just been half a year, and we have already borne a significant loss."

"Where is the Yang family? Did they go with you guys?" Shi Yan's countenance changed, asking coldly.

"They're here too." Tears filled Yi Mo's face. "The Yang family's head is a good man. Right at the beginning, he had tried to protect us. Unfortunately, the Yang Head isn't so strong in the Divine Great Land. Currently, the Yang family stays with us in this Perpetual Night Forest. But the Three Gods Sect and the Xia family, who had come to the Divine Great Land with us, have officially become the members of the seven ancient factions. When the secret domain opened, the Head of the Yangs refused to go there. He brought a part of the Yang family and the Shi family to go with our Clan and the Winged Clan. Sigh. The Head of the Yang family seems unable to endure it anymore. Many human hotshots who used to listen to the Head of the Yangs wanted to kill us so that they could become an ally of the seven ancient factions. Begrudgingly, the Yang family and we had to separate. We stay in two different places in the Perpetual Night Forest to avoid unwanted events..."

Yi Mu was sorrowful, telling Shi Yan the events they had been through since they had arrived in the Divine Great Land. After he had finished narrating, Shi Yan's aura burst out. With a ruthless face, he said gloomily. "So that's how it is."

Shi Yan wasn't so surprised. Since he had found the dead bodies of the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan, he could guess the

situation. However, when he heard the stories from Yi Mu, he still got enraged.

"Now, are they alive? Are anyone of them, I mean the leaders, dead?" Trying to press down his anger, Shi Yan took several deep breaths to calm himself.

He was anxious that the result he was about to hear could make him crazy.

"Ya Meng. General Ye Meng is dead. One of the Shura Kings of the Yang family is dead too. His name was Li Mu. Besides them, some other strong experts were killed," sobbed Yi Mu.

Shi Yan's face became more ruthless and darker. "Who killed them?"

"The Heaven Temple's disciple had killed Ya Meng. Li Mu died in the hands of an Elder of the Pure Land. Among the seven ancient factions, besides Master Yun Hao of the Radiant God Cult, the other leaders don't ban their disciples from killing us. Oh yeah, there's a small force called the Ice Emperor City. During the battle, they always showed mercy. They helped many members of us survive," explained Yi Mu.

Shi Yan was surprised.

He had never expected that the four women of the Ice Emperor would help him at the most critical moment when humans hated the alien tribes a lot. It wasn't easy for them to do so.

His chilled heart got warmer a little bit when he heard this story.

# Chapter 614: Change

---

Shady Firmament Old Mound...

After one year, under the construction of the Ghost Mark Clan, the vast area of countless gloomy graveyards became more colorful.

A subterranean place should be dark and wet, but this area had many beautiful, exquisite buildings and palaces. These structures were covered with strange, evil symbols, which seemed like crawling worms. These arrays were mysterious and complicated.

Those buildings weren't exceptionally tall. The tallest one was around dozens of meters tall at the most. However, they were made of a strange material that looked like cold, black iron, giving people a cold and sinister feeling.

These buildings were arranged as if they followed some meaning in the world, which would give them some magical effects.

Far from the buildings and palaces, there laid ruins of tombs. It seemed the barriers in those tombs had been removed. There was no energy fluctuation anymore.

The two sages of the Ghost Mark Clan were standing on a sacrificial altar where thick Mysterious Qi hovered. They were performing an ancient ritual to offer sacrifice. Thousands of dead human bodies laid around the altar. Yin Qi was moving everywhere.

Flows of gray energy in air form exuded from the human corpses, pouring into the sacrificial altar.

There was a sharp snow-white thorny pole on the altar. The tip of the thorn radiated dazzlingly, releasing evil cold Qi as if it were connecting something.

Not far from there, Bao Ao and the group of the Demon Clan's experts were standing and watching the event. They were looking

attentively towards the sacrificial altar.

Among the great alien tribes, the Ghost Mark Clan had the most profound understanding of soul power. The altar they had built had the same function. It could cross space and collect the souls from the foreign lands, or make a connection with the outer areas.

The two sages of the Ghost Mark Clan had waited until the Mysterious Qi thickly gathering around the altar reached a certain degree to throw the Yin Written Charm Scripture out, using it as the fountain of power to activate the sacrificial altar.

A flow of gloomy gray mist exuded from the altar. Precious gems sparkled in the mist, reflecting strange and evil rays.

Clouds with the shape of souls gradually condensed in the mist. They couldn't see the real appearance, but the basic shapes. Anyway, it was enough to tell what creatures they were.

Soul-shaped clouds changed mysteriously. Shortly, they floated from the altar to hundreds of meters high in the sky, as feeble soul fluctuations flowed out.

The three experts of the Demon Clan, Bao Ao, Bo Ruo, and Gu Da Si watched those drifting clouds, their faces happy. They hurried to use their souls to capture them.

As they were all True God Realm warriors, and their God Soul had been created. When they flickered their souls, the fierce soul fluctuations were too much to bear. Most of the clansmen of the Ghost Mark Clan couldn't endure, so they had to back off.

Soul fluctuations expanding in the void became more powerful. Those drifting soul-shaped clouds were moving back and forth, gradually making a marvelous connection with the God Souls of Bao Ao's group of three.

Bao Ao and the other two sat down neatly, closing their eyes. They didn't say anything. It seemed they were using the God Soul to communicate.

The two sages of the Ghost Mark Clan, who were controlling the sacrificial altar, looked tense and anxious.

The ash-gray energy from the human corpses was drained quickly. Around one hour later, the gray energy had run out completely.

The two sages of the Ghost Mark Clan watched the situation. They didn't hesitate taking back the Yin Written Charm Scripture. The robust power pouring into the altar was retrieved.

Bao Ao's team was sensing with their eyes closed. Abruptly, they awakened, their countenance annoyed.

"Master Bao Ao, it isn't that we didn't want to help you. Honestly, we didn't have enough energy," Comoros, the sage of the Ghost Mark Clan, smiled begrudgingly as he was rubbing his hands continually. "If you can find the souls of Third Sky of Spirit Realm warriors to be the sacrifice, this altar can last longer. At this moment, we can't do more."

When Bao Ao faced Shi Yan, his temperament like warm weather. But at this moment, when he was talking to Comoros, a Second Sky of True God Realm, he was sinister and brutal. His eyes seemed to contain endless wicked intents. "Comoros, the price we've paid isn't small. That's how you get things done?"

Comoros beamed a forced smile, continually begging. "Master Bao Ao, please give us more time. In three months max, we will satisfy you. Three months later, our sacrificial altar could help you guys and the Antiquity Demogorgon form a soul connection."

Bao Ao's pupils shrank, and he kept silent for a while.

Comoros smiled miserably, continually ensuring him.

"One month. We'll give you only one month." Bao Ao's brutal aura ceased. He became as calm as a tranquil stream. "One month later, if you can't satisfy us, the agreement we have will be null and void. At that time, you should spit out what we've given you."

Understand?"

Comoros nodded continuously, not daring to explain more as he agreed immediately. "Alright alright. One month. One month later, I'm sure you can form the soul connection with the Antiquity Demogorgon."

"Good," Bao Ao laughed contentedly. He stood up and said faintly, "I've wasted a lot of time. So, don't test my limit. Remember, you have only one month."

"Don't worry, don't worry. Right after you leave, I'm going to the Martial Spirit Palace's area," Comoros patted his chest affirmatively.

Bao Ao nodded approvingly. "Oh yeah, the kid named Shi Yan you've met, I want to keep him for a reason. If you meet him, don't touch him. Or else, don't blame me for being impolite."

"A human?" frowned Comoros.

"Yeah."

"Although I don't know what Master Bao Ao keeps him for, as you've advised, I will follow you."

"I'm waiting for your good news."

Bao Ao took Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si, then left. After they had got out of the Shady Firmament Old Mound to the bleak plain, Bao Ao knitted his brows and talked to Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si. "You guys go to the Endless Sea, the Third Demon Area and the Fourth Demon Area, I think our fellows there have gotten out too. You guys get there and gather them. As our Second Demon Area has opened, the gates over there should have broken too. Remember to find the materials I want. We need to unlock the gate of the First Demon Area, not only to contact the Antiquity Demogorgon in there, but also to prepare sufficient materials to break the seal."

"Don't worry, we will gather them," laughed Gu Da Si. "There aren't many strong experts in the Third and the Fourth Demon

Areas. So, it's impossible to have an ancient family there. Our Ancient Bao family can unite the fellows there this time for sure."

"You should hurry. The Ancient Jie family is about to come. If we let them open the First Demon Area first, all of our efforts will be wasted." Bao Ao snorted. When he mentioned the Ancient Jie family, he seemed annoyed.

"Got it."

...

Ancient Corpse Tomb.

There were many gravestones scattering on a moor, each having a dark entrance leading to the palace underground.

According to the legends, the Ancient Corpse Tomb was a strange land that existed from the Antiquity Time. To have a slot in the Ancient Corpse Tomb, the owner of the tomb should be formidable. Under the headstone, it was another world. People said that the biggest tomb even had a hidden space as big as an entire city.

At a gravestone that had many strange drawings of the Corpse Clan, Corpse Mount, Corpse Sea, and their people had arrived from the Endless Sea. Travelling through dozens thousand miles, they had finally made it.

Corpse Mount, Corpse Sea, and their fellows stopped in front of that grand headstone, using their special etiquette to bow and their distinct language to call.

After a while, marvelous soul waves spread out from the entrance of the gravestone.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea shivered in thrill. They were both surprised and happy, jolting up from their slots as they took their people to enter that grave.

...

The Northern Gem Mountain.

Cao Qiu Dao, Fan Xiang Yun, and their men still stayed in this place. They hid inside the mountain, not daring to walk out.

Ear-splitting screams and screech often echoed from the nearby mountains. Sometimes, they heard the demonic beasts howling. All of them were more than enough to scare them out of their wits.

Man Gu wanted to get out there and hunt the beasts for food, but Cao Qiu Dao stopped him with only one sentence. "There are two level 8 beasts among the herd."

Man Gu quit his idea instantly, staying still inside the mountain.

"Would that kid Shi Yan dump us here? If so, staying dully here isn't different from finding a way to death, right?" Fan Xiang Yun looked at the Teleportation Formation in front of her, eating some fruits with her distressed mood.

"Do you have any better ideas?" Cao Qiu Dao said dispiritedly, throwing her a glare. "If you have a better idea, I'll follow you. As long as you can save everybody, whatever it is, we'll follow you. Just tell us what to do."

Fan Xiang Yun was bewildered. Later on, she said feebly. "I know nothing about the Divine Great Land."

"Then, it won't work," Cao Qiu Dao harrumphed. "I hear Shi Yan said that the Radiant God Cult has True God Realm warriors, but now they are also in peril. What should we do?"

Fan Xiang Yun didn't talk more.

"Just wait then. At this moment, it's the most precise solution. If you don't have any business to do, don't go out. If our location is disclosed, calamity will fall on us." Cao Qiu Dao sighed, not knowing what to do.

All of them felt dispirited as they smiled miserably. Staying in this situation without a single hope, they didn't know when it



would end.

...

"It's over there. That's all that the two clans have now. Master Yan, I hope you can help us survive." Yi Mu led the way to an extremely luxuriant foliage area. He talked to Shi Yan and pointed to a forest that had no leaks at all.

Shi Yan nodded quietly. "Don't worry. As long as I'm alive, I will arrange things properly."

"Young Master Yan, please get in." Yi Mu smiled begrudgingly. "The Grand General should know of your arrival by now. They have opened the gate of the barrier. We can get it now."

"Yeah," Shi Yan was emotional. Somehow, he didn't dare to step in as he didn't know how sorrowful the situation would be behind this barrier.

"Master..."

Even when he hadn't got in, the sad voices of Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba greeted him.

# Chapter 615: I have something to say!

---

It was a clear flat land with hundreds of plain rooms, surrounded by luxuriant ancient trees.

Yi Tian Mo, Ka Ba, and many clansmen of the Dark Devil Clan were as pale as wax. Obviously, they had suffered from malnutrition. Their aura were also feeble.

Di Shan and Yu Ruo stayed with the Winged Clan's members in another side. They had built some small treehouses. All of them looked exhausted.

After Shi Yan arrived, scanning through this area, he couldn't help but sigh, shaking his head begrudgingly. He knew their lives were filled with struggles.

Alien tribes deemed them as betrayers while the Human Clan considered them as aliens. The Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan had fallen into a perilous situation like they had never before. They could see neither hopes nor future as they were counting every day of their survival.

Both the Monster Clan in the Perpetual Night Forest and the hotshots of the Human Clan sneaking out from the Secret Domain made them their targets. They often swept the clansmen nearby.

Begrudgingly, Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba had to use the soul class barrier to barricade this area to prevent the warriors from using the Soul Consciousness to detect them.

However, the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan had never been rich. They didn't have enough energy to maintain this soul barrier for a long time.

Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba had to pay a big price, which was to consume their Soul Consciousness to maintain the soul barrier.

That's why they looked so exhausted.

Di Shan and Yu Ruo came when they heard of Shi Yan's arrival. They also looked distressed. Yu Ruo was pallid, as if she had some wounds.

The four leaders of the two clans kept silent. They kneeled down in front of him, looking at him with great expectation.

"How are you?" Shi Yan kept quiet for a while. His face was calm like water.

"Nothing much. I got a minor wound. I will be alright after a while of recovering. Master, don't worry about me." Yu Ruo smiled gingerly as her beautiful face didn't have her usual elegant demeanor.

"Some Elders of the Martial Spirit Palace hurt her. If we hadn't run on time... Perhaps, we couldn't have saved her life," Wicked resentment sparked deep in Di Shan's eyes. "The warriors of the seven ancient factions sometimes come out of the Secret Domain to chase and kill us. Without the soul barrier Yi-ge and Ba-ge arranged, we wouldn't have made it until now."

Yi Mu had told Shi Yan about the Secret Domain of the Martial Spirit Palace, which also situated in the Perpetual Night Forest. The hotshots of the seven ancient factions had brought many elite members and hid inside the Secret Domain. Usually, they wouldn't disclose themselves.

However, the seven ancient factions had many people, and had a high demand for food and cultivating materials. Thus, they had to sneak out sometimes to hunt the beasts in the forest. Consequently, the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan often encountered dangers.

"I'll get justice for you guys," Shi Yan stayed quiet for a while and then spoke up all of a sudden. "How many fellows do you have here?"

"My clan has around two thousand. But the Winged Clan is more

pathetic. They have merely one thousand. If it continues this way, after half a year, our two clans will be over," said Yi Tian Mo as he was scooping.

"Master, should we leave the Perpetual Night Forest?" Yu Ruo thinned her lips. "The Perpetual Night Forest has become a perilous place to live. Soon, it will become a great battlefield. We've been prepared to find a new place to stay."

Shi Yan kept silent.

Although the Divine Great Land was vast, experts of the alien tribes were everywhere. It was hard to find a peaceful place.

Although the Perpetual Night Forest had dangerous factors, it was relatively safe. If he took the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan out of here, if they met any pagans along the way, Shi Yan had no way to protect them.

Suddenly, he felt his realm and his power were really crappy at this moment. He wanted to protect them, but he didn't have the power to do so.

"At this moment, we should stay here. It's not safe out there," Shi Yan pondered and then said, "I'll try my best. Yeah, I'm going to see the Yang family on the other side to discuss with them and see what we can do."

"Do we need to go with you, Sir?" Di Shan was upright, as sharp and cold as a sword taken out of its scabbard.

He had reached the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. After the change of heaven and earth, his cultivation base had been increasing rapidly. If nothing unexpected happened, he could break through the True God Realm shortly. At that time, his power would be more tremendous.

Life of the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan was strenuous. Perhaps because of this, their potential was more intimidating.

Not only Di Shan, Yu Ruo, Di Tian Mo, and Ka Ba had also

reached the Second Sky of Spirit Realm. And, it was their sole effort, without many supporting resources.

If they had more cultivating materials, perhaps they would inherit the ancient Upanishad, which would boost their breakthrough speed faster.

Compared to them, members of Human Clan couldn't have such support. The changed energy of heaven and earth in this continent didn't bring them many benefits.

"No need," Shi Yan shook his head. "You guys just stay here. I'll be back shortly. Then, I will give you new directions. Staying here or leaving, we will discuss later."

"Alright," the four nodded.

Shi Yan knew the general direction of the Yang family. Leaving Yi Tian Mo's place, he flew fast. After one day, he arrived at the destination.

Members of the Yang family stayed in a vast forest with some small mountains and lakes. They didn't need to worry about water supply. Also, there were some lush spiritual herbs in the lake.

Yang Tian Emperor had refused to take shelter in the Secret Domain. He had taken his family and the Shi family to stay here safely.

Tang Yuan Nan of the Three Gods Sect was accepted by Cult Master Yun Hao of the Radiant God Cult right when they arrived in the Divine Great Land. Currently, he was one of the new Elders of the Radiant God Cult. Yun Hao trusted him greatly.

Xia Qing Hou and his Xia family's warriors had met the hotshots of the Pure Land in the Perpetual Night Forest. After they knew Xia Xin Yan had joined the Pure Land force, the Pure Land also received them.

Lin Meng, the Master of the Pure Land, gave Xia Xin Yan face as she was taking care of the Xia family pretty well. After Xia Qing

Hou had met Xia Xin Yan, he was joyful. Soon, they had joined the Pure Land and became a relatively strong force of the Pure Land.

As Tang Yuan Nan and Xia Qing Hou from the Endless Sea had a new shelter, they were satisfied with their current situation. When Yang Tian Emperor told Yun Hao that they wouldn't go to the Secret Domain, in fact, Tang Yuan Nan and Xia Qing Hou had advised him. However, Yang Tian Emperor was stubborn, and the other two had to leave him alone begrudgingly.

The reasons why Yang Tian Emperor didn't want to go to the Secret Domain were because he didn't like the behavior of the seven ancient factions, and he thought that the Secret Domain wasn't a safe place either.

Anyway, not all the members of the Yang family agreed with him. The other warriors, who had followed the Yang family and addressed Yang Tian Emperor as their Master, got to know the True God Realm warriors like Yun Hao, Lin Meng, and Nie Ruo after they arrived in the Divine Great Land. Since then, they thought their vision was widened.

Under the alien's invasion, their hearts cracked. They didn't consider Yang Tian Emperor their master anymore. When Yang Tian Emperor declared that he wanted to stay in the Perpetual Night Forest, the seven ancient factions had recruited the warriors who wanted to detach from the Yang family.

At this moment, Yang Tian Emperor's side had around two thousand people, including the Shi family.

However, there were many people among these two thousand people who were discontented with Yang Tian Emperor's decision. They had asked him to not care about the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan anymore, and that he should kill them all.

Those people were filled with hatred. Although the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan didn't do anything to them, because they were racist, they still hated them.

Yang Tian Emperor tried his best to comfort them. He discreetly shared a part of the hundreds of year's accumulation, including Essence Qi crystals and food, with Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan.

His action made more people discontented. However, it could help the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan get over this struggling time and survive in the Perpetual Night Forest.

Shi Yan reached the place where the Yang family sheltered. Looking at the ordinary formation outside, his heart sighed as he somehow felt sorrowful.

The Yang family was a superior force in the Endless Sea. Experts of other forces had to bow to them. At the same time, the barriers and formations in the Immortal Island were also powerful, which had been made little by little over hundreds of years. Their defending power shouldn't be bad.

However, after they arrived in the Divine Great Land, compared to the other ancient factions, the Yang family wasn't worth mentioning.

This defensive formation was made reluctantly due to the time limit and lack of cultivating materials. From his observation, he could see it was just a shell. Perhaps, it couldn't resist even a single strike of a True God Realm warrior.

Walking to the lake, Shi Yan saw the first person he knew, Li Feng Er.

She sat by the lake indifferently, her face dispirited. Sorrow stayed in her bright eyes. She was toying some small tree branches, throwing them into the lake. She didn't notice his arrival.

From a distance, Shi Yan knew why she was sad. Shura King Li Mu was her only relative, and he was dead...

Squeak!

A window squeaked from the green stone house opposite to Li Feng Er. A man appeared behind the window, his face cold and

grim.

His eyes suddenly brightened as he was cheered up. He shouted, "Little Yan is back!"

Just like the spring thunder, people of the Yang family and the Shi family were cheerful as if they were celebrating the New Year. They came from every corner, gathering at the lake. Each of them greeted Shi Yan.

From a further distance, some warriors who depended on the Yang family and the Shi Family were watching. Some of them felt happy, but the others had their faces darkened. Apparently, they weren't happy at all.

The Yang family had protected the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan because of Shi Yan. In the eyes of those who got fed up, Shi Yan was the reason they were kept away from the Secret Domain. They thought that without Shi Yan, perhaps they would have been in the Secret Domain deep inside this Perpetual Night Forest, and befriended the seven ancient factions, which would ensure their safety and their future.

Shi Yan smiled brightly. He squinted as he was sensitive enough to see the part that was disgruntled. "I have something to say."

His voice wasn't high, but it reverberated in every corner of the place. Not only the Yang family standing near the lake, but also the dark-faced warriors hiding afar were startled.

Yang Tian Emperor frowned, but he didn't intervene Shi Yan. He listened attentively while raising his arm to get his people's attention.



# Chapter 616: Run counter

---

Hundreds of members of the Yang family and the Shi family were listening to Shi Yan by the lake.

The Yangs and the Shis had accepted Shi Yan from the bottom of their hearts; especially the Shis from the Quiet Cloud Land, they always supported him unconditionally. They deemed Shi Yan's words the truth to be followed.

They all knew that without Shi Yan, they would have never come to the Endless Sea. They understood well that if they were still in the Quiet Cloud Land, they would have died already.

Those people had watched Shi Yan's growth from a little boy without Essence Qi. After ten years, he now had a new height each time they next saw him. All the members of the Shi family admired Shi Yan.

In their eyes, Shi Yan was no doubt a wise God with unmeasured potential. His future would surely be brighter.

Instinctively, they thought that they had to go with Shi Yan to have a better life.

However, many warriors who had submitted to the Yang family didn't look at him with such admiration, especially the group of hotshots who had usually battled in the Fourth Demon Area. In their eyes, Yang Tian Emperor was their sole leader.

After they arrived in the Divine Great Land, the warriors who always submitted to the stronger started to look down on Yang Tian Emperor.

If the Yang family hadn't given them favors, perhaps they would have left already. However, it was enough to keep them stay until now.

"Great Grandpa, I think many people here want to take shelter in the Secret Domain together with the seven ancient factions. That

place's relatively safer, anyway. And, the seven ancient factions will be glad to accept them."

Shi Yan wore an indifferent countenance. His eyes raked around the further area. He continued neither slow nor fast. "Many of them have received the favors of the Yangs and the Shis. That's why they stay. However, their hearts aren't with us. Well, I think it's too bad to stay here, right? You guys should be like the other people who left to the Secret Domain to save their lives. You shouldn't stay here awaiting danger with us."

"Kid, what do you mean?" A consecrator of the Yang at the Second Sky of Sky Realm with a gray beard and a green robe asked coldly. "Where we should stay, do we need you to provoke or mock us?"

"Who are you?" Shi Yan frowned.

"Leader of the Five Yakshas of the Yang family, Shen Lin." That old man snorted. He slightly rose his head, depending on his seniority to speak up again. "Our Five Yakshas have been fighting in the Fourth Demon Area. Before you arrived the Endless Sea, we had already been in the Fourth Demon Area. Although we aren't the most entitled elders of the Yang family, what we have contributed to the Yang family isn't something you can ignore to scold us like that."

Shi Yan didn't change his complexion. He was still nonchalant like water in the lake as he nodded, "I've admired you guys for too long. The name of the Five Yakshas is like thunder in my ears."

Besides the Three Great Shura Kings, the Five Yakshas were part of the strong warriors of the Yang family.

The Five Yakshas didn't work in the Endless Sea. However, they had an outstanding reputation in the Fourth Demon Area. Many members of the Demon Clan in the Fourth Demon Area were scared the sh\*t out of them when they heard the name of the Five Yakshas. They addressed them as the Human Butchers.

Shen Lin was the leader of the Five Yakshas, with the Second Sky of Sky Realm cultivation base. In the Yang family, he had a reputation and an important position. Even Yang Tian Emperor had to respect him.

"What are you yelling? No matter what the Master says, we will follow him. But you, a kid who still needs his titties, do you think you are qualified to strut your stuff here?"

Shen Lin harrumphed, ignoring Shi Yan's compliment. "What decision we make, it has nothing to do with you! Kid, don't think that with your relationship with that two alien tribes, you can swing your arms in front of us. Harrumph, if it's not because of the Master, I'm not afraid to give you a lesson."

As Shen Lin had spent his recent years in the Fourth Demon Area, he didn't understand Shi Yan much. Although he had heard about the young man's operation in the Endless Sea, Shen Lin still thought that Shi Yan had faked his attainment of cultivation base and realm. He believed that all were just rumors.

At this moment, in Shi Yan's eyes, he just needed to swing his arm to kill a Second Sky of Sky Realm warrior. He didn't put that old man in his mind. However, he wouldn't do that. He knew, if he took action, it would chill many people, which would have no benefit for their issues now.

What Shen Lin said didn't please people's ears, but it was truly what many experts of the Yang family had in their heads. If he killed Shen Lin, warriors who had submitted to the Yangs family would feel dejected.

People who always thought of the Yang family would also have a different thought, and even Yang Tian Emperor couldn't calm down the situation then.

"Well, I'm not qualified to talk more. I just want to say that no one can predict the Divine Great Land's situation now. And, it's not sure that the seven ancient factions could preserve the

inheritance flame of Human Clan." Shi Yan smiled with a calm look.

"Of course, if someone thinks that the Yangs can't protect him, and the Yangs aren't as strong as the seven ancient factions, it's better to leave earlier. One day you stay, that's one more day you have to worry about. This won't be helpful to your cultivating path. Great Grandpa, I think you won't stop people from finding a better way for them, right?" Shi Yan looked up to see Yang Tian Emperor across the lake.

Yang Tian Emperor cracked a smile and then spoke slowly. "I've told you guys, I will never hinder your career. If you think Yang Tian Emperor isn't qualified, you can leave at any minute."

"Master, the Yang family has given us favors. At the critical time of the family, we will never leave!" Shen Lin slightly bent his body, his face honest.

"The Yang family had taken care of us in the Endless Sea for a long time. We are the members of the Yang family. It's the same when we are in the Divine Great Land."

"We swear on our death that we will follow the Master!"

"As long as the Yang family does not expel us, we will not leave!"

Many warriors who had submitted to the Yangs yelled and shouted. However, no one knew how honest they were!

Yang Tian Emperor beamed a faint smile. He waved his hands to calm people down, then looked at Shi Yan with some deep ideas in his eyes. "Little Yan, don't talk much. You've just arrived, and there're many things you don't know yet. Come, we need to talk."

"Harrumph. Such a brat who doesn't know his lot but dares to babble here." Shen Lin's face was dark and cold as he glared at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan frowned. His mouth was stiff and solemn like a cold saber. He just nodded without saying anything else.

He had received the soul thought from Yang Tian Emperor. Now, he knew that the situation here wasn't really similar to his assumptions.

What he'd planned was now postponed. Gliding by the lake, Shi Yan walked to the stone pavilion of Yang Tian Emperor. Shi Jian, Shi Tie, and Yang Hai were with him; they all looked happy. Official experts of the Yang family like Yang Zhuo also stepped forward.

Shen Lin watched them quietly, his eyes dark and calm. He exchanged looks with the other Sky Realm warriors out there. They seemed to have another plan.

"It's not like what you've thought." After they had seated in the stone building, Yang Tian Emperor said after he let Shi Yan, Shi Jian, Shi Tie, Yang Hai, Yang Zhuo, and Yang Mu hug and greet each other. "At present, we have two thousand people here. However, at least half of them want to leave. Among this group, some people who have received favors from the Yangs are hesitant. However, a big part of them doesn't think the same. It isn't that they don't want to leave, they have some other plans..."

"Ah?" Shi Yan's visage changed.

"Some want to join the seven ancient factions. But they know their starting point isn't strong enough. They want to make a better starting point. They want to take more people to join the seven ancient factions... Perhaps, many of them have agreed already. The reason why they haven't left yet is that they want to take more people with them. Or, they want to collect more intelligence from our side," Yang Tian Emperor wore a smile, but his eyes were as cold as the blades.

Shi Yan suddenly enlightened.

As the Divine Great Land had such a big calamity, the ancient factions had to bear a significant loss. So many Disaster, Nirvana, and Sky Realm warriors were killed. Their foundation was shaken,

and their force wasn't strong enough.

In the Divine Great Land, the cradle of martial techniques, a major number of human experts were unharmed, but the number of low-realm warriors was decreasing rapidly.

To the seven ancient factions, they all valued the future as they understood well that the low-realm warriors would become their strong pillars shortly.

Thus, the seven ancient factions were trying their best to unite those small forces. Using the Secret Domain to entice them, which would give their organizations the new blood.

Because of this reason, when Tang Yuan Nan and Xia Qing Hou brought the Three Gods Sect and the Xia family to join the Radiant God Cult and the Pure Land, they didn't meet any obstacles. Quite the contrary, they were well treated and greatly favored.

In this current situation, the one who could bring more low-realm warriors to join the seven ancient factions would always be welcomed.

If someone could take the elite force of the Yang family, he would definitely become someone important that the seven ancient factions had to favor. At that time, they could earn fame and a high position.

As his mind flickered, Shi Yan got the picture. Gradually, he found the mistakes in his assumption.

"Great Grandpa, what are you going to do?" Shi Yan pondered for a while and then said, "Keeping these cunning people here isn't useful at all. It could even shake the foundation of the Yang family. Many of them have brought victories to the Yang family. If we aim at them, we can accidentally chill the hearts of the ones who are loyal to us. It's really a tough matter."

"I have a plan that can make them leave on their own. Anyway, I think it's a bit risky, so I haven't carried out yet." Yang Tian

Emperor smiled coldly. "We can't kill them immediately. So, at first, we will push them then calculate the debts later. I was thinking about bringing the tremendous demonic beasts here to give them a false image that the Yang family will cease soon, which would make them leave. Under this circumstance, they won't have the face to get back to us again. However, it's too dangerous. I'm still hesitant. Anyway, you're back now."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He cracked a smile. "Great Grandpa, you do have a good idea."

Those people soon had other thoughts. Perhaps, they were already the members of the seven ancient factions now. If they saw the Yang family's severe situation, they wouldn't risk their lives to stay. Naturally, they would choose to leave discreetly.

That way, they didn't need to cause a war or make the ones who had followed the Yangs wholeheartedly distressed. It was a good way to get rid of this malignant tumor.

However, the premise was that the Yangs should have absolute confidence. In the critical time where people had to sacrifice, they needed to have the ability to maintain the power of the family.

"I've planned properly. As long as you can help me deal with a level 8 beast, we can carry this plan," smiled Yang Tian Emperor.

"Don't worry. Even there are two beasts, I can make them leave," said Shi Yan.

"Then we're absolutely safe."

# Chapter 617: Rupture

---

Deep in the thick forest a hundred li away from the Yang family's shelter, Shen Lin and one of the Yakshas, Dong Jin, were sitting upright.

Almost one hundred Earth Realm and Nirvana Realm warriors were surrounding them. They were forming a round-shaped formation, as though they were waiting for something.

Stood between Shen Lin and Dong Jin was an adult-sized silver mirror. After receiving Essence Qi from the warriors, the blurry mirror became clearer, and a figure slowly appeared in the mirror.

Shen Lin and Dong Jin were tense. They jolted up from their seats and clasped their fists to greet that person. They looked even more respectful than when they were talking with Yang Tian Emperor.

The figure in the mirror got clearer. That was a bony old man wearing a gray robe and an ugly green mask. He then asked with a desolate tone. "How is it going?"

Shen Lin was solemn. He bent his body while hurrying to answer the old man. "Almost done. At least we can take half of them and leave. After a while, we can take more people. When the pressure gets higher, the number of people with different thoughts will increase too."

The old man in the mirror nodded, his tone cold and low. "So why did you need to contact me?"

"Shi Yan is back," Shen Lin scooped, muttering.

"Shi Yan..." The old man in the silver mirror suddenly got stirred up. He shouted, "Keep an eye on him. That kid is a troublemaker. Don't let him ruin our business. Pay attention to him, but don't provoke him. I will think of a plan to eliminate him."

Shen Lin and Dong Jin were stunned.



They all knew the identity and the cultivation base of the man in the mirror. A strong warrior like him valued Shi Yan that much, which frightened them.

At this moment, they vaguely recognized that the information they had about Shi Yan wasn't sufficient.

"Shi Yan's really cunning and wicked. You guys shouldn't contact me for the time being. Things I asked you to do, you can also slow down," the old man pondered. "Just wait. Don't leave. Keep an eye on them for me. I'll handle Shi Yan."

Shen Lin and Dong Jin agreed quickly.

All of a sudden, there came a beast howling from far away. A thick blood scent arose from a far distance. Shen Lin and Dong Jin were frightened. They excused themselves, retrieved the silver mirror, then scattered disorderly.

Grabbing a Nirvana Realm warrior, Dong Jin asked furiously. "What's going on?"

"Beasts!" The other wore a panic-stricken face. "At least ten beasts. Perhaps they have a level 8 beast, too. They are moving towards the Master of the family. So frightening!"

The young warrior said quickly. Abruptly, he talked again with fright. "Should we get back there? Or else, we can leave now. I don't feel good about it."

"Coward! If we leave in this little case, we are going to burn all our efforts!" Dong Jin slapped the man and then shouted, "All of you, follow me back!"

Shen Lin didn't say anything, as he was considering the situation in his heart. Then, he ran together with Dong Jin towards the Yang family's shelter.

Rooooaaarrrr!

Crazy roaring and howling reverberated from everywhere,

covering the Yang family's shelter.

Members of the Yang family shivered in fear on hearing the beast roaring and howling. They were pale, but they had gritted their teeth and prepared to counter the enemy.

"Master? Where's the Head Master?" Shen Lin and Dong Jin hurried to get back. There had not been any big damage. After they had confirmed the situation, they exhaled in relief. Then, they asked for Yang Tian Emperor's whereabouts.

"I don't know. The Head Master said that he was going out to hunt beasts. He hasn't come back yet," an official disciple of the Yang family answered him.

"The heck. Why does he need to hunt the beasts at this moment? We aren't in the Endless Sea now..." Dong Jin muttered, his face grimaced.

Many official disciples of the Yangs put on a furious countenance when they heard Dong Jin's utterance. Their eyes sparkled with anger.

"Dong Jin, you don't have the right to comment what the Head Master did!" Yang Zhuo walked over, glaring at him coldly. His face was wry as he didn't think that someone dared to doubt Yang Tian Emperor in the Yang family.

The corner of Dong Jin's mouth jerked up as he was about to mock more.

Right at this moment, Shi Yan appeared from nowhere. His eyes were as sharp and cold as a saber, gazing at Dong Jin. A murderous aura started to rise from his body.

Dong Jin changed his countenance. He remembered the old man's attitude towards Shi Yan. All of a sudden, he felt shivers running through his spine. He swallowed what he wanted to say.

Shi Yan curled his lips and beamed a silent smile, but he didn't launch a brutal strike.

"The Master is back! Head Master is back!" The outer guard suddenly shouted.

Shortly after his report, Yang Tian Emperor appeared with a bloody chest. He looked struggling and distressed.

By the lake, all the warriors, including the Yang family's disciples and the warriors who had submitted to the Yangs paled as they saw their Master's appearance.

In their hearts, Yang Tian Emperor was the peerless warrior at his Second Sky of Spirit Realm. He had the competence to counter even a higher realm expert. Even in this Divine Great Land, Yang Tian Emperor had a high position.

A true expert like him got hurt badly with that dispirited posture. What kind of danger he had encountered?"

People's hearts plunged down to the bottom of the valley.

"This situation is not good," Yang Tian Emperor was solemn like never before. "There're two level 8 beasts coming. I'm hurt severely. In the next hour, the beasts will come here."

When he finished, everybody else paled. A deep despair appeared on their faces.

"Besides the two level 8 beasts, there are some level 7, a couple hundred level 6 and 5 beasts. The two level 8 ones lead them." Yang Tian Emperor said without hesitating. "We shouldn't scatter. Otherwise, we will get hurt or even die. I'll stay here to see if I can stop this wave. This will help more people survive."

Yang Tian Emperor was begrudging, his eyes sorrowful. He rose his muscular arm and said, "Today could be the day the Yang family is over. I, Yang Tian Emperor, have no power to bring you a better future. I'm sorry, guys. At this moment, I can only put forth everything to keep more people alive. I'll stay, and all main branches of the Yang family will stay here to support too. I hope most of you will survive."

"Master, we are going with you!"

"Wherever you are, we will be with you! We will never leave you!"

"We will not let the Head Master bear all the things for us!"

A part of the warriors who had submitted to the Yang family shouted bravely as they heard Yang Tian Emperor's words. However, a bigger number stayed idle. Some of them paled. Their eyes sparkled while they were trying to make up their minds on a hard decision.

Shen Lin and Dong Jin were startled. They weren't sure if it was Yang Tian Emperor's plan. They just stood and frowned, waiting for the dangerous change to come.

Rooooaarr!

A terrifying roar stormed over like enraging sea clouds, bringing the bloody murderous aura while coming towards them from a far distance.

The rumbling sounds of trees breaking echoed continuously from a far place. A frightening aura quickly filled the place; something was moving closer to this area.

Many people revealed their despair. Some of them had made up their minds. Many were anxious, looking at Shen Lin and Dong Jin while urging them with their looks.

Shen Lin and Dong Jin exchanged looks. They all saw fear in the other's eyes. They hesitated, but didn't dare to give out a decision. Abruptly, they made up their minds.

"Master, we'll take a part of us to leave here first. After we bring the low-realm warriors to a safe place, we'll be back to help you!"

Shen Lin stepped forward. He even forgot the etiquette, trying to be more honest. "Please take care, Master. We will not let you down. We will protect our elite force!"

No matter what way he chose to conceal this, leaving at this critical time was a sign of betrayal. Everybody here had a bright vision. They all knew he was just saying the f\*cking excuse to protect his cowardice.

"Shen Lin, you big old dog!" Ling Ming, one of the Five Yakshas, thundered indignantly. "When your family left you wounded in the middle of a herd of beasts, who saved you? Who had risked his life to save you from the mouth of the beasts? I didn't think that you could be such coward! You are a shameless, ungrateful bastard!"

"I'm thinking for the Yang family! I want to fulfill the Head Master's wish!" Shen Lin changed his face, shouting with a vicious complexion.

"Haha!" Ling Ming laughed out loud, shook his head and sneered. "Everybody knows your heart, old friend."

Shen Mu was so embarrassed that he got enraged. However, at this moment, they all heard the beast roaring again. His pupils shrank. He didn't bother with Ling Ming's reaction, just clasped his fist and greeted Yang Tian Emperor, then shouted, "Come with me. We should survive for our Master."

After that, he and Dong Jin flew up first, heading to the area of the seven ancient factions in the Perpetual Night Forest.

The crowd of the warriors who had submitted to the Yang family scooped, not daring to look at the members of the Yangs. They gingerly walked for a while, then soared up to the sky to get away from the place.

Ling Ming and the other members of the Yang family looked at the leaving people with a grimaced countenance. It was beyond their expectations that the number of warriors who decided to leave with Shen Lin was not just half of them; it was more than two-thirds!

Around one thousand and five hundred warriors had submitted to the Yang family. At this moment, more than one thousand decided to leave. The brave ones who stayed weren't more than five hundred.

Although he had prepared himself well, seeing this big contradiction, Yang Tian Emperor didn't feel good. His face was bitter as he shook his head with an intense pain in his heart.

He had thought that at least half of them would decide the stay. No one had expected this level of a pathetic situation.

"We should eradicate the malignant tumor. Great Grandpa, don't be upset. I think one day, they will know how big the mistake they made today is." Shi Yan's face was also grimaced. He clenched his jaw, talking mercilessly.

## Chapter 618: Later happiness?

---

After Shen Lin and Dong Jin took their men and left, there were no more than one thousand people, including the Yangs and the Shis.

Not more than five hundred warriors who to stay with the Yang family. Old people took a big part of this group. However, they didn't have a profound realm or an excellent competence.

Yang Tian Emperor stood idle. He exhaled, then his lips convulsed. Later on, he said indifferently, "Good then. It's good anyway." Apparently, he seemed distressed. The sadness of Shen Lin and Dong Jin's departure couldn't be dispersed just yet.

Those people had vowed to devote their lives to the Yang family the year they had joined this force. However, when they left, they were so determined. They didn't hesitate at all.

Their situation was similar to Shen Lin's. They used to have no place to return to in the entire Endless Sea. Some were expelled by their own families, while the others had a strong enemy they couldn't counter. To avoid death, they had joined the Yang family.

That year, Yang Tian Emperor had been frank and generous enough to bear their debts. He had helped them solve their problems. He even took revenge for them, which gave them face.

Their departure made Yang Tian Emperor recognize people's hearts. Now he knew that even if he could provide them more, it would never be a sufficient weight to hold them.

Rooooaarr!

The demonic beast roaring reverberated like a beating drum hitting people's hearts. They all felt tenser.

"Anybody else wants to leave?" Shi Yan got up as if he didn't see the beasts coming closer. He said faintly, "If you leave now, you still have a chance to live. If you linger, perhaps you have to stay

here forever."

"Kid, don't be wordy!" Ling Ming bit his lips. His aura was fierce like a beast escaping its cage. "If we decide to stay, we don't hold on the thought of being lucky again. Stop talking nonsense!"

One-third of the crowd surrounding the lake had their eyes bloodshot. They were ready to have a bloody battle with the beasts.

Shi Yan cracked a smile as he nodded in his heart.

It wasn't that they didn't have a consciousness and didn't know how to repay favors. Ling Ming and the five hundred who stayed had decided to be with them at the deadliest time, the time they knew they would die, but they didn't hesitate to come forward.

Shi Yan was touched. His attitude towards them became tender, much better than when he talked to Shen Lin and Dong Jin. "Don't worry, uncle Ling. Everybody's going to be safe. If we survive the great catastrophe, we will have happiness later. Wait until we defeat the demonic beasts, I think we all harvest something."

Ling Ming was surprised. He looked at the young man suspiciously, his face odd. "Do you think we will survive?"

"Of course, we will."

"Perhaps one-fourth of our one thousand people here can survive. It's good enough." Ling Ming was solemn and stirring, smiling quietly. "Anyway, I'm sure I will not be one of them. I'm old, and my realm can't be developed further. I have no bright future even if I continue to live. I should save the chance to survive for the young generation."

"Master Ling!"

"Uncle Ling!"

Many young warriors couldn't help but have tears linger in their eyes. They were stirred up, shouting and thundering. They crossed



their hearts to stay and collaborate toward the common goal.

"No no no no," Shi Yan shook his head continually, talking more seriously to the others. "Not one-fourth. Believe me, everybody will survive. Moreover, you will have a better life."

Everybody was bewildered, looking at him disbelievingly, as they thought that he was so scared of the beasts that he had gone crazy. Even Yang Tian Emperor couldn't resist the beasts and got hurt. The level 8 beasts would absolutely be the formidable ones!

Spirit Realm warriors couldn't deal with beasts at this level. Moreover, the coming herd didn't have only two beasts, but almost a hundred of them!

"Young Master Yan, you shouldn't stay here. Your future would be much brighter, you know," said a Shura King, Mo Dun Huan emotionlessly. "You should live and clean all the ones who have betrayed us today. In the future, just worship us with their heads."

Ling Ming nodded continually. Obviously, he agreed with Mo Dun Huan.

Shi Yan was stunned for a while, then he laughed. "Don't worry, Uncle Mo. I won't shoot the arrows aimlessly. Level 8 demonic beasts aren't that dangerous."

"Alright, let's scatter. You guys go there and wait." Finally, Yang Tian Emperor spoke up. He pointed at the stone buildings behind the lake and assigned the other low-realm warriors. "Old Mo, Little Ling, you guys follow me," he nodded to Mo Dun Huan and Ling Ming.

Mo Dun Huan and Ling Ming were suspicious. They exchanged looks, then followed Yang Tian Emperor in silence.

Yang Zhuo, Shi Jian, and Shi Tie were ready. When they wanted to step forward and support Shi Yan, he stopped them and smiled. "Grandpa, don't go there. You guys stay here and protect them. It's not as serious as you thought."

Shi Jian's face was gloomy as he advised Shi Tie, "You guys go back." He rolled his eyes at Shi Yan persistently and grunted, "Do you think your grandpa is an obstacle now? Do you think my cultivation base is too low and that I can't help you with anything?"

Shi Yan had a headache. He shook his head immediately. "No, no, grandpa. If you want, just come here."

Yang Tian Emperor, Mo Dun Huan, Ling Ming, Shi Yan, Shi Jian took a hundred Nirvana Realm warriors, lining in front of the forest.

Shi Yan squinted, releasing the War Devil and taking out his Sky Destroyer divine sword. He started to urge and accumulate the power in his body.

Rumble Rumble Rumble!

Amidst the noisy, annoying sounds of the beasts moving through the forest, ancient trees were broken easily as breaking a dried branch. Dust rose everywhere, and smoke shot aloft. The unique, bloodthirsty and brutal aura of the demonic beasts permeated the place from the thick smoke.

Mo Dun Huan, Ling Ming, and Shi Jian became tense. They immediately took out the secret treasures to join this bloody battle.

Their weapons were a hook, a spear, and a broadsword. At first glance, Shi Yan knew they were just Rank 3 Spirit Grade treasures. They didn't have a formation or a strange rippling energy.

"Uncle Mo, Uncle Ling, grandpa, later on, you guys should give me your secret treasures that you are using. I'm going to help you refine them."

Before the beasts arrived, he still had the mood to laugh with them. This kid didn't care about his life indeed!

Mo Dun Huan, Ling Ming, and Shi Jian were stupefied as they couldn't make head or tail.

Yang Tian Emperor was moved. His eyes brightened. He asked gingerly, "You know how to refine treasures?"

Shi Yan nodded.

Yang Tian Emperor smiled dazzlingly. He nodded to Shi Yan.

At this moment, roughly hundred demonic beasts at various levels appeared in their visions.

The leader of this group was a Fierce Flame Gold Lion, around one hundred meters tall. The red fur on its body was almost one meter long, which made it look like a bunch of flames. Gold rays of light radiated from the lion as it was releasing an intensive heat.

Standing next to the Fierce Flame Gold Lion was a python with four curled horns. Round black and white patterns appeared distinctively on its body, which was like a mountain of flesh. This was the level 8 beast called Silver-horned Great Python.

The Fierce Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Great Python were the level 8 beasts. They could transform. Although these two hadn't changed yet, the light of wisdom in their eyes was obvious.

Before the change of heaven and earth energy, level 8 beasts with intellect weren't ordinary. After the great change, their intelligence was no different from that of human beings. They had become high-grade creatures. Not only they could reason, they also knew how to use the powers in their bodies.

After the two level 8 beasts arrived, they stopped and observed the situation. They didn't hurry.

Shi Yan cracked a smile. He let the War Devil release the furious, murderous aura while he was accumulating his energy. Shi Yan secretly let the Death Domain expand. The quiet but desperate aura had scared all the beasts on the opposite side.

Yang Tian Emperor arched his brows. His blood and aura both were boiling up, giving people an extreme feeling of danger.

The two level 8 beasts didn't say anything. They sensed for a while, as if they were considering whether to have a bloody battle or not.

"My master said that this area is under his authority. You have one month to leave here. Otherwise, my master will kill you all."

The Fierce Flame Gold Lion contemplated for a while and then thundered. Its giant mouth, as big as a pond of blood, spitting out fiery flames. Heating waves shot out torrentially.

Level 8 beasts could understand human languages. They had enough faculty to communicate with high-grade beings.

Yang Tian Emperor had dragged the fierce Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Great Python here. They had thought that they could kill Yang Tian Emperor. However, now they had two unknown factors. Shi Yan and the War Devil.

The two members of the Monster Clan changed their minds, but they didn't want to lose their power and prestige, so they had to scare the others using words.

"Master?" Shi Yan smiled, "Who is your master?"

"Master Flame Dragon!" Fierce Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Great Python proudly answered in unison.

"A level 9 Flame Flood Dragon," Ling Ming reminded him.

Shi Yan was enlightened. He nodded and talked to the Fierce Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Great Python. "Alright, we got it. We will discuss a little bit. Perhaps we will visit your master and tell him something he'll be interested in."

"My master doesn't like humans. He won't meet you. You'd better leave early." Fierce Flame Gold Lion knew that they couldn't get what they wanted today, so it could only leave with the Silver-horned Great Python with rage.

A herd of hundred beasts at various levels followed those two and

left quickly.

"That Fiery Flame Flood Dragon has just reached level 9 recently. He's a dangerous factor in this Perpetual Night Forest." Ling Ming sighed, knitting his brows. "But the Fiery Flame Dragon isn't the most dangerous one. There are more tremendous beasts in the Perpetual Night Forest. Moreover, they have their own territories. Our shelter's in the territory of the Fiery Flame Dragon. I heard that there's a beast which is about to reach level 10 in the Secret Domain. Even the seven ancient factions couldn't do any harm to it."

Shi Yan slightly changed his countenance. "It seems the situation of this Perpetual Night Forest's really complicated."

"Of course, it is," Ling Ming beamed a forced smile. "Otherwise, we wouldn't see many heartless and cruel people."

Yang Tian Emperor nodded, swinging his hand. "No need to talk about it. Before we get the ability, it will only hurt us."

Ling Ming and Mo Dun Huan became stern, as they understood the situation well.

"Great Grandpa, please give me all the cultivating materials of the Yang family. I want to refine weapons on a massive scale. I want to improve everybody's competence. I want to enhance your secret treasures and weapons within half a month. I want to strengthen those who decided to stay with us!"

Shi Yan took a deep breath and then thundered.

# Chapter 619: Frantically great refining!

---

Flows of scarlet flames condensed into an exquisite arm, moving back and forth in a wide jade ditch. Scorching lava splashed, while sharp and distinctive Crystal Stones were moving as if they were living beings.

The wide ditch connected every direction, branching into hundreds of narrow canals. Visible energy waves rippled from those canals in a strange liquid form.

Relatively low-grade secret treasures were dragged into the wide ditch by an invisible force one by one. Next, the fiery flame in the blazing lava started to refine them. Many black contaminants were extracted, sinking to the bottom.

The wide ditch extended in every direction. From a bird's eye view, it was a mysterious, complicated ancient formation. It was around ten square li. Its branches looked like the fiery swimming snakes. Flames rose torrentially, scorching and brutal, as though they were alien flaming beasts that could swallow everything.

Secret treasures with different shapes were moving heavily in this strange but magical ancient formation. As they were heated up, a strange energy existing in this mysterious formation was absorbed into them.

A vivid red hued young man sat cross-legged in the void above the ditch. His eyes were slightly closed as his hands were making many moves of the secret techniques.

A symbol shot out from his palms. It exposed an ancient formation in the void, which was outlined by delicate rays of light. At first, the formation was tiny, just as big as a thumb. However, it was drawn with thousands of flimsy energy lines, which was extremely complicated.

Then, the formation slowly descended and enlarged to the size of

a palm, then a bowl, a door ...

The formation, which was drawn with several thousand energy fibers, became clearer with time. Its patterns looked like the patterns on someone's palm, naturally mysterious. In some aspects, it looked like the great Earth, solemn and respectful. In another aspect, it was like a little bird swiftly flying away, leaving no trace...

Different formations had unclear trajectories, but they all contained the mysterious truths of heaven and earth. They fluttered like light curtains as they descended from the sky into the wide ditch and imprinted on the purified treasures.

Receiving a formation each, those secret treasures started to change miraculously. Energy fluctuations rippled, while their mother material was changing its natural characteristics.

Some became smooth and beautifully jade-like. Some were so rigid that nothing could break it. But at the same time, these treasures could be as soft and flexible as cotton. Users could stretch them as much as they pleased. It seemed the treasures would never fracture.

Different treasures had different formations, which gave them different marvelous abilities.

After they were purified and carved with a magical formation, receiving new abilities, the treasures would fly up. Each treasure now had a beautiful halo. Energy waves rippled from them tremendously. They also had a new appearance, mysterious and beautiful, such that people couldn't shift their eyes from them.

Several hundred warriors stood around the wide ditch. Everyone balled their hands into fists. They didn't even dare to breathe loudly, as flames of desire burned in their eyes.

When a sword secret treasure made a beautiful curve in the air with a moonlight halo around before falling into a man's hand,

that man couldn't control his thrill. He was shaking while talking to Shi Yan. "Thank you! Thank you, Young Master Yan!"

The young man floating in the sky slightly opened his eyes and beamed a faint smile. "The material of your sword is not good enough. After I extracted the contaminants and inscribed the Burning Water Extinguishing Formation, it could only reach Rank 3 of Spirit Grade. Too bad."

"No, no, no, not bad at all!" The warrior got startled. He clutched his sword tightly as though he had just collected a precious treasure. Suddenly, he had a magical feeling of having a blood connection with his weapon.

The power hidden in his sword released a scorching flame, which could combine perfectly with the technique he was cultivating.

"Young Master Yan, this sword was just a Rank 1 Mysterious Grade sword. You, you have leveled it up by one more grade! Master Yan, I'm just at the Third Sky of Human Realm, but with this sword, I now dare deal with a Disaster Realm warrior!" That young man was so excited he started to babble. As he was trying to restrain himself, his body shook vehemently.

After the young warrior said that, many warriors around started to be jealous of him.

They were like bloodthirsty beasts gazing at the ditch. Their life treasures flew to the ditch like a cloud of grasshoppers, falling into the burning lava canals.

In the beginning, when Shi Yan was arranging this formidable formation, they thought that it couldn't work that much. It wasn't easy to upgrade a common treasure. Even if he were the great Blacksmith of the Divine Great Land, he had to prepare the required materials sufficiently.

He had spent ten days to carve a strange ditch formation, then poured several hundred kinds of materials in it. After he'd released



the heaven flame, he asked people to throw their treasures into the wide ditch.

Many people didn't believe him, as they were afraid that he would break their treasures. When Yang Tian Emperor couldn't help but give them order, some people started to gingerly throw their treasures into the ditch.

The warrior who had just caught the flying sword was the first one who received big benefits. A Rank 1 of Mysterious Grade treasure had upgraded to Rank 3 of Spirit Grade! One whole grade skipped up!

There was no doubt, no more questions. Those people now looked like a pack of hungry wolves, throwing their weapons and treasures into the wide ditch in front of them.

"Stop!" Shi Yan let out a light shout. He spoke to them seriously. "The stream of energy in this ancient formation has a limit. It can't refine too many things at the same time. Otherwise, I'm not sure it can eliminate the contaminants in your treasures. No need to rush. I'm going to help you refine your treasures, one by one."

"Young Master Yan, I, I haven't thrown mine yet," Ling Ming faced up with a red face, "Only one treasure! Only one treasure of mine, is it okay?"

"Uncle Ling, don't be like that! You shouldn't disturb!"

"Old Ling! I've thrown my treasure, you shouldn't mess things up!"

Mo Dun Huan and a young man saw Ling Ming was about to break the rule and became frightened, walking over to pull the old man back with an anxious complexion.

"Get off me! Mo-ge, get off me!" Ling Ming had his veins bulging on his neck. "F\*ck! Who knows if the materials there are enough for all! No, you have to accept my treasure. If you don't let me go, I'll hit you!"

Ling Ming knew the materials in the ditch were all precious, and he wasn't sure that Yang Tian Emperor could have more to supply. If not, his Spirit Grade treasure could only wait for the next chance.

But he didn't know when the next chance would be...

"If you put your treasures in, our grade can be dragged down. We will risk our lives with you!" Mu Dun Huan was always a calm person. But now, he was exposing his ugly face, shouting indignantly.

"I don't care! My treasure has to be refined!" Ling Ming rolled his sleeves, his face reddening as he was about to fight with the other.

"What do you think you're doing!" However, Yang Tian Emperor interrupted them at this moment. "Little Ling, you were scared and didn't want to put your treasure in there. Now, you shouldn't blame the others. Yeah, you have to wait for the next round."

Yang Tian Emperor made Ling Ming goggle, his face grief-stricken. Ling Ming sighed continually. He was blaming himself for not having sharp eyes, that he couldn't see Shi Yan's earth-shaking ability.

Shi Yan didn't talk. Hearing Yang Tian Emperor intervening, Shi Yan continued to close his eyes and perform more refining techniques.

His Soul Consciousness and the pure energy in his body were condensed and constantly changing according to his thought. They formed the ancient formation to refine treasures or the exquisite, magical seals imprinting on the treasures in the ditch.

During the whole process, his mind and spirit were crystal clear. He had no negative feelings, and his soul seemed to sublimate.

He suddenly understood that when his acupuncture points converted the negative energy, even though this process was marvelous, his soul couldn't control it. Every time he used

Rampage, he would fall into the old trace of getting bedevilment, which would leave some bad repercussions.

During this refining process, his mind and spirit were translucent, as though his soul was washed with an invisible holy water. The mist curtains that hindered his mind were gradually cleaned, leaving his soul calm and steady.

While he was concentrating on refining, he was also purifying his soul. This could prevent him from getting lost. His soul could gain benefits from this too.

Refining techniques and carving formations contained some true meanings of heaven and earth. His understanding of these meanings became more profound, giving him different perception of different energies.

After Shi Yan found that refining treasures could help him that much, he started to consider it carefully. Now, he had no contradictions anymore, considering it as experience of a warrior, which gave him more benefits.

Many warriors of the Yang family and the Shi family observed him floating in the air, making many hand seals. His anxious, stirring moods were all calmed down.

Looking at the miraculous expanding formations he was making, which vaguely depicted heaven and earth's operation rules, some warriors seemed to understand something. They sat down cross-legged, their mind illuminated with the light of knowledge.

The formation was one kind of heaven and earth's energy form. If they could understand the mysteries of these formations, it would be very useful to them. They could even enter the new realm instantly.

Shi Yan had the Spirit Realm cultivation base. The author of the Blacksmith's Secrets of Success was a Divine Grade blacksmith. The Upanishads hidden in the formations he wrote were

abstrusely complicated. Even if the warriors could only understand a bit, they could reach the wall of their cultivation.

Most of the onlookers didn't have a profound realm. Seeing the changing formations, they somehow found it easy to understand a deeper meaning.

Gradually, more and more people started to gather their spirit and sat down around the wide ditch.

Right after that, Ling Ming and Mo Dun Huan seemed to understand something. They closed their eyes as if they were searching for some knowledge.

The warriors who had decided to stay with the Yangs and risk their lives in fighting felt lucky at this moment. They were lucky that they made a wise choice. And, they felt lucky that they weren't the runaway betrayers.

Surviving the great catastrophe, one would receive happiness later.

What Shi Yan said ten days ago arose in their heads. At this moment, they knew it was true.

People now looked at Shi Yan with more respect, no longer surprised or doubtful. They considered this young man their leader, just like Yang Tian Emperor. Their trust in him started to grow in their hearts.

At the most difficult time of the Human Clan in the Divine Great Land, this small group of people could find peace in their souls in this desolate forest. They seemed to find Nirvana, a resting place for their souls. They gathered and became stronger.

# Chapter 620: New situation!

---

In a corner of the Perpetual Night Forest, a group of warriors was building a stone house. It looked plain, without any formations or barrier to strengthen it. This house was used only for shelter.

Half a month ago, they were struggling in despair as they wanted to leave this place and go to the Secret Domain of the seven ancient factions... They thought that they would die shortly.

Half a month later, their faces were bright and smiling, when they could have a new life eventually. Everybody was excited and enthusiastic, as if they wouldn't ever be tired.

"Have you heard about Li Hai's treasure, which upgraded to Rank 1 of Spirit Grade from the original Rank 4 of Mortal Grade?" A teenager at Human Realm talked with his young, eager face, while he was pouring energy into the stone. He wanted to vent out his excitement.

"Haha, I will be in the next group! I'm so excited! Haha, those stray dogs who left will never know what they have missed!" Another young man with a scattering beard laughed evilly.

The same conversations arose in every corner.

...

Around a lake with many stone houses surrounding it, a young man sat neatly with a severe countenance. He was making numerous hand seals, falling like constellations into the formation in front of him.

Yang Tian Emperor, Shi Jian, Mo Dun Huan, and Ling Ming were waiting, their eyes longing.

"There it is." Radiant halo bloomed from the formation. The young man was still making more hand seals. He exhaled heavily, but his eyes were bright.

"Done?" Shi Jian couldn't help but step forward. He scooped and observed the formation, but he couldn't see it through. "Is it enough to teleport? Little Yan, when did you learn how to create the Teleportation Formation?"

"Can't explain briefly," Shi Yan smiled brightly, then he contemplated, his face hesitant. "Do you really want to bring Cao Qiu Dao's group here? If they come here, we will have more unpredictable factors. Have you guys decided yet?"

"Just let them come here," Yang Tian Emperor nodded. "We don't have enough materials to refine treasures anymore. We still have many warriors waiting for you to refine their treasures. We need to take care of it. Although Cao Qiu Dao's cunning, he has abilities. When he comes, we will be strengthened."

Mo Dun Huan and Ling Ming also agreed with him.

"Alright then," Shi Yan smiled and didn't say anything else. He closed his eyes to concentrate, urging his Soul Consciousness. He calibrated the space nodes inside the Formation in front of him.

Magical light dots that were as bright as stars emerged, as if they had come from a strange space, floating in the center of the Teleportation Formation.

Shi Yan's eyes squinted. All of a sudden, a soul flow that was as strong as a gushing flood lunged directly to the nodes.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Delicate light fibers weaved a fine net above the sacrificial altar. It had a thick mesh, but it looked very orderly. Electric currents shot out like rainbows, while energy waves rippled visibly.

...

The sealed Teleportation Formation inside a mountain of the Northern Gem Mountain glowed abruptly.

Cao Qiu Dao's group of warriors had been waiting for so long.

Gradually, they became desperate. But at this moment, they all jolted up with a stirring heart and an excited mind.

A shadow slowly appeared. It was Shi Yan in the Perpetual Night Forest. His phantom became clear. People then saw him waving, signaling them to come over.

Cao Qiu Dao was overjoyed, shouting to his men. "Come over here. We'll leave immediately."

Shortly, human warriors of the Endless Sea all gathered inside the Teleportation Formation.

A white halo flashed, and everybody disappeared.

...

"Cao-ge," Yang Tian Emperor smiled, greeting, "Welcome."

Cao Qiu Dao couldn't help but smile. He nodded to Yang Tian Emperor then shifted his look to Shi Yan. He talked to him with respect. "Thank you."

Shi Yan was embarrassed, shaking his head. "Don't rush to say thanks. The situation isn't like what you've thought."

"Yeah?" Cao Qiu Dao was surprised.

"Let me explain," Yang Tian Emperor frowned. He briefed the situation and then extended one arm, speaking begrudgingly. "You guys can choose to leave. I know the general direction of the seven ancient factions' Secret Domain. If you want to go there, I will not compel you."

"Argh. For the payment, I'll take a part of cultivating materials you have," Shi Yan beamed a wry smile, pointing at the Teleportation Formation next to them. "It cost me a lot to build that formation. You guys should make it up for me."

Cao Qiu Dao kept silent for a while then spoke up. "Yang-ge, will you give us time to consider? I need to discuss with them."

Yang Tian Emperor nodded.

...

"What do you think?" After Cao Qiu Dao and the others reached another area, he went straight to the matter. "From the current situation, the Secret Domain of the seven ancient factions is the safest place. However, Shi Yan can always surprise people. When he was in the Endless Sea, he had discovered a whole new world. We aren't familiar with the seven ancient factions. When we get there, I'm not sure what would happen..."

"It's all because of you that we can survive until this moment. We will follow you." Fan Xiang Yun was frank enough to throw back the ball to him.

Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun's group consisted of around five hundred warriors. They were all the core members of the Cao family, the Yin Yang Fairyland, and the Desolate Barbarian Sect. Different from the Yang family, they didn't have many external disciples. Their men were all loyal and trustworthy. Well, the ones with different thought were soon trashed away.

"Little Lan, what do you think?" Cao Qiu Dao frowned. At this moment, he couldn't make the decision shortly.

"The only thing I regret the most in my life is that I didn't trust him that year. I couldn't see his potential." A strange light sparkled in Cao Zhi Lan's face, her eyes determined. "This time, I won't make the same mistake. When he had overturned the situation of the Endless Sea, he only had the Sky Realm cultivation base. At that time, peerless warriors in the Endless Sea were at Spirit Realm. Today, he's reached the Spirit Realm, and the experts in the Divine Great Land have the True God Realm cultivation base. How similar is it? I believe he can overturn the whole sky the second time!"

Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun were moved.

"It's true. Little Lan's correct. Your vision is wide, too." Fan Xiang Yun sighed in relief, then shot up from her spot. "Although



the background has changed, the situation's strangely similar. Moreover, at that time, he was alone!"

"Then, we should stay here. I hope he can create miracles once again," said Cao Qiu Dao determinedly.

Soon, they would know how wise their decision was.

Seeing Shi Yan refining treasures and his magical technique to upgrade the treasures and after he said that he could help them refine their treasures too, Cao Qiu Dao and his group of five hundred were filled with enthusiasm.

Increasing the quality of the secret treasures could enhance the warriors' competence. In this Perpetual Night Forest, where dangers appeared in every corner, having additional power meant having more chances to survive.

Anyway, Shi Yan's refining process didn't include only one or two weapons. He was carrying out a massive scale refining procedure, including everyone else!

This sounded intimidating to them. Added with Cao Qiu Dao's group, they now had around one thousand and five hundred warriors. After their treasures and weapons were upgraded, their general power would leap up one more level!

...

"Great Grandpa, if I bring the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan here, can you arrange for them properly?" Shi Yan talked with a serious complexion while glaring at Cao Qiu Dao.

"Don't worry. People who stay will all follow your decision. They won't oppose us," smiled Yang Tian Emperor.

"I have no problem with it," said Cao Qiu Dao.

Shi Yan nodded, smiling brightly. "The future picture will be beyond your imagination. We need to improve the previous operation. Anyway, I don't care about races. I don't bother with

the Monster Clan or the Dark Clan. As long as they walk the same way with me, I will protect them. If they can bring benefits to me, I will establish a good relationship with them. From now on, this is my working principle. I don't classify races, I just consider the attitudes and manners. If the alien tribes have a good relationship with me, I'll treat them well. If they aim at me, I'll kill them all!"

Cao Qiu Dao shuddered in his heart as he felt lucky somehow.

Cao Zhi Lan's eyes brightened with a strange light. She was touched. She suddenly felt that Shi Yan's demeanor was more charming than before. Now, he had brave but callous makings that attracted her more.

"Alright!" Yang Tian Emperor nodded. "I believe in your decision. As long as we can earn benefit and survive, we will do anything."

Shi Yan grinned. All of a sudden, he felt this hard situation wasn't unbreakable.

...

Three days later, the clansmen of the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan moved to this shelter. Since they had talked it through, the ones who decided to stay here understood. They didn't say anything against this move.

After the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan arrived, the number of people here had increased to four thousand and five hundred, including two thousand clansmen of the Dark Devil Clan, one thousand clansmen of the Winged Clan, one thousand members of the Yang family and the Shi family, and five hundred people of Cao Qiu Dao and Fan Xiang Yun's group.

The alien tribes took account of half the number of the population here, which made the number of the Human Clan smaller. However, this force was far behind the ancient seven factions, whether it was the number or the qualification of the warriors.

Still, no one had thought that this small force could quickly unite and improve their general competence under Shi Yan's influence in such strenuous situation.

...

Swoosh!

A snow-white feather attached with a piece of animal skin shot to an ancient tree where the Winged Clan stayed. A member of the Winged Clan picked up the leather piece, took a look, then hurried to find Yu Ruo, handing it to her.

Fifteen minutes later, Shi Yan, Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, Yang Zhuo, Shi Jian, Di Shan, and Yi Tian Mo gathered in a stone meeting room by the lake, their faces grim.

"It's the order of the Monster Clan. I think Fiery Dragon wrote it. He said that if we don't move, he will kill us all three days later," Di Shan frowned, looking at the vulgar writing, his face cold. "Although Fiery Dragon has reached level 9, and is as strong as a True God Realm warrior, he hasn't entered the realm for a long time. I think we can endure a battle with him."

Cao Qiu Dao nodded. "With our competence, when we join hands to deal with Fiery Dragon, even if we get hurt, we won't lose."

"No," Shi Yan shook his head, "We are not going to fight with them. Among the alien tribes, the Monster Clan seems easy to contact. We can deal with them."

"Deal with them?" Everybody was stunned.

"Yeah," Shi Yan's face darkened as he moved his line of sight to the further area. "I think, compared to the Monster Clan, some people are more wicked. We should maintain our power to deal with the tougher enemies." He was looking in the direction where the seven ancient factions gathered.

# Chapter 621: Befriend Monsters

---

The Fiery Dragon lived in a natural limestone cave in the Perpetual Night Forest. This cave had fiery walls, which were red like blood. The ambiance was hot year around, and the ventilation was horrible.

As the fiery flood dragon who had just leveled up, Fiery Dragon had his intelligence awakened, which made him an official member of the Monster Clan.

However, it was hard to change someone's characteristics in a short time. The limestone he lived was still stinky and dirty, with a pungent smell that always nauseated people.

Of course, Fiery Dragon wouldn't bother with these minor details. Quite the contrary, he felt much comfortable in such conditions, and he could relax well.

To the Human Clan, his place was disgusting.

In the past, humans who were captured and imprisoned in this limestone cave all died after several days because of the revolting smell.

This Fiery Dragon also had a special smell that humans couldn't endure. Except for the other beasts, the other high-grade creatures couldn't stand his nauseating odor.

Inside the spacious natural cave, the Fiery Flood Dragon that was around three hundred meters tall was balling its giant body, squinting lazily near the vivid red lava rock. The Fiery Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Giant Python were waiting silently near him.

This limestone cave was spacious, extending in all directions. Although the scarlet lava rock stood in the middle, it didn't hinder their visions.

Not far from them were hundreds of different size beasts all lined

up. They were like the guards, standing on two sides of the place as if they were waiting for something.

"Master Fiery Dragon, the human called Shi Yan asked to meet you." A level 7 beast called over from the entrance of the cave with unnatural howls. His voice echoed through the large cave.

"Bring him in," The fist-sized garnet eyes of the dragon brightened. He spoke with a calm, relaxed voice; his words were clear enough.

Shortly, a figure entered the cave through the entrance. After taking seven turns, he got to the spacious cave where the three great beasts stayed.

Lying in the center of the cave, on the vivid red lava wall, the giant body of the Fiery Dragon was like a giant block of rotten meat. Pungent smell exuded from him, permeating the whole place.

This cave wasn't a well-ventilated room. Usually, beasts would have an unusual smell. In this cave, besides Fiery Dragon, there were the Fiery Flame Gold Lion, the Silver-horned Giant Python, and some rotten organic bodies somewhere. This combined nauseating odor could even shake people's souls.

The blood-red eyes of the Fiery Dragon opened, gazing at the man maliciously. The man was walking deliberately as if he didn't smell the nauseating scent in this place. He looked pretty relaxed.

Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame Gold Lion, and the Silver-horned Giant Python were surprised at first. Afterward, their hostile look faded. Unknowingly, their feeling towards the man who had just visited them was getting better.

Naturally, humans hated the smell of beasts. They always considered the inhabited area of the beasts the most disgusting place.

Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame Gold Lion, and the Silver-horned

Giant Python had communicated with many people. They had also captured a lot and imprisoned them here.

No one was an exception. Every human being entering this limestone, no matter he was an ordinary people or a warrior, couldn't stop vomiting.

Some with a cunning heart would try to restrain their upset stomach, but they couldn't hide the hatred in their eyes.

To high-level demonic beasts like Fiery Dragon, they hated the human's discrimination the most, as they always thought that humans didn't respect them.

Thus, these sort of humans would become their meals.

Today, after observing the young man for a while, Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame Gold Lion, and the Silver-horned Giant Python didn't find even a slight bit of loathing or despise on his face. Well, at least, they couldn't see it.

This pleased the three high-level beasts. Their intense anger was calmed down.

"Why did you come here?" Fiery Dragon snorted, his voice rumbling like thunder. "I've given you time. Don't try my patience. But, because you've come here yourself, I'll give you another chance. Leave quickly, and I won't take this as a grudge anymore."

Shi Yan's countenance was faint. He didn't show that he was scared or disdainful. He didn't answer the Fiery Dragon but asked, "I heard that Master Fiery Dragon has an enemy, the level 9 Blood-maned Giant Ape. I heard that he has reached level 9 earlier than you? Rank 2 of level 9, right?"

These days, he had studied the ranking of the beasts. The Monster Clan also had a classification of the level. Each level had some smaller ranks, just like the different skies of a realm of human warriors' cultivation base.

As the Fiery Dragon had just entered level 9, he should be at rank 1. The Blood-maned Giant Ape had reached level 9 for a longer time, so he should be relatively stronger than the Fiery Dragon.

The red eyes of Fiery Dragon were suddenly flooded with blood, as if it could drip from the dragon's sockets at any minute. He thundered furiously. "What does it matter to you?"

"I can help Master Fiery Dragon increase your power. Yeah, including them." Shi Yan waved his hand, pointing at the Fiery Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Giant Python. "You Monster Clan don't know how to refine treasures, but I do. If you have a good weapon, when you compete for the territory with the Blood-maned giant Ape, you can be more certain about your triumph."

"Refining treasures?" Fiery Dragon was dazed. Then, he shouted indignantly. "Our bodies are the best weapons! We don't need to use external things! Kid, you've wasted a good plan this time."

"I mean... refining your body," Shi Yan laughed. "Master Fiery Dragon, if the horns on your head are refined, the power they release will be much more tremendous and purer. Yeah, I'm well aware how dangerous your limbs are, but my point here is your bodies."

Fiery Dragon and the other two beasts were stunned.

"Will you let me demonstrate?" Shi Yan smiled again.

Fiery Dragon and the two beasts nodded instinctively as they wanted to see what trick this human had.

"Call it here," Shi Yan had a plan before, pointing at a level 6 Sharp Claw Blue Hunter not far from him.

The beast arrived. Shi Yan's Storage Ring flashed. More than ten materials emerged. He refined them into a strange potion, then poured onto the pair of the monster's sharp claws, and started to refine them.

Fiery Dragon and the other two beasts observed him.

After a long time, Shi Yan finished. The Sharp Claw Blue Hunter now had a pair of snow-white claws seeming like exquisite longswords. Cold light radiated, from them, as a sharp and cold halo moved along the claws.

The Fiery Dragon sent his thought to the beast. Next, it stabbed one claw into the rock wall.

Just like a pointy knife pierced through tofu, its claw sank into the rock wall instantly, leaving only its arm outside.

Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame Gold Lion, and Silver-horned Giant Python were suddenly stirred up. The unique heavy breathing of demonic beasts arose in the cave, which showed their excitement.

"You are a human, but you dare cooperate with us. Aren't you be afraid of getting killed if someone knows your little secret?" Fiery Dragon pondered for a while and then said with a surprised tone. "The hatred between races in the Divine Great Land now is as deep as the Antiquity era. Our Monster Clan and your Human Clan are the archenemies. Do you dare to do so?"

Shi Yan shrugged, "I did that."

Fiery Dragon and the Fiery Flame Gold Lion observed him silently. No one knew what they were thinking.

"Well, if you reject it, it's okay," Shi Yan smiled coldly. "I can always visit the Blood-maned Giant Ape. Perhaps... he'll be interested in my offer."

"Master Fiery Dragon!" Fiery Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Giant Python shouted.

Abruptly, Fiery Dragon shot out the fierce light everywhere. A formidable energy wave rippled from him, as if he wanted to crush Shi Yan into pieces.

"I want to make it clear that if I dare to come here, I'm not afraid



of you. Although my powers aren't much strong, you guys can't just swallow us that easy." Shi Yan stood firm. "I think you get it. Otherwise, you should have attacked us already, without just threatening like that. You have the Blood-maned Giant Ape as your enemy, and we have our enemies too. We can cooperate to win. If you want to have a bloody fight between us, it won't benefit either side."

"What do you want?" Fiery Dragon stayed quiet for a while and then asked.

"Not much. We need peace. We don't want to be attacked in your territory. And, if I help you increase your power, you have to pay me big." Shi Yan curled his lips. "I know there are so many precious cultivating materials in the Perpetual Night Forest. And you, of course, know which ones are the useful ones. Haha, you can use them only after I've processed them. At this moment, besides me, there should be no other human blacksmith who dares to cooperate with you. Especially... at this critical time... What do you say?"

"Deal," the Fiery Flame pondered for a while and then thundered with his husky voice.

"Deal," Shi Yan wore a smiling face, as he was actually joyful.

...

Inside the limestone was a spacious fiery cave, as big as a football court. Strange and rare cultivating materials piled up like mountains.

Dark Blue Water Jade, Phoenix Bone Stone, Soul Nurturing Tricolored Grass, Thick Earth Topaz...

The rare cultivating materials were laid like trash in many corners, covered with a thick layer of dust. Without a close look, it was hard to identify these were all the treasures that all warriors would drool over.

Fiery Dragon took Shi Yan to this place. At first glance, Shi Yan was stunned as if he got hit.

"Our Monster Clan has great longevity. Take me as an example, I've been living for more than one thousand years," Fiery Dragon said, "During this endless period, we got to know that human warriors always wanted to collect many things in the Perpetual Night Forest. Although I don't know their functions in details, I know they are precious. Usually, my men and I will collect some. After more than one thousand years, we have a big collection. Sometimes, we will exchange with human warriors. Anyway, in most cases, we will just kill and eat them..."

Shi Yan shook his head and beamed a forced smile, but he didn't say anything, walking directly to those piles of dazzlingly colorful materials.

All of a sudden, some pieces of strange wood in a corner came into his sight.

Those timbers were like they were struck by lightning. Thunder and lightning power seemed apparent on them. The wood grain on these logs was both natural and exquisite. The wood grain looked like a natural formation, which dazzled him.

Thunder Witch Wood!

A light flashed in his head. Shi Yan's fingers were trembling, as he couldn't restrain the joy in his heart. He laughed contentedly.

# Chapter 622: Good friendship

---

The Dark Blue Water Jade was one of the best auxiliary materials to refine treasures of Water class. It could increase the treasure's solubility and provide abundant power, which was precious.

The Phoenix Bone Stone was extremely hard. Except for some special earth flames, human flames in blacksmith's body couldn't even melt it. However, after the Phoenix Bone Stone was melted into a hot fluid, it could increase the sharpness of weapons.

Nurturing Tricolored Grass wasn't a material to refine treasures, but it was a primary ingredient of the Original Soul Pellet. Also, it was a rare, precious herb.

...

Cultivating materials in different colors and distinctive shapes piled up everywhere unsorted. Without attentive searching, people couldn't see how valuable these dust-covered piles were.

Especially... The Thunder Witch Wood. The Thunder Witch Wood was a dried branch of a ten-thousand-year ancient tree. Under constant striking of lightning and thunder from the nine skies over thousands of years, it was generated gradually.

Under the refining of lightning and thunder, the nature of the wood would be changed. That log of wood would have the thunder and lightning power with an exquisite, natural wood grain.

The wood grain gradually formed vegetation essence and the thunder and lightning aura. This was the essential wooden material for some unique items.

Thunder Witch Wood was one of the three primary materials to conduct Heaven Flame Refining Divine Technique.

Shi Yan had thought that it would be strenuous to find the Thunder Witch Wood due to its distinctive nature. He had never expected that he could find them in the beast territory. He almost

jumped up in joy.

The Fiery Dragon was a creature that could live several thousand years. The Perpetual Night Forest had various precious natural resources and excellent materials scattered everywhere. They attracted many warriors of the Martial Spirit Palace. However, of course, warriors couldn't be familiar with the forest as much as the beasts were. Where the rarest and the most precious treasures of this Perpetual Night Forest were, the high-rank demonic beasts would know clearly.

Fiery Dragon had collected his treasures over a thousand years; he'd also robbed many warriors. It was natural that he could gather such big amount of cultivating materials.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He kept walking around the cave, and he couldn't hide his compliments. Sometimes, he hissed as if he had gone crazy already.

Fiery Dragon stood by the entrance of the cave, releasing an immense red halo. His grand body started to shrink. Magical earth and heaven energy distorted, moving rapidly in his body.

Not long after that, the dragon's body had shrunk to human size. He had transformed into a mature, majestic human with a red face and a pair of fiery eyes.

The man had one horn, jutting out of his forehead for around half a meter. Flames were twirling around that long horn, covering the miraculous flame patterns on it.

Fine beast skin-carvings meandered and expanded in his entire body, as though they were his natural costume, which could make people drop their jaws in awe.

However, the stinky smell of Fiery Dragon stayed the same. It always nauseated people, giving fluttering butterflies in their stomach.

That was how the Monster Clan was. Whether it could transform

or not, this feature would never change. Anyway, they didn't care about their odor that much, as they always felt comfortable with it.

The human form of Fiery Dragon was a little bit odd. He had a fluttering hair that looked like flames, and his face was really red. He walked to Shi Yan and thundered. "So? Are the materials I've accumulated enough to refine my body?"

When the dragon turned into human, his characteristics seemed to have a little, miraculous change. He pointed at the sole horn on his head and asked anxiously. "This horn of mine is my crest. After you refine me, would it become ugly? Would it affect my whole aesthetic and markings?"

Shi Yan was surprised. He contemplated for a while and then shook his head. "No. After my refining, you will become more handsome and extraordinary than you are now. Even when you show your true form, you can show people your imposing, majestic markings."

Fiery Dragon turned his head satisfyingly. "You don't make me hate you. As long as you cooperate well with me, I, Fiery Dragon, won't let you suffer a loss."

While he was talking, he took out a bronze mirror from nowhere, dedicatedly observing his image in the mirror. He frowned and then said, "Human body isn't so comfortable. It isn't as strong as my true form either. Anyway, this shape looks really handsome. I can't deny that for sure."

Shi Yan felt funny. He didn't expect that after Fiery Dragon had turned into human shape, his nature seemed to change a little bit. He became more pleased with himself.

"Although you have many kinds of materials here, it still lacks some. I have to go back to prepare. I'll be back soon." Shi Yan frowned. He thought that he needed to comfort his side first to prevent the Yangs from taking any unusual action.

"You should be hurried. I don't have much time. You must prepare everything properly and quickly." Fiery Dragon swung his arm, indicating that Shi Yan should go and return here as fast as possible.

Shi Yan smiled and nodded. Suddenly, he let out a dry cough, talking gingerly. "Hey... I need you to make a deposit." The Yang family still had many treasures needed to refine. It wasn't that he didn't have enough energy, but it was the lack of materials.

"Deposit?" Fiery Dragon thundered angrily. "You want a deposit? You haven't done anything yet!"

"Cough Cough!" Shi Yan also recognized he was a bit hurried. "Ah, you misunderstood it. I want the deposit to test the quality of the materials beforehand. I will never break our deal midway. My people are all in your territory. Don't worry."

Fiery Dragon rolled his eyes and grunted, as if he was considering whether Shi Yan was trustworthy or not.

After a long while, Fiery Dragon thought that with his power of a level 9 beast, Shi Yan couldn't trick him. Thus, he nodded to allow Shi Yan to take a part of the deposit and leaving.

Shi Yan wasn't greedy. He took different materials with Fiery Dragon's witness. Then, he stooped to press his excited heart, leaving with satisfaction.

Seemed like Fiery Dragon didn't know the value of the Thunder Witch Wood. When Shi Yan put the logs into his Storage Ring, Fiery Dragon didn't even raise his eyebrow. The dragon was a little bit surprised, as he thought that his vision was a little bit narrow.

...

The shelter of the Yang family...

Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, and Shi Jian were waiting with many worries. Their faces gradually darkened.

Especially Shi Jian, he kept walking back and forth. He was worried, as if he had a flame burning his heart. He couldn't help but scream all the time. "Something unexpected has happened! That kid likes to show off! Not good, we can't stay idle!"

Among them, Shi Jian was the one who loved Shi Yan the most. He was always worried about the young man. Seeing him leave for quite a long time, he couldn't sit still anymore. Shi Jian was constantly shouting, as he regretted he couldn't attack the Fiery Dragon's territory.

Yang Tian Emperor wasn't moved. He sat there calmly like a mountain.

Cao Qiu Dao squinted. His gossamer aura fluttered here and there, but he didn't say anything.

All of a sudden, screaming and screeching rose from outside together, with the noise of busting and hustling people.

Yang Tian Emperor disappeared.

The Fiery Flame Gold Lion and ten other level 6 or level 7 beasts were escorting Shi Yan, crushing the ancient trees around to get to the Yangs' amidst a bloody scent.

Shi Yan was riding the Fiery Flame Gold Lion. His face was calm, and he was smiling. He seemed to discuss something with the Fiery Flame Gold Lion.

The arrogant, tyrannical lion behaved well. Its big eyes even showed that it was servile to someone.

"Don't worry. I will refine you well. I'll do my best." Seeing the Yang family appear in his vision, under their eyes gawking with fear, Shi Yan patted the Fiery Flame Gold Lion at his forehead. He promised the gold lion and then jumped off.

People of the Yang family, the Shi family, the Cao Family, the Devil Dark Clan, and the Winged Clan flooded out from the corners near the lake. They were all stunned, looking at him, not

knowing what was going on.

"You guys should go back first. In three days max, I'll visit you guys there." Shi Yan laughed cheerily, advising the beasts in front of him. Everybody else was dumbstruck.

All beasts had intelligence, as they nodded in unison. Then, as he had advised, they retreated orderly.

They seemed to escort Shi Yan back home, instead of forcing and monitoring him as they had imagined.

Many beautiful young maidens were stunned, before they started to cheer up.

They had thought that under the beast's threat and force, they had to move one more time to another shelter. Unexpectedly, after Shi Yan visited the beasts, they now had a new hope. The whole picture had overturned to a good result they had never imagined.

However, what surprised them was still behind.

The Fiery Flame Gold Lion left. Shi Yan rose one arm and announced. "We will start to refine treasures again. Weapons that haven't been improved, you guys should give me all."

Cheers reverberated like thunder by the lake. Everybody was stirred up, complimenting him excitedly.

Cao Qiu Dao's squinting eyes slightly opened. He looked at the young man with surprise, nodding in approval in his heart.

All of a sudden, he thought that their decision was perhaps correct. 'Maybe... this kid can lead us to claim a new world, eh?', He thought as his face was struck discreetly.

...

At the entrance of the Perpetual Night Forest...

A silhouette hovered like a night owl in a deep place of the thick forest. More than ten warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan at Spirit Realm and Sky Realm were standing underneath the man. They



were waiting for something.

Soon, a Ghost Mark Clan's young man flew out of the thick forest. He kneeled down and greeted with a low voice. "Grand Sage."

Comoros was hovering in the forest. He nodded and then frowned. "You've been in the Perpetual Night Forest for half a year. Do you have any useful information?"

"I can't detect the precise direction of the Secret Domain. Members of the seven ancient factions don't always stay inside. They often go out and operate in the Perpetual Night Forest..." That man was still on his knee as he was reporting the situation with a face that had been through wind and frost.

"A small, unknown force? Survivors in the Perpetual Night Forest? Why? Why didn't they go to the Secret Domain?" Comoros knitted his brows, as he couldn't understand.

"Grand Sage, I found something strange... Among them, there's a clan called the Dark Devil Clan... They look very similar to us! Except for the innate tattoo, their aura is astonishingly consistent with us!" The man kept silent for a while, contemplated then reported.

Grand Sage Comoros of the Ghost Mark Clan trembled on listening to his report. He opened his eyes and then shouted, "What?!?"

"My words are true. If any of them aren't proven, Grand Sage can sentence me to death!" The man lifted his head, his face fearful. "Until now, I didn't believe it. But it's true. And, Shi Yan, that brat, is with them. The clan that looks similar to us considers him their master."

"Get me there! Quick!" Comoros shouted sharply, his face dark and ugly.

# Chapter 623: Demonic beast sheds the mortal skin

---

In the center of a scorching fire sea deep inside the limestone cave laid a giant dragon covered in thick beast scales. It was screeching and howling fiercely.

Flows of blood-like flame covered the scale all over his body. They were blazing, overflowing towards his head, sizzling and getting into his horn. His sole horn sparkled like red melting iron, while scarlet flames were emitting continuously.

A neat silhouette was floating above the fire sea. He was waiting in silence, his face stern. He was making some mysterious hand seals, which seemed to have their own lives as they swam lively like fishes in the fire sea.

The temperature of the limestone cave was increasing unceasingly. Feeble light sparkled in the Fiery Flame Gold Lion's and the Silver-horned Giant Python's eyes as they were watching from other places. They didn't dare to breathe loudly, as if they were afraid that would cause some bad influence.

Blood-red flames moved randomly like lightning on Fiery Dragon. Each flame flower had a streak of a strange light. This strange light was the essence after the refining materials were melted, which had unmeasurably magical effects.

Flames guided those strange beams of light, seeping through the slits between the dragon's scales to enter his body, which increased his body's tenaciousness to an unimaginable degree.

An immense fiery halo expanded like a natural light cage and shot backward from the dragon's scaled body. In the place submerged in red flames like this cave, the giant dragon's body wasn't significant, but the heat it was emitting was intimidating.

The Fiery Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Giant Python

suddenly had their minds clear. They held their breaths, while radiant light sparkled from their eyes. Their soul fluctuated as their hearts became restless.

The Fiery Dragon was screeching painfully. Thundering explosions echoed in the cave, that even burst off the rigid rock wall of the cave.

The man hovering above the fire sea kept his posture indifferently and didn't move, as though he was a statue sitting neatly in the air. Even the hand seals he was making were ceased.

Shortly, he opened his eyes. Freezing electric currents shot out from deep inside his eyes, weaving in the void. These currents were added with imposing soul fluctuations, pouring furiously into the fire sea.

So many treasures of heaven and earth that melted and refined in the fire sea now received the life seal. They transformed into beams of light and rumblingly overwhelmed the fiery flame flood dragon's body, without even a drop remaining.

The flames shrank gradually. After ten breathings, the fire sea vanished, leaving only one pure fire flower bouncing and dancing before it disappeared into an ancient blood-red ring on the young man's finger.

The heated limestone cave gradually restored its quietness. People could even hear the noise when a needle fell to the ground.

The giant body of the Fiery Dragon had a garnet halo of fiery flame moving on his body in the center of the scorching lava rock bed. This halo was dazzling like a strange meteor. His natural scale armor was covered with a layer of light energy, which actually looked like some liquid lingering on the dragon, as it was still releasing the extreme heat.

The single horn on his head dazzled, as if it was an earth-shaking divine weapon that could even shake people's hearts. Just like the

sunlight, it was hard to conceal.

Fiery Dragon balled his body, breathing slowly as he was sensing the changes of his body and adjusting the rhythm of his energy to be consistent with the energy of heaven and earth. Fiery Dragon seemed to have a flash of recognition, as a light of wisdom sparkled in his giant eyes.

Time seemed to stop right at this moment.

Afterward, the giant body of the Fiery Dragon shook continually. Dirty black contaminants seeped through the gaps between his scales. A stinky, pungent smell that could turn people's heart and lungs upside down permeated the whole place.

Even the Fiery Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned Giant Python, which were the beasts themselves, couldn't endure it. They had almost plugged their nostrils and ran away. This was the first time they realized how uncomfortable it was for humans to stay near the beasts.

Only the Fiery Dragon didn't notice anything unconsciously when he eventually woke up. At first, he was astounded. Then, he laughed contentedly, his laughter soaring up to the sky and shaking the entire limestone cave.

"Clean it up." Fiery Dragon stopped laughing. His garnet eyes raked through the Silver-horned Giant Python and assigned it nonchalantly.

This imposing, solemn manner was inborn. Although he didn't intend it, it could storm to the deep place in people's hearts, making their souls recognize his existence.

The Silver-horned Giant Python suddenly got it. It stayed dumbstruck for half a moment before screaming with fright. "Master Fiery Dragon. You... You have shed your mortal skin?"

When demonic beast completed its shedding process, its aura and blood would be refined thoroughly. At that time, the nauseating

odor of the beasts would be washed away. Quite the contrary, they would have a pleasant aroma. That was the Monster Clan.

Only if the beast could shed its mortal skin could it finally become a member of the Monster Clan. Its body and blood would have a miraculous change. Its demon power could move easily in its body, and the monster could urge its power at any minute. The challenging gap between the demonic beasts and the monsters was this mortal skin shedding process.

Fiery Dragon cracked a big, wild smile. In his laughter, his giant body shrank, forming the shape of human flesh body. He looked as imposing as a mountain, with blood-red skin and a beautiful, radiant horn on his forehead.

Taking out a bronze mirror, Fiery Dragon observed his new appearance seriously. He couldn't help but laugh contentedly again. "Muahahaha. Not bad! Really not bad! You, fella, you have good tricks. From now on, you are my friend. My real friend!"

Fiery Flame Gold Lion and the Silver-horned were shivering in thrill. A powerful desire sparkled in their eyes, like a raging fire that could burn the young man.

The Silver-horned Giant Python was hesitant. It swept the tail which was as big as a tree trunk over the place. A strong wind blew through, washing away the contaminants from the Fiery Dragon's body instantly.

"The materials in your cave are consumed for the most part. Only to refine your body, I almost used them all." Retrieving the Earth Flame, Shi Yan was still relaxed. Suddenly, he said, "Actually, I can help you refine a good weapon if you have enough materials with Fire attributes. Well, yeah, in just a short time, I can't help Fiery Flame Lion and Silver-horned Python refine their bodies. We don't have enough materials."

Fiery Flame Gold Lion and Silver-horned Giant Python shifted anxiously. Their eyes gazed at Fiery Dragon while crying. "Master

Fiery Dragon!"

"Do you have any solution?" Fiery Dragon swung his arm to calm Fiery Flame and Silver-horned down. "As long as we have enough materials, you will proceed, right?"

"In principle, yeah..." Shi Yan smiled humbly. "Hey... The Blood-maned Giant Ape is also a level 9 beast. I think he has collected cultivating materials for so many years like you, so it shouldn't be less than your collection, right?"

The fiery flame lion and the silver-horned python had their eyes sparkled while they looked frightened.

Fiery Dragon was bewildered for a while. He frowned, but didn't say anything. After a long while, he spoke up. "I... I'm not sure."

Shi Yan smiled as he knew that beast had misunderstood his idea. "I don't ask you to attack him. I meant, the Blood-maned Giant Ape is also from your clan, right? He has collected a lot of materials, perhaps?"

Fiery Dragon was surprised. He nodded, but then his eyes flared with a brutal light. "Are you... Are you going to help Blood-maned Giant Ape to refine his body, too?"

"What's the matter?" asked Shi Yan.

Fiery Dragon got enraged immediately. "That b\*stard is my archenemy. He always wants to claim my territory. I will never let him improve his power!" He said resolutely. His face reddened and distorted in anger.

Only he knew how tremendous the benefits his body got from Shi Yan's refining process were.

Shedding mortal skin was just a byproduct. The current power of his body was increased at least one level. Even if he had to fight with the Blood-maned Giant Ape, he would have a chance to win.

"The Perpetual Night Forest is so vast but does it have only the

two strong members of the Monster Clan including you and the Blood-maned Giant Ape? Don't you two have other enemies?" Shi Yan beamed a smile.

At this moment, Fiery Dragon was startled and discolored. As though he was thinking of something perilous, his eyes shrank, and he even retracted his neck. "Of course not. There's someone stronger than us. At present, the Perpetual Night Forest isn't a peaceful place. Members of the other clans often operate here. Besides Human Clan, members of the Demon Clan and the Ghost Mark Clan are also present."

"If you can exchange refining materials with the Blood-maned Giant Ape, both of you will receive bigger benefits. It's good for you two." Shi Yan continued to persuade him. The amount and types of cultivating materials in the Fiery Dragon's cave had seriously surprised him. Thinking about the Blood-maned Giant Ape, he could almost confirm that what the other treasured were also rich and full of variety. Perhaps, he had stored many things Shi Yan had desired.

At this moment, he didn't care about principle. As long as he could improve his competence, he didn't care if he had to engage in business with the pagans.

Not only did he want to have a good relationship with Fiery Dragon, but he also wanted to get to the other hotshots around through Fiery Dragon. As long as they became his business partners, Shi Yan could collect the most valuable cultivating materials.

"Currently, I don't want to talk with that Blood-maned Giant Ape. We should slow down for a while." Fiery Dragon kept silent for a while. "If the cultivating materials are not enough, I know a place we can take some. Hmm, that place's a little bit dangerous. Perhaps you would like it."

"Where?" Shi Yan's eyes brightened. Indeed, he was interested in

such a place.

"It is also in the Perpetual Night Forest. But it isn't in my territory," Fiery Dragon contemplated for a while. "It's in that Blood-maned Giant Ape's territory. However, he has never dared to reach there. As you know blacksmithing and the formation, perhaps you can get in."

"Is it related to the Human Clan?" Shi Yan's spirit was high.

"Yes."

"Alright, take me there. If we find something, we will gain big benefits."

"We should avoid that Blood-maned Giant Ape. He's not someone we can provoke. Currently, I don't want to fight with him."

"I'll listen to you."

Shi Yan and Fiery Dragon planned their next steps. However, a Sound Stone in Shi Yan's Storage Ring started to send a fierce soul fluctuation before they started to move.

Shi Yan discolored in fear. He hurried to take the Sound Stone and sink his soul into it.

Fiery Dragon didn't say anything, just watching him in silence. When he saw Shi Yan's worried complexion, he knitted his brows. "What's happened?"

"People of the Ghost Mark Clan are in my shelter. They aren't so friendly. I have to go back." Shi Yan put the Sound Stone away, waving his hands and then disappearing.

". . . Ghost Mark Clan," Fiery Dragon was surprised. He hesitated for a while then assigned his guards. "Fiery Flame, Silver-horned, you take our soldiers. We will go there and see."

"Master, we aren't involved with the Ghost Mark Clan. We don't need to go there," Silver-horned reminded him.

"I know it isn't necessary, but that kid is useful to us. I want him



to live well." Fiery Dragon snorted. Then, he checked his appearance a little bit. After he felt he looked perfect, he left the limestone cave.

## Chapter 624: Breaking rules!

---

Comoros was hovering above the Yang family's area, his face grimaced.

Not far beneath him were the two leaders of the Dark Devil Clan, Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba. Their complexions weren't so good as they were looking at him as well in silence.

Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Tian Emperor put on a solemn face. Electric currents were moving in their sleeves, and essence Qi filled their secret treasures. Their tunics fluttered even though there was no wind. Their aura was gloomy and distant.

This was going to be a big tense fight.

After Comoros arrived, he asked Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba to take up the Dark Devil Clan and leave with him. However, Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba had denied. Comoros kept silent the whole time.

However, his calm aura gradually surged like the torrential river. It was increasing unceasingly.

Among this crowd, Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao had experienced fighting with the Peak of Spirit Realm experts. When Comoros appeared here, they immediately knew the old man had crossed the boundary of the Spirit Realm, entering the True God Realm.

That was why Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao didn't dare to take action rashly. They chose to notify Shi Yan first. Although they weren't sure if Shi Yan had a countermeasure, they knew he had many secrets. Perhaps he could overturn this difficult situation.

Grand Sage Comoros had never felt so painful as he had today.

Their noble members of the Ghost Mark Clan had never thought of submitting to Human Clan even if they were about to be extinguished. They had lived and survived, struggling in the hope

of being revived one day.

Although Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba's group didn't have the ghost scripture tattoo on their bodies, their unique aura and physique showed that they were from a branch of the Ghost Mark Clan. The blood flowing in their bodies had started from the same origin.

However, their fellows had denied walking on the same path with them, as they were persistent to be with a human kid.

This was humiliation! The humiliation of the entire Ghost Mark Clan!

"I don't care what you've been through. This time I come and meet you here, I won't let you live this shameful life anymore!" Comoros took a deep breath as his face became sinister. "I give you one day to prepare. At that time, you go with me, or I will destroy all of you shameless people!"

Then, Comoros tried to press down his discontent, turning around to leave.

However, at this moment, Shi Yan suddenly descended in a flash of electric current, appearing ten zhang away from him.

Comoros' eyes shrank while a murderous aura shot out from his eyes. He thundered, "Kid, you dare to come here? When we were at the Shady Firmament Old Mound, many of my fellows were killed. Even me... You've attacked us maliciously. Do you want to die?"

When they were in the Shady Firmament Old Mound, his power hadn't recovered yet, but he had taken risks and attacked Shi Yan. At that time, he hurt his soul.

From that day, Comoros remembered Shi Yan. He regretted that he couldn't kill him earlier. If Bao Ao hadn't advised him beforehand, he would have taken action immediately when he saw Shi Yan.

Shi Yan gathered his spirit, holding the Sky Destroyer tightly in his hand. The three Bone Thorns he had forged were floating

behind him, while a pallid mist of the negative energy meandered around his body unceasingly. They now looked like evil tentacles. Shi Yan's entire body had a strange and evil aura.

He didn't know of the conversation between Bao Ao and Comoros. The experience in the Shady Firmament Old Mound told him that this Grand Sage of the Ghost Mark Clan was the peerless expert at the True God Realm. He was strong enough to encounter any leaders of the seven ancient factions in the Divine Great Land.

Thus, when Shi Yan arrived, he had prepared to have a bloody fight.

"You Ghost Mark Clan, why don't you stay in the Shady Firmament Old Mound? What do you come to the Perpetual Night Forest for? Even if you want to do something, you should keep your eyes on the seven ancient factions, not us." As Shi Yan found that Comoros didn't want to attack him, he relaxed his nerves a bit.

"Them!" Comoros pointed at Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba, speaking coldly. "Although they aren't from the main bloodline of my clan, and they don't have the inheritance, they are still of the same origin as us. I come here to take them back with us. As long as you don't interfere, I will erase the grudge we've made at the Shady Firmament Old Mound. From now on, I won't trouble you anymore."

"Young Master Yan!" Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba shouted in unison.

Shi Yan frowned, faintly talking to them. "You can decide yourself."

"We pledge that we will follow you even if we have to die!" Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba expressed themselves at the same time.

Shi Yan cracked a smile silently, looking at Comoros. "Have you heard that?"

Comoros' face distorted while his eyes sparkled like viper's eyes.

He nodded and said, "Then, I will wash the humiliation, which is you!"

He didn't wait for one day as he had said, taking action all of a sudden. The seal in his palm was like a maze of Formations. Under an immense, vibrating light, it expanded to a miraculous barrier, slowly falling from the sky.

Cold Mysterious Yin energy moved in the sky, overflowing from everywhere and pouring into the barrier. The barrier then emitted a fluctuation that could break souls, drifting away lives. With some earth-destructive Upanishads, it was expanding silently.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Strange noises echoed in the void, while branches of ancient trees above their heads quietly turned into ashes. Light of the sun, moon, and stars was shining, but it couldn't pierce through the barrier, which made it more perfect. People couldn't see any leaks or cracks.

It was the Exterminating Mark aimed at the souls. The coverage of this barrier wasn't big. It had just barricaded the members of the Dark Devil Clan.

Under the energy waves of the barrier, members of the Dark Devil Clan, including Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba, couldn't move. Their soul power seemed to be chained. If they urged their power, their head would receive a head-splitting pain.

The eyes of Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba bulged, their faces filled with fear as they felt the temperature of their bodies decreasing.

Comoros was the Grand Sage of the Ghost Mark Clan who kept the Yin Written Charm Scripture. Of course, he knew which barrier was the best to deal with his own kind.

When the old man took action, he used the fierce attack on Yi Tian Mo and Ka Ba, leaving them no way to resist.

Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan nodded quietly.

"Crack!"

He shouted all of a sudden as his Soul Consciousness shook furiously. Light blades that naked eyes couldn't see rocketed to the sky.

A space power that could tear every kind of barrier appeared between his two palms. The void above the Dark Devil Clan was torn apart, revealing a five-colored crack.

An aura that could swallow every creature or object stormed out from the cracks, as numerous light spots exploded. The barrier Comoros had condensed looked as if it had fallen into a bottomless abyss, disappearing instantly.

Right at that moment, Fiery Dragon and Fiery Flame, Silver-horned had just arrived at the scene. From a far distance, Fiery Dragon discolored, his face bewildered.

"Master Fiery Dragon, what's that?" Fiery Flame gulped, his face disbelieving.

"Space power," Fiery Dragon confirmed. "The so-called Great Space Fission, if nothing unexpected, is because of Shi Yan. All of the alien tribes, well... we should thank him."

Fiery Flame and Silver-horned nodded continually, as they thought that Shi Yan would refine their bodies, so of course, they had to thank him a lot.

"You, you!" Comoros was astounded, his face twisted. "In the Shady Firmament Old Mound, you used this technique to dissolve our attack. And, you had even hurt my soul!"

After Shi Yan had torn space to solve Comoros' attack, he had consumed half of his energy. He was pale, beaming a forced smile. "I don't want to fight to the death with you. I just want to live in peace. Don't force me, or else, we will hide in the space crack together!"

An expert specialized in space power, when he decided to perish together, could be a nightmare of all enemies.

In the history of the Grace Mainland, there was a warrior cultivating space power. When he got besieged by many other experts, as he knew he couldn't escape, he paid a painful price of burning his soul to rupture the whole space, making many space slits to bury himself and all of his enemies.

Warriors who were cultivating space power, if they wanted to die together, could always drag the higher-realm opponents to death.

Of course, Comoros knew the evil feature of space power. When he was about to launch the second strike, he couldn't help but hesitate.

Right at this moment, Fiery Dragon suddenly barged in. He walked to the front of Shi Yan, cleared his throat, and then thundered. "You old man of the Ghost Mark Clan, Shi Yan is my distinguished guest. You shouldn't dream to mess up here! If you dare kill people here, I will make you lose your face!"

While Fiery Dragon was talking, he had returned to his true form. Fire flared up from his entire body. His horn was polished and shining, as his energy surged vehemently. As his scales moved, light waves rippled out like water. All made him look imposingly overwhelming like a divine beast.

Comoros' face got stiff. He dully looked at Fiery Dragon as his face became more grimaced. "You have also befriended him? Don't you know that he's human and you are a beast of the Monster Clan?"

"Of course, I know it." After Fiery Dragon had transformed, his voice was more echoing and rumbling, which could even slam people's eardrums. "I don't care about the Human Clan or the Ghost Mark Clan. Who can benefit me, that one is Fiery Dragon's friend!"

"Shameless!" Comoros was so indignant that he was shivering. "Do you still have any moral principles of the Monster Clan? You are a beast, but you are befriending a human! Do you know what you are doing?"

"Old man, don't babble. I must protect this kid!" Fiery Dragon didn't bother with him. "I know you have the Second Sky of True God Realm cultivation base, but you shouldn't think that you can do anything you want here. Muahahaha. Although I've just reached level 9, I'm not afraid of you. I think you can see my markings, right? Do you know how strong I am now?" Fiery Dragon was moving and shaking his body contentedly. Flame light expanded everywhere. He looked a bit narcissistic.

Comoros changed his complexion. He gritted his teeth indignantly, glaring at Shi Yan. "Wait for me!" Then, he turned around and disappeared like light gray smoke.

"Shi Yan, I've helped you threaten the strong enemy away. How do you prepare to thank me?" Fiery Dragon waved his tail, looking at Shi Yan delightedly, talking as if he was showing his merit. "You have to join us for that event...We have to go together. And, you have to agree to..."

"Got it," Shi Yan sighed. He shook his head as he felt amused. "Don't worry. I know my grudge and gratitude are different."

"You should prepare. We will go there shortly. It seems weird these days. Perhaps... perhaps the seal is about to break. You should be hurried," urged Fiery Dragon.

Shi Yan was surprised, as curiosity swelled in his heart.



# Chapter 625: Mirror Lake

---

After the great change of heaven and earth's energy, the sun, the moon, and the stars didn't take turns to shine in the sky anymore. More and more strange mysteries were found in this vast continent.

Alien tribes came out of nowhere and became the overlord of the whole continent. The previous rulers were chased away, and they could only retract their heads, hiding in the Secret Domain.

Human Clan declined while alien tribes thrived. The known rules were broken.

Many forbidden places became vital again, nurturing magical changes, making the Divine Great Land change further.

Ancient civilizations were unsealed, and refuged tribes returned. Many events, which shouldn't have occurred, revealed themselves one after another.

When Shi Yan listened to Fiery Dragon's description, he wasn't so surprised. Another place in the Divine Great Land had exposed its magical mysteries due to the change of heaven and earth.

Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame, and Silver-horned took the lead. They were really cautious, as they were afraid they could wake the Blood-maned Giant Ape in his territory. Shi Yan took precautions as well. He concealed his aura and calmed down his soul fluctuations, not daring to sense wantonly.

Blood-maned Giant Ape's level was higher than the Fiery Dragon. In the Perpetual Night Forest, he was a truly dangerous character. Among the beasts of the Monster Clan, his fame was impressive. Usually, no one dared to provoke him.

Of course, Shi Yan didn't want to fight to death with him.

Shi Yan wanted Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan to escort him. These two people had a profound cultivation base and various

experiences. They would be a big help on this trip.

Fiery Dragon didn't want that, but he had to agree begrudgingly.

Anyway, Fiery Dragon was a monster. It was hard for him to go with Shi Yan already. With Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan accompanying, when other members of the Monster Clan found that, it would be hard for him to establish good relationships with other beasts in the Perpetual Night Forest.

This group of human and monster moved forward. They avoided the beasts which submitted to the Blood-maned Giant Ape and took the way around to reach the target.

Half a day later, Fiery Dragon sighed as he took in the faint smell of water. "We're almost there."

Shi Yan was struck, his face smiling. "Seems we're lucky. We didn't encounter any henchmen of that Blood-maned Giant Ape. Otherwise, we would be in big trouble."

Fiery Dragon shot a strange light from his eyes, looking at Shi Yan oddly. "Hey... Do you...You want to meet Blood-maned, right?"

"Why do you say so?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"If he appears, perhaps you can form a good relationship with him. You want to refine his body, just like you did for me, right?" grunted Fiery Dragon.

Shi Yan was stunned. He smiled broadly. "Well, I do have this thought, but it isn't strong. I'm not sure if the Blood-maned Giant Ape could be like you. I don't know if he would agree to cooperate with human or not. Haha, I'm good, recently. As long as you and I cooperate well, I don't think I need to deal with Blood-maned."

The message hidden in his words was: If you don't cooperate with me well... I will find Blood-maned and make a deal with him.

Fiery Dragon wasn't stupid, and he understood that. He

mumbled for a while, then spoke up again, more solemnly. "Among the Monster Clan, there aren't many wise beasts like me. You shouldn't keep that thought in your head. Otherwise, you can't have anything, and you will hurt yourself, too."

"Of course, I know Master Fiery Dragon's the most practical beast, and you are the best ally." Shi Yan laughed.

Fiery Dragon knew Shi Yan actually didn't think what he said. But he ignored it, just laughing as if he had his own ideas.

Fiery Flame and Silver-horned were cautious enough not to intervene them. They kept their mouths shut, listening to the two's conversation. Light of anxiety sparkled in their eyes – Their bodies hadn't been refined yet, and they hadn't shed their mortal skin either. Of course, they didn't dare to cause grudge against Shi Yan. They just wanted to make the relationship between Shi Yan and Fiery Dragon the best.

"Over there," Fiery Dragon suddenly became tense, talking in a low tone. "Be careful. Although that Blood-maned Giant Ape won't check the place regularly, he does arrange guards. We have to avoid them with our best."

Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor nodded, indicating that they understood.

Everybody continued moving further.

All of a sudden, a beast corpse hindered their way.

That beast was around fifteen meters long. It was a giant snake, whose body was covered in flame pattern. The snake had a triangular head. The corpse laid on the ground, as its body was cut off into several pieces. Blood had dried for a long time.

At first glance, Silver-horned couldn't help but hiss maliciously. "Flame Patterned Viper."

"It didn't die because of fighting with another beast," Yang Tian Emperor frowned, scrutinizing the flat cut on the snake's body. He

affirmed, "A sharp weapon had chopped it off. Should be an excellent treasure."

"The Fire Patterned Viper is a level 7 beast, as strong as the Sky Realm warrior of Human Clan. As we can see it was killed so easily, its opponent was really tremendous," said Fiery Flame faintly.

"... Humans," Fiery Dragon discolored. He suddenly spoke up, "Someone is here. They are faster than us. That Flame Viper is the Blood-maned Giant Ape's underling. It guarded this place. It should be the humans who killed the snake."

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan darkened their faces, as a murderous aura expanded. Especially Di Shan, his malicious face distorted as if he were an enraged beast. People could even feel his resentment through his aura.

Talking about formidable humans in here, no doubt they were from the seven ancient factions.

These days, the seven ancient factions had been cruel to the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan. Many members of the Winged Clan were killed. Even Di Shan was hurt severely.

"Get in!" Shi Yan observed everywhere, then said coldly

Everybody continued their trip.

Not long after that, they saw more corpses of the beasts. According to Fiery Dragon, these beasts were the Blood-maned Giant Ape's henchmen. From the traces on the bodies, humans had killed them.

Their Demon Crystals had been snatched. Some were skinned, and some had their bones missing. Apparently, someone wanted to collect cultivating materials from their bodies.

Besides the Human Clan, who would do that?

Raging flame was burning in Fiery Dragon's, Fiery Flame's, and Silver-horned's eyes. They were near to the target, but they were

about to reach the limit.

As they were all beasts, although Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned didn't get along well, seeing their clansmen being killed tragically like that – their crystals were taken, along with their skin, their bones – of course, they felt indignant.

Shi Yan frowned, but he still kept silent.

Eventually, a crystal clear lake that looked like a big bright mirror appeared in their visions.

This lake was around ten mu (1 mu = 666.6667 m<sup>2</sup>). Luxuriant foliage grew densely around the lake. This calm lake looked like a flat mirror with no ripples. From a bird's eye view, they couldn't see things inside the lake, but only the reflected images.

Energy fluctuations were thick here. A faint fog meandered above the lake, and a fresh scent permeated everywhere that could ease people's minds.

Shi Yan walked to the lake and then floated aloft to observe. He couldn't see anything in the bottom of the lake, but only his reflected image. This lake was really a mirror with no ripple. Extremely weird.

"That's a strange barrier. No matter how hard you look, you can't see anything down there." Fiery Dragon flew toward him, explaining, "This lake is strange. I've tried to get in, but I was stopped. I couldn't jump down. Blood-maned has tried, too. Apparently, he didn't succeed. No one knows what stays in the bottom of this lake."

"Let me try," Yang Tian Emperor smiled as a thought rose in his head. A flying sword sparkled with cold light and stabbed towards the lake.

Swoosh!

The flying sword flashed, disappearing into the lake. However, it caused no ripple.

Yang Tian Emperor discolored in fright. He was astounded. "My connection with the flying sword was cut off directly!"

"Items without life can get through the lake and arrive at the bottom," Fiery Dragon mocked, "Do you want to try?"

"Okay," Yang Tian Emperor beamed a faint smile. An explosive energy fluctuation expanded from him instantly. His aura surged torrentially as he stormed towards the lake.

Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame, and Silver-horned jolted up in fear.

Yang Tian Emperor only had the Second Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base. However, when he burst out his power, his energy fluctuation weren't different from that of the Peak of Spirit Realm warriors.

Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame, and Silver-horned were all the hotshots of the Monster Clan. At first glance, they got to know the dangerous features of Yang Tian Emperor.

However, what surprised people more was still to come. Yang Tian Emperor was barging in like a sharp sword, but he was halted when he touched the lake surface. The tranquil lake was pushed inwards a little bit under such a furious impact.

Their eyes of Shi Yan and Di Shan shrank as they were all astounded.

Yang Tian Emperor's energy surged while his abundant aura rippled vehemently, as he was using the secret technique of the Yang family, balling his fist and pounding on the lake like a drilling machine. However, he couldn't break the seal.

"No use," Fiery Dragon shook his head. "You're strong, indeed... much stronger than I thought. But it won't work. Even Blood-maned had tried to break the seal here. At that time, he was at Rank 1 Level 9. He couldn't break it. So, you could never break it."

Yang Tian Emperor was dumbstruck. Then, he quit determinedly. He got back to Shi Yan's location and shook his

head. "Something's strange, indeed."

Shi Yan kept silent. He squinted, releasing his Soul Consciousness, trying to intrude the lake.

His Soul Consciousness hadn't even reached the lake, yet a tenacious force had swiped it away. Shi Yan couldn't get into the lake.

"The Purgatory True Flame is there. The one you know should be there, too." All of a sudden, the Ice Cold Flame sent him its soul thought. "The Earth Flame can pierce through this seal. That's the supple power of water. You can't forcefully get through. You can only gather the power of the fiery flame to make a passage."

Right after the Ice Cold Flame sent its thought to Shi Yan, his Soul Consciousness had sensed a faint heat from the lake. Shi Yan tried to sense further, then he could confirm it was the Purgatory True Flame.

Anyway, why was Ye Chang Feng in the lake? He couldn't figure it out. However, he didn't want to dig in further. Shi Yan summoned the Earth Flame and asked it to attack the supple power of the water.

# Chapter 626: The Star Original Essence

---

The Earth Flame was like a fire ribbon, burning the water of the lake.

It was strange that the water surface Yang Tian Emperor couldn't pierce through seemed to be melted under the scorching heat of the Earth Flame. Gradually, a fire path was formed in the middle of the tender lake.

Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame, and Silver-horned had their eyes brightened. They were excited.

Yang Tian Emperor smiled, looking at him with compliments.

"We can go now." As Shi Yan saw the seal of the lake was cracked, he nodded and then stormed over the fire path.

Fiery Dragon's group followed close behind him.

The place under the surface looked like a bright mirror.

After a dazzlingly bright layer, they met a wet, sluggish area. While Shi Yan hadn't adapted to the light yet, he heard some rumbling noises.

When he could see things clear again, Shi Yan found himself in a strange underwater world. He was floating in a deep blue area, and there was a glorious bright space above his head. The world in this lake was multiple times bigger than the lake itself.

They didn't see any sea monsters or fishes in this underwater world, only some sparse seaweed and algae.

So many stones radiated dazzlingly on the bottom of the lake. Energy fluctuations rippled densely.

Top-grade Essence Crystals!

At first glance, Shi Yan couldn't help but shout joyfully. He was overjoyed.



Essence Crystals were the foundation of the warriors. With Essence Crystals, warriors didn't need to depend on heaven and earth's spiritual Qi to cultivate. The top-grade Essence Crystal was scarce. Each piece was the essential auxiliary material to refine secret treasures. Normally, the Essence Crystal was generated in the deep place of the Essence Crystal mineral lode, as it was the best quintessence.

Top-grade Essence Crystals were everywhere on the bottom of the lake. Shi Yan made a sketchy count, and he found that there were no less than ten thousand pieces!

Ten thousand Essence Crystals! Even if the Yang family, which was a super strong force in the Endless Sea, sold all their cultivating materials, it wasn't worth the number of the Essence Crystals in this area.

That's why Shi Yan didn't think much. He wanted to collect them immediately.

Boom Boom Boom!

Fierce energy impact came from not far from them. Even the water of the lake couldn't hide these terrifying noises.

Shi Yan discolored. He woke up from the joy of the top-grade Essence Crystals, remembering the reason why he came down here.

At this moment, Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame, Silver-horned, Yang Tian Emperor, and Di Shan arrived. They stood next to Shi Yan, looking at the Essence Crystals around the place, taking a deep breath.

The Earth Flame turned into a small flame, sinking into the Blood Vein Ring.

"So many top-grade Essence Crystals! Unbelievable! Unbelievable!" Yang Tian Emperor couldn't restrain his joy. He laughed, "It's fate. It's our fate!"

"Someone got here before us," Fiery Dragon grunted a reminder.

Boom Boom Boom!

Furious explosions echoed again. Yang Tian Emperor and Fiery Dragon became frightened, turning around to look at the direction where the explosion arose.

Shi Yan didn't dare to linger. He darted away like a lightning strike.

The lake surged. Pieces of top-grade Essence Crystals were smashed into chips, releasing thick energy. Rays of light interweaved in front of them. They could see two silhouettes fighting furiously.

One of them was obviously not human. His body was covered in a bloody mane. Each of his hair was like a steel needle, around one meter long. From a distant, he looked like a giant hedgehog. His breath was incomparably savage.

Fighting him was a human, a slender man. His black hair were pinned up. He looked no more than forty years old, handsome and generous. He was holding a gold square stone in his hand, which gave people the imposing manner of a great mountain.

Although these two experts were fighting in the water, the water didn't affect them. Each strike they launched could smash the entire mountain, generating an earth-shaking impact.

While they were fighting, light shot out bursting off the top-grade Essence Crystals. This energy was more dangerous than the most savage fish in the water. It extended vastly to the furthest area of the lake.

Three rays of dark blue light shot out like the three sharpest arrows; the explosive force they were carrying was enough to crush the beast's flesh body.

"It's Blood-maned!" Fiery Dragon became ruthless. He grunted with a malicious look. "This bastard has come here one step ahead

of us! I wonder who he's fighting with."

"Chu Bai Qing," Yang Tian Emperor knitted his eyebrows, looking at Shi Yan. "That man is Chu Bai Qing, the Head Master of the Chu family of the Heaven Temple. He has the First Sky of True God Realm cultivation base, a dangerous warrior. When we arrived in the Perpetual Night Forest, this man wanted to kill the entire Dark Devil Clan, the Winged Clan, and... he wanted to take that chance to kill the Yang family, too!"

When Yang Tian Emperor was talking, he looked calm. However, the wicked thought in his eyes was hard to be concealed.

Di Shan didn't talk, but his eyes showed his resentment as vast as a sea.

Shi Yan's face became gloomy. He nodded, "I understand. We have some revenge we need to take."

"Thank you," Di Shan bent his body, his face grateful.

Chu Bai Qing had the First Sky of True God Realm cultivation base, which was considered the leading competence in the whole seven ancient factions.

Shi Yan had only the Second Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base, and he had no expert strong enough to resist Chu Bai Qing accompanying him. Although he knew the other's competence, he didn't hesitate to express that he would take justice for the Winged Race. His deed made Di Shan understand that he didn't choose the wrong master.

"Yeah?" Shi Yan was stirred up, looking at a big stone in the lake bottom ahead of them.

Four figures appeared behind that big stone. Shi Yan knew three of them; they were Li Zhen Rong, Ye Chang Feng, Ning Du Quan, along with a strange old woman, whose wrinkles crawled like worms on her face. However, that old woman had the Third Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base.

When Ye Chang Feng saw Shi Yan, he couldn't help but scream.

Li Zheng Rong gawked with a surprised complexion. He pulled Ye Chang Feng, dashing towards Shi Yan.

Ning Du Quan was talking with the old woman, so he didn't pay attention. When he found that Li Zheng Rong and Ye Chang Feng had moved abruptly, he looked up to see. His face changed immediately to be more gloomy and grim.

A walnut-sized water drop was levitating above the place where Blood-maned and Chu Bai Qing were fighting. That drop didn't merge with the water of the lake, but maintained its complete shape, sparkling in a miraculous white halo. It looked magnificent like a star in the sea water.

The fluid inside the drop was scarce, but it was murmuring, releasing a magical soul fluctuation.

It seemed this drop had its own life.

The brutal fight between Blood-maned and Chu Bai Qing seemed to be because of this magical water drop. While they were battling with each other, they sometimes observed the drop discreetly, as if they were afraid it would disappear into thin air all of a sudden.

"Shi Yan! Shi Yan!" Ye Chang Feng called him while dashing towards this area. Li Zheng Rong turned his head from time to time to check the situation of Ning Du Quan and that old woman. He seemed to be afraid that these two would attack them.

"Watch out. We are encountering enemies!" Shi Yan let out a light shout, talking to Fiery Dragon, Fiery Flame, and Silver-horned. "Those humans over there have some grudges against me. I'm not sure what's going to happen. Even if we don't take action, the others won't let us go easily."

Fiery Dragon glared at Ning Du Quan and the old woman. He didn't bother with them. "Just two Spirit Realm warriors... No need to worry. If they dare to come, I'll help you solve them."

Shi Yan smiled, shaking his head. "No need. We have enough power to counter them... However, if that True God Realm expert attacks us, I hope you will help us to resist him."

"... That guy?" Fiery Dragon shook his head, laughing evilly. "No need for me to take action. Blood-maned will teach him well. He has killed so many of his henchmen, Blood-maned won't let him go that easy."

Shi Yan nodded and calmed down his tense nerves.

Li Zheng Rong and Ye Chang Feng rushed to Shi Yan.

"What's going on?" Shi Yan asked without waiting for them to speak up. "Why are you here? What have you found? What is in this area?"

He asked without keeping his manners. After throwing Li Zheng Rong and Ye Chang Feng a glance, his eyes gazed at Chu Bai Qing. He advised, "Release your soul defense. We should be careful in case that man attacks us."

After he had finished, both Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong changed their complexions, starting to prepare the defense immediately

Fiery Dragon, Di Shan, Fiery Flame, and Silver-horned didn't move. No matter it was the Demon Clan or the Monster Clan, their soul defense was naturally much outstanding than the Human Clan. Perhaps Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor couldn't bear the soul attack of the True God Realm warriors, but it couldn't kill Fiery Dragon or Di Shan instantly.

"Chu Bai Qing invited us to accompany him," Li Zheng Rong frowned after he had fished the soul defense. "Chang Feng has the Purgatory True Flame. They needed the heaven flame to break the seal here. That's why we're here."

"Why did they come here?" inquired Shi Yan.

"We didn't know," Li Zheng Rong grimaced. "But now we know."

It's because of the Soul Washing Divine Water."

"Soul Washing Divine Water? What is that?" Shi Yan was stunned. He pointed at the water drop and asked, "That water... drop?"

"Yes. Soul Washing Divine Water is similar to the Life Original Fluid, which is one of the three kinds of divine water. It could wash a contaminated soul to make it crystal clear. This would help accelerate the understanding process of power Upanishads. And, it would prevent the warrior from falling in bedevilment." Li Zheng Rong explained and then shouted. "Not only he has the Soul Washing Divine Water but also the Star Original Essence!" His bright eyes gazed at Shi Yan as he suddenly asked, "I heard that you have the Star Martial Spirit?"

Shi Yan nodded in surprise. "Yeah?"

"The Star Original Essence is the best essence part of a star in the sky. If you can absorb the Star Original Essence into your Star Martial Spirit, I think... your martial spirit will have a breakthrough!" Li Zheng Rong said affirmatively.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan were petrified. They were both surprised and happy at the same time. "How can we take it?"

"Kill Chu Bai Qing first!" Ye Chang Feng suddenly intervened, his face malicious. "He wanted to kill my teacher and me. If that beast hadn't come, we would have been killed."

# Chapter 627: If we want to do it, leave no room for maneuver!

---

For people who wouldn't bother keeping rules and codes of ethics, destroying the bridge after crossing the river wasn't a mental barrier. It was just normal.

Especially, when the benefit was big enough, everything would become more reasonable.

Soul Washing Divine Water and the Star Original Essence were the rarest treasures in this world. Even the True God Realm warriors might not have a chance to see them, not to mention having them.

When such a chance presented in front of them, Chu Bai Qing and Ning Du Quan, the warriors of the Heaven Temple, wouldn't have much hesitation before killing their pathfinders.

Poor Li Zheng Rong and Ye Chang Feng. As the key to open the seal, the other two hadn't killed them yet, because they needed to deal with the Blood-maned Giant Ape first.

Shi Yan now understood why Li Zheng Rong had to be cautious watching Ning Du Quan and the old woman behind his back while he was dashing toward him.

Turned out he was afraid that Ning Du Quan and the old woman would take risks and kill them first.

"Kill Chu Bai Qing first!" Ye Chang Feng gritted his teeth. Resentment was as deep as the ocean showing on his face.

Shi Yan could understand his feeling. However, he didn't answer immediately, just keeping silent.

"Shi Yan, will you help me or not?" As Ye Chang Feng saw him not replying, his face grimaced, his eyes bright and sharp.

Li Zheng Rong didn't talk much while his face darkened.

He had told Shi Yan the magical functions of the Soul Washing Divine Water and the Star Original Essence to trigger him to help him solve this problem.

When they were still in the Dead Soul Mountain Range, Li Zheng Rong had treated Shi Yan not too badly. The old man thought that he had to get along well with Shi Yan. Added with the relationship between Shi Yan and Ye Chang Feng, Li Zheng Rong thought that Shi Yan would give them a hand.

Even if not because of him, with the attractive weight of the Star Original Essence, Shi Yan would never resist. However, Shi Yan kept silent, which made him feel anxious as he couldn't guess what Shi Yan was thinking.

At the bottom of the lake, Ning Du Quan and the old woman had their eyes glistened uncertainly. They seemed to be preparing themselves discreetly.

"I have a deep resentment with Ning Du Quan," Shi Yan's complexion was faint as he was talking neither slow nor fast. "Of course, I'm going to help you. I just need to think about which method to use to kill all of them. Once we take action, we will leave no room for anyone to escape. Or else, the aftermath wouldn't be something we can imagine."

Chu Bai Qing and Ning Du Quan were the disciples of the Heaven Temple. Although he didn't know the old woman's identity, he assumed she was from the Heaven Temple too.

If all the three of them were killed, it was easy to arrange. However, if one of them escaped, it would be hard to tell whether the Heaven Temple would get out of the Secret Domain and hunt them or not. They needed to consider this problem carefully.

Shi Yan wasn't alone anymore. The Yang family, the Shi family, the Cao family, and the Yin Yang Fairyland were dependent on him, so were the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan. He couldn't just ignore everything and run away alone.



Giving the Heaven Temple a reason to let many warriors get out of the Secret Domain and attack his side, Shi Yan had to ask himself whether he could resist such a force or not?

If he stayed with the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan and killed Chu Bai Qing's group, Yun Hao of the Radiant God Cult would have had no way to help him out. With their current force, they couldn't resist the Heaven Temple face to face.

"Shi Yan's right," Li Zheng Rong sighed quietly, his face solemn. "If we want to kill them, we can't make any mistake. If we want to do it, leave no room for maneuver!"

"Does anybody else know that you guys are coming here?" Shi Yan was a bit hesitant, asking immediately.

"No," Li Zheng Rong shook his head, "Chu Bai Qing wanted to keep this place for himself. Of course, he wouldn't tell anybody else. I'm sure no one else knows about this."

"Good!" Shi Yan finally showed his bloody fangs. He talked to Fiery Dragon resolutely. "You have to help me with this. At first, you just need to get rid of the competition with the Blood-maned Giant Ape. You should join us and help us kill them. After we can kill all of them, we will discuss the other business, okay? If you bear any loss, I'll compensate."

"No problem!" Fiery Dragon grinned, rubbing his hands. "Although Blood-maned and I don't get along well, those bastards killed my fellows. They had taken the bones and skinned them. Of course, I won't just stand and stare. The Monster Clan has rules. Even if we hate each other, facing this operation, we will unite as one."

"Then it's easy." Shi Yan smiled, as cold as a sharp blade. A streak of blood rose in his eyes. "We will solve Ning Du Quan and that old woman first. Fiery Dragon, you are in charge of that True God Realm human expert. Don't let him escape shortly."

"Chu Bai Qing has the True God Realm cultivation base, so he should have his God Soul now. I think when he sees the situation getting worse, he will use the God Soul to run away." Li Zheng Rong was cheered up, but then he remembered this feature.

"He'd better not to let his God Soul leave the body. Or else... I'll show him how stupid he is to let his God Soul escape in front of me!" Shi Yan grinned evilly and fiendishly.

Li Zheng Rong's eyes brightened. He asked happily, "You have it?"

"Yes," Shi Yan nodded. "Don't worry, everybody. If he let his God Soul out, it's gonna be the decision he will regret the most for the rest of his sorry life."

Ye Chang Feng was cheered up, smiling coldly.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan were eager to try. They started to accumulate their power quietly, preparing to attack at any minute.

Previously, Chu Bai Qing's group always wanted to kill the Yang family, the Dark Devil Clan, and the Winged Clan. Members of the Heaven Temple took a big part in the seven ancient factions' hotshots who had sneaked out of the Secret Domain to slaughter the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan.

"Fiery Dragon, you attack them first. As long as Chu Bai Qing is restrained, we will attack the others. After we kill the other two, we will support you immediately. You must hold Chu Bai Qing down!"

"Okay!" Fiery Dragon didn't change his face, giving an order to Fiery Flame and Silver-horned. "When I launch my attack, you guys shouldn't stay idle. Help them to kill these two humans."

Fiery Flame and Silver-horned nodded heavily. "They've killed our fellows savagely. We will take their blood to repay our fellows' blood!"

"You can pretend to attack Blood-maned first. Then, you seize the chance and attack Chu Bai Qing. If you can deceive Blood-maned, too, it's the best." Shi Yan suddenly suggested a cunning tactic.

Fiery Dragon was surprised. He glared at Shi Yan oddly. "You humans are so cunning, indeed." Then, he roared, turning into a scorching shadow and lunging towards Blood-maned and Chu Bai Qing.

Although Blood-maned and Chu Bai Qing were fighting with each other, they quietly retreated a part of their power to take precaution. They were waiting for the flaming dragon.

Blood-maned and Chu Bai Qing had recognized Fiery Dragon before. While they were battling, they had observed Fiery Dragon discreetly. But they didn't expect Fiery Dragon to jump into their battle.

These two were both frightened. Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon were rivals, so he was afraid that Fiery Dragon would attack him.

Chu Bai Qing was more anxious. Fiery Dragon was a member of the Monster Clan, so of course, he would support his monster fellow. As Fiery Dragon hadn't made any moves, he had relaxed a little bit. However, he still kept an eye on the situation.

Blood-man's and Chu Bai Qing's powers were almost the same. No matter what side Fiery Dragon chose to join, the other side would fall into a bad situation, which would overturn the entire balance. They were all afraid of his involvement, so they had to save part of their power just in case.

ROOOAAARRR!

Blood-maned released a terrifying roar. Gold light shot out from his eyes as he thundered indignantly. "Fiery Dragon, you bastard! You dare attack me! Although we're rivals, if you join humans, the entire Monster Clan will disdain you!"

After Fiery Dragon had let out a dragon roar, a bunch of red

energy shot out from the sole horn on his head, locking Blood-maned. That's why the ape got enraged and scolded him.

Chu Bai Qing was tense. Hearing Blood-maned cursing, he was overjoyed. He laughed and then released the pressure from the square stone, striking on Blood-maned.

While he and Blood-maned were engaging in the battle, he was always in a disadvantaged situation. He wasn't so sure about this fight. However, as he discovered the Fiery Dragon was the archenemy of the Blood-maned Giant Ape, he had an extreme joy that couldn't be explained.

'God helps me! The Soul Washing Divine Water, the Star Original Essence, and the materials from the body of the two level 9 beasts! My breakthrough to the Second Sky of True God Realm finally has a hope!'

Chu Bai Qing was excited. As he was envisioning the best picture, he felt even his pores were refreshed. He shouted and attempted to join Fiery Dragon to kill Blood-maned.

Fiery Dragon shouted indignantly. The sole horn on his head rippled magical energy waves. While he was in his beast form, each scale on his body was rattling like leaves on an ancient tree. Waves of raging, blazing energy bloomed out from the dragon's body.

Blood-maned screeched and thundered. He panted and avoided Chu Bai Qing temporarily, shifting his target to Fiery Dragon.

He had recognized the Fiery Dragon today wasn't like the dragon in the past. The energy rippling from his body was robust and intimidating. The dragon's body that Shi Yan had refined was pushing Blood-maned, as if he were facing a tremendous enemy. He had to counter the giant dragon with full caution.

Although the Monster Clan had a scale of levels, the beast's competence didn't depend on the level.

However, the way the Monster Clan fought wasn't similar to

human. They didn't rely solely on their energy, rather the robust body. During the fighting, the beast's grand body could compensate its shortage of energy.

Apparently, Blood-maned had discovered the strange features of Fiery Dragon. He recognized that Fiery Dragon, the dragon that used to be one level lower than him, was now not weaker than him, even a bit.

Moreover, Fiery Dragon was a member of the Monster Clan, but he had broken the rules and joined the human side to attack him. This burned the raging fire in his heart, soaring to the sky. So, at first, he needed to press down Fiery Dragon's imposing pressure.

When Fiery Dragon was passing Chu Bai Qing, his long tail, covered in thick scales, suddenly swept through, releasing many scarlet flames as though hundreds of blacksmiths were pounding their iron hammers on the stone table. His long tail directly hit the invisible defensive cage of Chu Bai Qing.

Boom!

Chu Bai Qing was so surprised he couldn't react on time. The power of his body had been accumulated on the square stone, so the power that remained in the cage was limited. Instantly, his invisible cage broke into countless light dots, scattering everywhere.

Chu Bai Qing was blown a thousand meters away underwater. Blood covered his body.

He had never thought that Fiery Dragon would use this method to strike him.

In people's thoughts, although the beasts had intellect, they weren't so cunning and wicked... Thus, the big price he had to pay for his wrong calculation was his badly wounded body!

# Chapter 628: Kill him!

---

In fact, Fiery Dragon didn't have such a concept. Without Shi Yan's wicked tactic, Fiery Dragon could never think about such a treatment for Chu Bai Qing.

Chu Bai Qing wasn't wrong when he acted according to the common knowledge of the Monster Clan. Anyway, he hadn't counted Shi Yan, the one who planned everything behind Fiery Dragon. That was why he got hurt in just a blink.

Blood-maned also fell into a daze.

When Blood-maned was roaring and screeching as he was about to attack the dragon, he suddenly found Fiery Dragon's target had been changed. Chu Bai Qing wanted to cooperate with Fiery Dragon to kill him, but he got hurt while he didn't put up guard towards his 'partner.' This also stunned Blood-maned.

"F\*ck that! Your daddy here and you come from the same Clan. How could I join the foreigner and deal with you? That a\*shole has killed so many members of our clan. Well, drawing bones and taking tendons! I have to kill him first! We will talk about our matter later!" Fiery Dragon thundered and then crazily stormed towards Chu Bai Qing again.

Blood-maned was astounded, but then, he shouted, "You f\*cking Fiery Dragon! I didn't think that you are so mean and shameless! But I like it!"

The giant ape roared, and then just like Fiery Dragon, his furious attacks changed their directions, dashing towards Chu Bai Qing. His body was radiant in a gold halo, while a power as sharp as a sword tip surged.

When Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned joined hands, it was the announcement of Chu Bai Qing's defeat, especially when he had been hurt severely.

Ning Du Quan and the old woman stood behind a big stone watching the fight. They had planned everything, but the wind had changed now. They were all startled in fright.

Ning Du Quan and the old woman discolored as they figured out that they were now the targets. They wanted to run away with grimaced countenances.

"Kill them first!" Shi Yan released the War Devil, giving it a cold order. He pointed at Ning Du Quan and the old woman. "Be careful. Don't let them run away using Escape Technique!"

The War Devil flew out.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, Fiery Flame, and Silvered-horned flew after the puppet. They shot away like lightning strikes. In just a blink, they had reached Ning Du Quan and the old woman, starting to strike them with deadly attacks.

Ye Chang Feng didn't move, watching the scene with a happy face.

Shi Yan didn't move either. He narrowed his eyes, moving his Soul Consciousness quietly. He was urging different kinds of powers to create Gravitational Field at the bottom of the lake. Then, he used his soul to manipulate it, striking towards Ning Du Quan and the old woman.

Flows of Soul Consciousness added with space power flew and interweaved rapidly inside the Gravitational Field, affecting space there and creating a distorted, chaotic space.

This was the Breaking Escape Technique he had studied for a long time to create!

Most of the Escape Techniques, which could jump ten thousand li away instantly, needed to cross space to do that. If space had an anomaly and became unsteady, when someone used this technique to run away, he or she would receive the space power backlash, which would kill that person tragically.

Flows of Soul Consciousness moved fast in that Gravitational Field, making the area shake disorderly. Vaguely, they could see some tiny space slits.

Ning Du Quan and the old woman were sensitive enough to realize the change of space around them. Eventually, they grimaced with a great insecure feeling.

"Ning Du Quan!" Li Zheng Rong roared indignantly. "Didn't you want to kill us? You're a shameless b\*stard! I will show you what's called despair!"

It was Ning Du Quan's idea to trigger Chu Bai Qing to kill them. While Chu Bai Qing was fighting with Blood-maned, Ning Du Quan was watching Li Zheng Rong to prevent him from running away.

That was why Li Zheng Rong hated him to the bones!

"Hey, Ning Old Dog, long time no see!" Shi Yan laughed oddly from a distance. "I couldn't destroy you in the Ice Emperor City, so I'm going to kill you today then! If you dare, use the Escape Technique. Haha, I really want to see the chaotic space crush you into dust. How magnificent it would be! Hahaha!"

"Cool!" Ye Chang Feng shouted, laughing refreshingly as he finally vented out his resentment.

"Little dog, you would never have a decent death! The seven ancient factions will kill you! I swear on my soul!" Ning Du Quan screeched as if his insanity had burst out. He turned to the old woman, "Move! We will break out with all that we got!"

Whistle Whistle!

A block of absolute darkness slowly appeared at the bottom of the lake. A formidable suction force came from that darkness, as if it could swallow everything.

But the strange thing was, the water in the lake didn't flow towards that area. However, Ning Du Quan and the old woman were panic-stricken. They felt their souls were entangled with



black smoke, feeling restless.

That was the power Upanishad of the War Devil – Corrosive Darkness.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan seized the chance to storm towards them like strong beasts, with a crazy, brutal momentum.

"Explode!" shouted Yang Tian Emperor. His palms cracked open. Blood-red energy gushed out furiously, carrying the power of the Blood Ghost that Yang Tian Emperor had perceived. This blow could explode the opponent's flesh body into pieces.

Di Shan's black wings shivered slightly. Many feathers condensed by pure energy shot out like a shower of arrows, which puzzled people's vision. This attack seemed to freeze even the water current in the lake!

Fiery Flame and Silvered-horned stood on the right and left respectively in their beast form to block the exit of the two desperados.

If Ning Du Quan's group wanted to flee away from two sides, they would never avoid the crazy bombarding of Fiery Flame and Silvered-horned.

The bursting power of a level 8 beast was enough to rip off Ning Du Quan and the old woman on the spot!

Li Zheng Rong halted. After that, he threw out the rings on his fingers one by one. They flashed, then many treasures flew out, striking towards Ning Du Quan's team.

Li Zheng Rong was a Sacred Grade alchemist. He had lived in the Dead Soul Mountain Range for many years, which gave him the chance to collect countless rare and precious treasures, each of them being a Sacred Grade treasure. The fighting tactic that depended on secret treasures was the most dangerous.

Light shot out from treasures, flooding the entire area. However, their energy fluctuations were different. The treasures locked the

two, while some of them even intruded their souls directly, giving them a deep insecure feeling rising from the bottom of their hearts.

War Devil, Di Shan, Yang Tian Emperor, Li Zheng Rong, Fiery Flame, and Silvered-horned were equal to the force of five experts at the same level as them. Among them, Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan alone were enough to defeat the two. And, the flooding treasures tactic of Li Zheng Rong was giving people a big headache, along with the giant body of Fiery Flame and Silvered-horned blocking the way. This battle was determined right before it started.

If Shi Yan didn't use his space power to disorder space, the other two would have used the Escape Technique to run away and vent a chance to survive.

However, Shi Yan had cut off their only hope!

Puff Puff!

The fearful noise of cutting flesh and bones arose from Ning Du Quan and the old woman's position. Next, they saw cut limbs flying across the area. Blood splashed everywhere. The thick smell of blood couldn't be hidden in water as it diffused with the water.

They couldn't even release their souls.

Shi Yan had prepared the Soul Gathering Pearl already, waiting in silence. However, he saw their souls being crushed instantly, turning into light smoke that naked eyes couldn't see, vanishing in the water of the lake.

Swoosh!

The Soul Gather Pearl still flew out, using its best to gather the smoke of their souls, which had been divided into so many different flows, before they vanished.

Ning Du Quan and the old woman had both their souls and bodies perished.

Everybody was cheered up. They couldn't hold their strange smiles, storming towards Chu Bai Qing.

Chu Bai Qing was struggling hard dispiritedly. He couldn't do anything but retreat. Blood gushed from his body, and his face was as pallid as paper sheets.

"Don't let him run away!" Shi Yan shouted. He started to gather his Soul Consciousness power, making the soul sabers strengthened with space power. Those sabers then stabbed towards Chu Bai Qing, making the space disordered again.

At the same time, the Gravitational Field, which prevented Ning Du Quan from using Escape Technique, swiftly changed its position, moving towards Chu Bai Qing.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, Fiery Flame, and Silvered-horned released their best strikes to restrain Chu Bai Qing as they heard Shi Yan.

The War Devil didn't care whether Chu Bai Qing would use a trick to kill both of them. The puppet got to the area and urged his power of darkness one more time.

Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon stood next to him. These two formidable existences of the Monster Clan had a body that was even stronger than iron. As they weren't afraid of Chu Bai Qing's bursting, they still bombarded the poor man, using their giant bodies to seize more room and narrow his operating space.

Shi Yan didn't join the battle. He was using his Soul Consciousness to distort the space, applying his new cognition of the space energy.

Flows of his Soul Consciousness were moving like invisible blades, cutting the space in the lake. They then saw the streams appear in the bottom of the lake. They were the traces of where his Soul Consciousness had glided through.

Not long afterward, there were hundreds of streams like that

next to Chu Bai Qing. These streams didn't have any operational rules. They were changing and joining each other constantly, creating the impact that could affect the space here.

Shi Yan was filled with joy as he realized that his control of space power was getting more exquisite.

The chance when one didn't need to worry about the counterattack of a True God Realm expert, and could use the strongest attack to kill the opponent, came once in a blue moon.

Shi Yan seized the chance and quenched his space power, turning his knowledge into a real attack. During the fighting, he understood the movement of space and the traces of space power, which helped him take another step in understanding the mysteries of space power.

Rumble Rumble Rumble!

Different energies, treasures, lights, and flames exploded, shelling towards Chu Bai Qing. Chu Bai Qing had to dodge with all of his abilities. However, he got hurt continually, and he couldn't resist any longer.

His face distorted evilly. Begrudgingly, his God Soul got out of his body. A feeble phantom slowly flew out from his body. Then, it moved swiftly like lightning in order to escape the lake bottom.

"I've been waiting for you for so long!" Shi Yan grinned fiendishly. A powerful suction force appeared from the Soul Gathering Pearl, which aimed at the souls especially.

At that moment, Chu Bai Qing's God Soul was like it was coiled by many tentacles. He struggled hard, releasing the screeches of the soul. But he was dragged towards the Soul Gathering Pearl little by little. He had no means to avoid this force.

Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong were the experts with secret treasures and soul attacks. They took this chance to create more pressure on Chu Bai Qing's soul, making it flicker like a dying

flame.

Swoosh!

Finally, Chu Bai Qing's God Soul couldn't resist anymore. The Soul Gathering Pearl got it immediately.

Shi Yan laughed crazily, snatching the pearl. The Soul Gathering Pearl returned to his hand. Chu Bai Qing's God Soul had turned into gray smoke, dispersing gradually.

# Chapter 629: Everyone takes a step back

---

The Soul Gathering Pearl was the crystal of a Soul Swallowing beast, the most eccentric beast in this world. The Soul Swallowing Beast was good at seizing souls. Of course, its crystal had inherited this ability perfectly.

All souls had weaknesses that people could use to take them. Once the soul left the body, it became feeble. The God Soul was agile; it could flash and disappear instantly. If it weren't restrained right when it left the body, it was hard to capture and destroy it. The Soul Gathering Pearl's best feature was that it could release an intense suction force whenever it sensed the aura of the soul. It could act quickly, leaving the souls no chance to escape.

This toy was made to aim at souls.

When souls didn't detach from the bodies, this toy's effect wasn't significant. It was easy to destroy this bead too. However, when a soul didn't have a body to host it, it would become this bead's prey.

Chu Bai Qing's God Soul was now a cluster of gray air, seized inside the Soul Gathering Pearl. The wise God Soul had turned into something gray and dull. The soul's memories were gradually scattered.

To purify a warrior's soul to the degree that the other warrior could absorb it, the soul seal, the memories, every feeling, and events of life should be cleaned.

After that, the soul would be crystal clear, and be able to be absorbed.

However, a soul that could survive and exist wasn't only because of the soul energy, but also the knowledge, memory and the traces of life. When these things were washed away, one's Life Original Seal would disappear, which meant both his body and soul had perished.

In order words, Chu Bai Qing was over, and he could never gather his Soul Seal again.

Holding the Soul Gathering Pearl in his hand, Shi Yan was contented. He gazed at the pure black pearl for a while, releasing his Soul Consciousness to sense. Afterward, he retrieved his Soul Consciousness with a smile.

Chu Bai Qing was an expert at the True God Realm anyway; his soul was the formidable God Soul. The Soul Gathering Pearl needed time to crush and filter his God Soul thoroughly. Shi Yan understood this well.

Ning Du Quan, Chu Bai Qing, and the old woman were killed directly with quick and wicked attacks. Afterward, the lake restored its quiet ambiance.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, War Devil, and Li Zheng Rong returned, standing next to him. All of them were excited with a smiling face.

"I didn't expect it to be so easy. Shi Yan, what did you use to capture even the God Soul?" Li Zheng Rong relaxed, as warm smiles filled his fat face. "You, kiddo, you aren't ordinary at all. Every time I meet you, I find out that I can't see through you."

"The beast crystal of the Soul Swallowing Beast, specialized in dealing with souls," Shi Yan beamed a faint smile.

"Soul Gathering Pearl!" Li Zheng Rong was frightened. He discolored. "The Soul Swallowing Beast is the most cunning and wicked beast in the world. You have its crystal! Wow, it's what everybody desires!" He knew the secrets of the Soul Swallowing Beast. This beast grew up by devouring souls of creatures. It was really dangerous.

"I thought you would use the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame," Ye Chang Feng grinned brightly. "You do have many tricks. It's cool, mate!"

Ye Chang Feng had the Purgatory True Flame. The heaven flames could sense each other. He had a sharp knowledge of Shi Yan's heaven flames, and the features of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame. When Shi Yan told everybody he had the method to deal with Chu Bai Qing's God Soul, he wasn't so surprised.

Shi Yan just smiled, but he didn't explain. After the battle with the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame went dormant. Seemed like it was carrying out its living form transformation. As Shi Yan had used his host soul to sense, he realized it wasn't a simple process.

Even if he could use the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, he wouldn't use it. After the Soul Gathering Pearl purified Chu Bai Qing's God Soul, it would become a pure soul that he could absorb. Such good benefit shouldn't be wasted by burning it to ashes, right?

When he was talking with Li Zheng Rong and Ye Chang Feng, Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned were breathing heavily and talking with each other not far from him. After the two had joined hands and killed Chu Bai Qing, they took a short break and then started to provoke each other.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned had a grudge because Blood-maned used to bully the dragon when his level was still low.

Blood-maned wanted to make Fiery Dragon his henchman, but Fiery Dragon had denied him. Blood-maned thought that this dragon didn't appreciate his favor, so he had given Fiery Dragon a lesson while he was still young. This was carved deep in the Fiery Dragon's memory. He always treated Blood-maned as his enemy. He always wanted to be stronger, to then find Blood-maned to take his pride back.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned had accelerated from provoking to a bigger rage. Their face reddened, their breathing severe and



ominous. They seemed to want to fight.

Fiery Dragon was afraid of Blood-maned, but it was the old story. Since Shi Yan had refined his body, Fiery Dragon could feel his power had skyrocketed. Now, he wasn't afraid of Blood-maned's cultivation base, which was one level higher than his. As they were quarreling, he wanted to vent his anger out eventually.

Shi Yan looked at the further area as his mind was flickering. He laughed, then flew toward the two beasts while shouting, "You guys!"

Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon were about to attack each other. But on hearing his call, they stopped and looked at him bewilderedly.

"Shi Yan, I don't need your support in the fight between Blood-maned and me. Our battle won't require external help." Fiery Dragon was astounded, as he thought that Shi Yan wanted to help him. He shook his head continually and denied resolutely. "I believe Blood-maned can't hurt me this time."

Blood-maned had gold mane covering his entire body. Each hair of his was like a gold, pointy needle. In this lake bottom, he looked like a small gold mountain with a sharp aura.

His eyes filled with fighting will gazed at Shi Yan. He didn't take action immediately but muttered to himself. "This kid is the one who gave the cunning tactic to Fiery Dragon. Such shameless rouge! You humans are all the same!"

"Without Shi Yan's plan, could we kill that True God Realm human that fast? You b\*stard, don't act like you gain nothing from this. Ungrateful!" Fiery Dragon was equally foul-mouthed.

"You two, don't rush," Shi Yan beamed a faint smile and then nodded with Blood-maned. "Haven't you found the new change of Fiery Dragon? Do you know how it happened?"

Fiery Dragon couldn't help but shout. "Shi Yan!"

"There are so many magical things in this lake bottom. If you two fight now, both of you will lose something." Shi Yan gave a deep look to Fiery Dragon. "Moreover, this is Blood-maned's territory. We can't do things behind his back. Your grudge isn't something you have to risk your lives for. I know you Monster Clan isn't a narrow-minded race. Everyone take a step back, and we all gain benefits from this. Won't we be all happy in the end?"

Fiery Dragon kept silent, as though he was considering Shi Yan's words.

His body, even after Shi Yan had quenched it already, had only the same strength as Blood-maned's. Killing him was impossible. Otherwise, he wouldn't need to be too cautious along the way here, as he had been trying to avoid Blood-maned.

Today, Blood-maned was also present underwater, and he couldn't avoid him. If things accelerated, he and Blood-maned had to experience another bloody fight.

Shi Yan's competence wasn't bad, which had been proven when they killed Chu Bai Qing's group. Even if Shi Yan didn't get involved in their battle, he would still feel insecure.

Thus, if he wanted to initiate this fight, nothing would be good for him.

Blood-maned was quite excited. He seemed to be curious. "Do you know how that Fiery Dragon's body changed?" He really concerned this matter.

"I did that. After my quenching, his flesh body has been improved by one level." Shi Yan grinned, looking at Fiery Dragon. "You don't deny that, do you?"

Fiery Dragon snorted. Under Blood-maned's scrutinizing look, he nodded begrudgingly. "This stinky kid has some good tricks. Without his assistance, I couldn't shed the mortal skin that fast."

Blood-maned's eyes brightened, gazing at Shi Yan. "You told me

this... Are you saying that you can help me too?"

Shi Yan nodded resolutely. "It's true. As long as you pay me enough and gather materials sufficiently, I can help you refine your flesh body, which would facilitate you to complete the process of shedding mortal skin. How does it sound?"

Blood-maned almost didn't hesitate. He agreed immediately. "I'll follow your idea!"

"Good," Shi Yan was happy. "First, we need to solve the business in this lake bottom then we will discuss our long-term business carefully. I'm easy to talk with. Master Blood-maned will understand me gradually."

Blood-maned nodded, walked to Fiery Dragon and started to ask him the details. "Fiery Dragon, you a\*shole, why did you want to hide such good things? This is good news to our Monster Clan! B\*stard! You're so selfish. That human has spoiled you!"

Fiery Dragon's face grimaced. He grunted and mumbled in his throat, but he didn't react. When he was annoyed, he would answer in one or two sentences.

"How to take the Soul Washing Divine Water and the Star Original Essence?" Shi Yan waved at Li Zheng Rong's group and asked directly.

"You need to use heaven flame to melt the hard shell." Li Zheng Rong talked with a serious face. "Both the Soul Washing Divine Water and the Star Original Essence have a magical hard shell. It's more tenacious than the supple power of the surface water of this lake. Only heaven flames can melt it bit by bit. That's how we unseal them."

"I don't see the Star Original Essence anywhere," Shi Yan was puzzled.

"Over there," Ye Chang Feng laughed, pointing at an area under the Soul Washing Divine Water. "There's an ancient formation.

The Soul Washing Divine Water and the Star Original Essence came out from its center. We've dragged the Soul Washing Divine Water, but we haven't touched the Star Essence yet."

"Ancient Formation?" Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He didn't wait for Ye Chang Feng to talk more, walking towards the place he had just pointed.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan followed him closely. They were curious, but their yearning was getting bigger. The Soul Washing Divine Water was something they both desired for its magical effects.

Shi Yan walked to the place, looking up to see. As he got there, he was struck immediately, and couldn't help but shout.

# Chapter 630: The Creator's Divine Pond!

---

A complicated ancient formation that was reaching its acme rested at the bottom of the lake. Top-grade Essence Crystals surrounded that formation, radiating dazzlingly. Waves of energy rippled endlessly.

This ancient formation was as big as a basketball court. It was as clear and complex as the lines on a human palm. A crystal spiritual station stood in the center of the formation. Apparently, it imitated a human soul. It was ethereal and not qualitative, ever-changing.

Essence Crystal pillars that were as big as small mountains stood upright. An immense halo expanded from their tips, which could shake people's souls. Magical light dots were moving on that ancient formation, as though they were the small streams which would never cease to flow.

Flows of supernatural fluctuation rippled from the formation and dazzled people. This somehow helped them comprehend the mysteries of heaven and earth.

There was a stone standing next to the spiritual station, which was covered with stars. It was more dazzling and magnificent than the most precious gem in the world. At first glance, Shi Yan felt dizzy. His Star Martial Spirit was stirred up.

"The Creator's Divine Pond! This is the Creator's Divine Pond!"

Shi Yan couldn't press down the overjoyed laughter in his heart. His voice trembled, as he was shivering in thrill. Everybody could see his excitement from his countenance.

No one knew when they had gathered here automatically. Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, and Ye Chang Feng had walked to him, looking at his trembling body. However, they didn't know why he suddenly got stirred up.

Shi Yan took a deep breath to steady his joy. He spoke up with fright. "I didn't expect to see this thing. I thought it was just a legend. Turns out that the legend is real!"

"What's going on?" Li Zheng Rong didn't get the situation. Although he was a Sacred Level alchemist with profound knowledge, it was strange to him.

"Old Li, are you about to break through the True God Realm?" Shi Yan grinned and pretended to relax.

"What?" Li Zheng Rong was surprised. "Does the Creator's Divine Pond relate to me? Why can't I see anything strange here?"

"I can't see the relation. But I know its effects. I think you will get crazy with joy." Shi Yan laughed contentedly. "It could help you break through the True God Realm without any risks. Do you say the Creator's Divine Pond interesting?"

After he finished, not only Li Zheng Rong, but also Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan shivered in thrill. They were disbelieving, their eyes as bright as lightning.

"Really... Is it really that magical? How could it be? How?" Li Zheng Rong's voice trembled. Obviously, he was so excited he didn't know what to do.

He was passionate about refining medicines, but his innate ability in cultivating wasn't really good. Experts at the Spirit Realm like him had reached the True God Realm one by one, but not him.

Due to his passion for refining pellets, he couldn't break through earlier.

Otherwise, after he had known about the Life Original Fluid in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, he wouldn't stay there all the time. All was because of the Life Original Fluid.

The Life Original Fluid gave the Spirit Realm warriors the chance to leap up to the True God Realm, but it couldn't guarantee the

absolute safety.

But today, Shi Yan had told him that the Creator's Divine Pond could help him reach the True God Realm easily. How could he be idle?

"Master... Is it... Is it that magical?" Di Shan's voice trembled. He was also excited.

"Little Yan, what's going on?" Yang Tian Emperor was the first one waking up from the fright. "If it's that miraculous, I think our prosperity has hope now."

With Yang Tian Emperor's natural endowment and power, once he reached the True God Realm, he wasn't afraid of the peerless experts like Yun Hao. Even the gap was wide, he could cross with only one step. At that time, he could see the whole new world.

Especially the True God Realm!

Only the True God Realm experts could become Gods!

Warriors at such level could have the God Soul, and their bodies were equipped with many magical functions. They could have a new understanding of the natural powers!

The True God Realm and the Spirit Realm were the two different worlds. When a warrior at his peak of cultivating path couldn't cross that gap, he would just be a fake God forever!

"Seems like you guys don't know about the Creator's Divine Pond." Shi Yan grinned, took a deep breath, and then explained. "In the legends, there were tremendous existences among the experts in Antiquity Time. They would contribute their best to their families and sects to build the Creator's Divine Pond. This Creator's Divine Pond could help the Peak of Spirit Realm warriors snatch the control of the Creator to enter the True God Realm at ease!"

Everybody's eyes brightened to the acme. As they were listening to Shi Yan, they seemed to forget to breathe.

"It's really strenuous to build the Creator's Divine Pond. It requires numerous treasures of the world. The experts with supernatural powers have to make a gateway to connect heaven and earth. They need the Soul Washing Divine Water and the Life Original Fluid, and the supple power of the water in the deep pond to clean the warrior's soul gradually. Then, they need sufficient energy to maintain..."

Shi Yan listed the strict requirements while his face became more solemn. "Even in the Antiquity Time, only the peerless forces could have the ability to build the Creator's Divine Pond."

Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong didn't say anything as they were absorbing his words.

"You guys are so lucky that I have no words to comment!" Shi Yan pondered, taking a deep breath and then said affirmatively. "This Creator's Divine Pond is still intact. It's never been damaged. You guys can take the Soul Washing Divine Water not because the formation is damaged, but because it lacks some materials now, which stops the formation temporarily. Life Original Fluid is the missing material. Besides, it needs the pure soul energy, the Blood Soul Divine Water, and the Five Elements Crystal Marrow. That's why the Creator's Divine Pond's incomplete."

Shi Yan looked at everybody and grinned. "If we can gather those materials and pour in the formation, we can continue using this Creator's Divine Pond."

"You know how to build the Creator's Divine Pond?" Everybody was curious, and Li Zheng Rong couldn't hold it.

Shi Yan shook his head. "I have the attainment of a whole life of a Divine Grade blacksmith. In his blacksmithing experience, he mentioned the Creator's Divine Pond. However, a Divine Grade alchemists like him didn't know how to build the Creator's Divine Pond. Even if he knew how, he had no strong warriors to assist him. It's impossible to build one."



"What is the realm of the strong warriors you said?" Di Shan couldn't help but ask.

"King God Realm!" Shi Yan let out the words faintly.

As if his words were thunders, Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, and Ye Chang Feng were petrified, their complexions aghast.

"I am not deceiving you guys," Shi Yan cracked a smile. "As far as I know, besides so many treasures of heaven and earth, the blacksmith who knows how to build the formation, to build the Creator's Divine Pond, it requires warriors at King God Realm to support. Moreover, not only one, it requires three at least!"

"Three King God Realm experts?" Li Zheng Rong was stunned, as if something had just exploded in his brain, his face struck.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan didn't reply. They were biting their lips, gazing their scorching eyes at the so-called Creator's Divine Pond.

"Yeah, it requires three King God Realm experts to create the Creator's Divine Pond that could snatch the control of Nature. It needs so many treasures and years to carve the formation to build that pond."

Shi Yan exhaled. He was dizzy, as if he were watching a marvelous scene of the Antiquity Time, where supernatural experts were joining hands. Many strong warriors were piling up rare materials that they couldn't see in the recent epoch. Under the loud instruction of a formation expert, they put the materials into the formation he had drawn.

"We, we, we..." Li Zheng Rong said 'we' three times, but he didn't know how to continue.

"I have the Life Original Fluid, the Blood Soul Divine Water.... Hm, we will have the pure soul energy from the Soul Gathering Pearl. The only thing we lack is the Five Elements Crystal

Marrow." Shi Yan pondered and then said, "As long as we have enough materials, we can activate this Creator's Divine Pond. I don't know how to build it, but it won't be a problem to add the required materials to the finished formation."

Li Zheng Rong seemed to be struck hard.

"We only need the Five Elements Crystal Marrow..." Shi Yan sighed. "If we can find the Five Elements Crystal Marrow, we can activate the Creator's Divine Pond. At that time, you and Di Shan can break through directly to the True God Realm. And you can condense the God Soul. This is a true present from God!"

"I have the Five Element Crystal Marrow!"

A voice that sounded like the voice of God came to them from a far distance. Right after that, Blood-maned lunged like a beam of gold light towards Shi Yan. He shouted, "Shi Yan, if you help me to refine my body, I'll give you the Five Elements Crystal Marrow!"

"Deal!" Shi Yan shouted without any hesitation. "Not only you, I will also help refine all of your level 8 subordinates once. For you and Fiery Dragon, I will help you refine at least a rank 6 Sacred Grade secret weapon! The price I want is... everything in this Creator's Divine Pond shall belong to me! Including the Soul Washing Divine Water and the Star Original Essence. To you and the Monster Clan, these things aren't valuable. What do you think?"

Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon exchanged looks as they were weighing pros and cons.

"We will collect materials. You have to refine the same weapons for our level 8 subordinates. We just need the Sacred Grade quality like what your Human Clan has." Blood-maned kept silent for a while, then started to bargain.

"Deal!" Shi Yan agreed resolutely. "However, you have to protect this area for me. Do not disclose any information about it!"

"Absolutely!" Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned had their eyes brightened. They agreed immediately.

Li Zheng Rong, Di Shan, and Yang Tian Emperor were a little bit upset, but when they heard Blood-maned shouting 'I have Five Elements Crystal Marrow', they were overjoyed. Even their pores felt refreshed. They couldn't help but laugh idiotically.

‘God helps us! Even God helps us!’

Shi Yan and Li Zheng Rong's group were shouting crazily in their hearts, as they couldn't restrain their joy.

# Chapter 631: Fire and Ice Secret Domain

---

The sky was garnet, and the ground underneath this red dome was divided into two parts. One was the cracked ground covered in burning flames. Thick lava murmured everywhere, heating up the whole area, making people uncomfortable.

The other side was an endless glacier, and people couldn't see where it ended. The whole place was cold and tranquil. No living aura was detected.

The world was frozen, and the ground was burning. The section in the middle, where fire and ice met, was a misty place with considerably neutral temperature.

It was a desolate, bleak area. No trees, no beasts, no insects... Only flame and cold air permeated here and there.

Plain structures made of flame stone and ice rocks were where groups of warriors gathered and discussed.

This was the gathering point of the seven ancient factions – The Fire and Ice Secret Domain.

Through dozen of thousand years, the Martial Spirit Palace had taken care of this place. After some indefinitely long periods, it would open once. However, since the change of heaven and earth, this Secret Domain had changed its rule. The passage that led to the outside world wasn't locked anymore.

This passage hid layers of dangers. Three True God Realm experts kept their eyes on this entrance. When they saw the pagans, who were brave enough to break in this place, they would activate all traps in this passage.

Unless the intruder was a King God expert, reckless visitors would never return, as both their souls and bodies would perish.

The Martial Spirit Palace had guarded the place for so many years. After countless trials, they understood the mysteries of this

passage. That's why this place had become the shelter for the seven ancient factions. Although the alien tribes knew where Human Clan was hiding, they didn't dare to enter as they hadn't understood the place.

Inside a meeting hall that was built entirely of ice rock, the Temple Master of the Heaven Temple, Qin Gu Chuan, wore a cold face. His iron-gray eyes gazed at a died crystal lamp in his hands.

A group of Heaven Temple's all had a grim countenance, not daring to even breathe loudly. Cold light flared in their eyes.

That crystal lamp was the life soul of a True God Realm warrior, which was linked to his soul. When the crystal lamp extinguished, which meant the True God Realm warrior was dead.

Many warriors of the Chu family had a pale face. They were sad, biting their lips and trembling, as they couldn't believe their eyes.

"Bai Qing's dead." A long time afterward, Qin Gu Chuan took a deep breath to steady his emotion, raking his eyes through the others. He let out a low shout. "Who can tell me where he had gone?"

Everybody exchanged looks. No one had the guts to answer him. They were all panic-stricken.

"You!" Qin Gu Chuan pointed at a man. "You always assisted Bai Qing. Don't you know his whereabouts?"

That man was a Second Sky of Sky Realm warrior. He was the Chu family's majordomo. He scooped, bending his head, but didn't dare to answer, just shaking his head helplessly.

"Bummer!" Qin Gu Chuan shouted. Suddenly, he released a silver-gray cloud, covering the majordomo's entire body.

"Please forgive me!" the majordomo screeched. His body now was like a block of meat that was squeezed. It distorted horribly. His face reddened, swelling like he was congested. "I really don't know."

Puff!

The majordomo's body burst off like a watermelon. His flesh was drawn into the silver cloud, then grounded into meat pulp.

"Damn it! You don't even know his whereabouts!" Qin Gu Chuan shouted coldly. He glared at the other members of the Chu family. "Does anyone know of your master's whereabouts?"

No one dared to answer. They stooped and kept silent.

The Heaven Temple consisted of many families. The Chu family was ranked only behind the Qin family. Chu Bai Qing, the Head Master of the Chu family, was at the First Sky of True God Realm. He only listened to Qin Gu Chuan.

Under the current circumstances of the seven ancient factions, each Spirit Realm warrior was essential. Let alone Chu Bai Qing, a True God Realm expert. The death of Chu Bai Qing had dragged the overall competence of the Heaven Temple down by one level. Of course, Qin Gu Chuan would be enraged.

"Ning Du Quan went missing too." A slender man standing next to Qin Gu Chuan spoke while slightly bending his head. He was around thirty-years-old, but his hair were all white. His face was as still as a vampire. He seemed never to have any emotion showing on his face.

"Ning Du Quan!" Qin Gu Chuan's face was colder. "Good! Good! We've lost two Head Masters shortly!"

No one dared to reply.

Qin Gu Chuan rose one arm, his face sinister. He seemed to want to slaughter. However, he halted then assigned, "Send a troop out there and collect intelligence. I want to know what happened to them!"

"Yes, sir!" Everybody answered in unison.

...

The entrance of the Perpetual Night Forest...

Comoros was waiting for something with a gloomy countenance. After around one hour, hundreds of the Ghost Mark Clan's warriors arrived. The other Grand Sage of the Ghost Mark Clan, Cassidy, had come.

Besides them, there was a small group of the Dark Spirit Clan. These people had the cold, evil aura of the dead. They seemed to have no vitality at all.

The leader of the Dark Spirit Clan had a pair of deep green, bloodthirsty eyes.

"Comoros, you wanted to kill that kid named Shi Yan?" After Cassidy came, he frowned and asked anxiously. "Bao Ao... He told us to keep that kid alive, didn't he?"

"I don't care about Bao Ao," Comoros snorted then said coldly, "Wait until we're done with that stuff, we won't be afraid of Bao Ao anymore. The Dark Devil Clan that kid's protecting is our humiliation. We have to clean them all!"

Cassidy kept silent for a while and then asked, "You've made up your mind?"

Comoros nodded heavily. "I have to kill him. He hurt me in the Shady Firmament Old Mound. This kid has endless potential. If we don't kill him now, we will have no chance in the future."

Cassidy no longer persuaded him. He nodded. "So, let's kill them. We will kill all who are present. We won't let anyone escape. Bao Ao could never know."

"I don't care whether he knows or not," Comoros' evil was aroused. "This time, I want to take all the souls into the Yin Written Charm Scripture. Wait until the Yin Written Charm Scripture has enough nutrients, we can awake our Patriarch. At that time, let's see what Bao Ao could do to us."

When Comoros mentioned their Patriarch, Cassidy got excited.

He nodded and then said, "Yeah, as long as our Patriarch wakes up, we don't need to worry about anything"

"Remember what you've agreed with us." The leader of the Dark Spirit Clan didn't say anything during their conversation. After the two sages had discussed, he uttered just a faint sentence.

"Don't worry. What I agreed with you, I'll fulfill it." Comoros glared at him.

The other nodded and kept silent again, as if saying something would drain his energy.

...

At the bottom of the lake...

A group of people surrounded the Creator's Divine Pond. They faced up to see the clear lake and the meandering steam with great excitement.

The Creator's Divine Pond used the steam and top-grade Essence Crystals here as the basis. The Star Original Essence was its generator. Together with the Soul Washing Divine Water, Life Original Fluid, Five Elements Crystal Marrow, pure soul energy, and so many other auxiliary materials, the pond was built.

From a distance, that area didn't look magnificent at all. But when they came closer, they could feel the surging energy instantly.

Blood-maned had gone away. He went to bring the Five Elements Crystal Marrow as they had made a deal. Shi Yan's group gathered here, waiting for him.

"Soul Washing Divine Water, Life Original Fluid, and Five Element Crystal Marrow, we almost have them all... However, the pure soul energy I have here is only enough for one person. We need time to complete the filtering process." Shi Yan kept silent for a while, then looked at Di Shan and Li Zheng Rong. "You two, only one of you can enter. Yeah, if nothing unexpected happens, it will



be three days later."

Di Shan didn't answer. He just bent his body, waiting for Shi Yan's arrangement.

Li Zheng Rong was struggling in his heart. Suddenly, he said frankly, "Let him go first. When we killed Chu Bai Qing, he had contributed more. I've not broken through for dozens of years. I... I'm not hurried."

Everybody knew that his thoughts were different than his words. He wanted to be the first one got in there. And, they knew how much he had contributed.

"Alright, Di Shan, you get in the pond first. It's the first time, so we should see if any problems happen." Shi Yan comforted Li Zheng Rong with a smile.

Of course, Shi Yan knew that there would be nothing unexpected happening when they operated the Creator's Divine Pond. It's 100% guaranteed.

Li Zheng Rong didn't know that. When he heard Shi Yan's words, he calmed down, and even felt a bit lucky.

Everything they knew about the Creator's Divine Pond came from Shi Yan himself. Li Zheng Rong didn't know anything, so he wasn't sure whether the Creator's Divine Pond was that magical, or anything unexpected would happen... If Di Shan went there first, he would be completely sure.

"At first, you guys please watch over me. I want to sense the Star Original Essence. Perhaps... I can gain something from it." After Shi Yan could confirm that Li Zheng Rong agreed to this arrangement, he contemplated for a while to sense the situation of his body.

Shi Yan had absorbed the Essence Qi of Ning Du Quan and the old woman. At this moment, his acupuncture points were converting it. Shi Yan could feel this process.

About Chu Bai Qing... When his body exploded, Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon had swallowed his fragmented body. His Essence Qi had become the nutrients in those two giant beasts' tummy.

However, the Essence of Ning Du Quan and the old woman was enough for him to leap up to his next level. If he could understand something from the Star Original Essence, perhaps he could take another step in his growth.

The Star Original Essence was the core part of a star in the galaxy, containing the mysteries of stars. Each star had been through million or even billion years of transformation, until it could have the Star Original Essence.

The Star Original Essence was like the soul of a star. It recorded every step of the star's ascension. If Shi Yan could comprehend part of these mysteries, he would have new cognition of the star power, which he could use to break through to the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. It was totally possible.

"Would it damage the Star Original Essence?" Li Zheng Rong rubbed his hands as he were a little bit worried.

Shi Yan had told them that the Star Original Essence was the source of energy supplied for the Creator's Divine Pond. The star energy was divided and then softened to be the best energy pouring into the Creator's Divine Pond.

Once the energy of the Star Original Essence was drained, the Creator's Divine Pond wouldn't perform its magical effect of snatching the control of Nature. Of course, Li Zheng Rong had to worry.

"I don't want to absorb the energy in it. I just want to comprehend the Upanishads and the mysteries. You... are worried too much." Shi Yan smiled and comforted him. Then, he ignored the old man, floating to the ancient formation which hadn't been activated due to the shortage of materials. He slowly urged his Star Martial Spirit to attack the Star Original Essence in the core of the

formation.

## Chapter 632: Wicked genius!

---

A flowing water curtain protected the Star Original Essence in the core of the ancient formation. Just like the Soul Washing Divine Water, it was a fist-sized water drop, which looked really magnificent.

Inside the water drop, the Star Original Essene looked like a giant diamond, radiating glorious halo. Sometimes, light dots shot out from it, piercing through the 'flowing water' shell. Starlight shot out around the ancient formation, making the formation glow while emitting a wave of magical energy fluctuations.

Shi Yan held his breath and calmed his soul, making his mind clear of thoughts, gazing at that water drop. Gradually, he seemed to form a connection with that water drop, or the Star Original Essence inside the drop to be exact.

Star Original Essence flew out from the ancient formation, trembling in the void and floating towards him. Starlight bloomed out, making Shi Yan comfortable. His heart bounced with vitality.

The Star Martial Spirit in his heart turned into countless light dots and expanded. If someone used the Soul Consciousness to sense his heart at this moment, after zooming in several times, he could see an entire galaxy, which was adorned with innumerable stars.

Under the attractive magical force, his Star Martial Spirit came to his front and stopped at his chest. Star dots from everywhere swarmed into his heart.

Shi Yan felt his whole body refreshed. The rising negative mood was steadied.

At this moment, his acupuncture points were refining the Essence Qi of Ning Du Quan and the old woman. During this process, the raising negative feeling was unavoidable.

In the past, he used to fall into bedevilment at this phase easily. He couldn't hold the desire in his heart, and gradually, he lost his mind.

However, everything was smoother than he expected. It was the effect of the Star power in the Star Original Essence, which calmed his entire body, and even his thoughts. He was like a baby in his mother's embrace, feeling an indescribable peace.

His soul, his Soul Consciousness, and thoughts were like invisible silk threads grabbing the water drop, forming a magnificent connection to gain the fluctuation coming from the inside.

Gradually, he seemed to enter the starry night, visiting the star and watching the changes happening on the star.

When it had just begun, the star was as big as a grain of sand. Gradually, it had absorbed some kind of energy in the vast galaxy. After so many years of accumulation and dragging the giant meteor passing by, it had been built up slowly. The star had grown little by little.

That star still ascended magically like a creature growing. It slowly gained vitality, as it stopped collecting the scattered energy in the starry sky. Something began to change inside the small star. From a little sapling, eventually, it became a giant, towering tree.

Shi Yan's soul sank into this miraculous scene. He didn't notice any changes in the outside world, just focusing wholeheartedly.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong were curious. They stood next to him and watched him. They could see the magical star energy fluctuations from him, while star dots were sparkling at his chest continually.

After an unknown time, a strong suction force arose at his chest.

The never-vanishing stars in the vault of the sky above the lake seemed to be activated instantly. Scattering starlight plunged down from the sky just like billions of fireflies flying toward the

lake.

Yang Tian Emperor's group was frightened. They couldn't help but look at the surface of the lake above their heads. They then saw so many star dots flying towards the lake. They all sank and gathered at Shi Yan's location.

"This... This is..." Li Zheng Rong stammered in astonishment. Afterward, he mumbled. "The Wandering Star Shower. Not many people cultivate the Star Secret Art in the Radiant God Cult's history. Comprehending the Star power in just a flash could lead to the shower of star dots gathering at the warrior. Excellent. Really Excellent."

He knew the history of the Radiant God Cult, and this strange phenomenon was mentioned somewhere in their flow of history.

It was similar to the Brilliance Sunlight Bathing, which happened when cultivating the Flaming Sun Secret Art to the required degree. They all had the same magical effects. This happened when the warrior understood the mysteries of his power, inspiring the change of earth and heaven.

"Shi Yan would receive a great thing this time, right?" Ye Chang Feng shook his head in awe. He beamed a forced smile. "This kid's innate endowment always makes people jealous. How could he comprehend the realm that easily?"

"Genius," Li Zheng Rong acclaimed. He squinted as he was resentful towards his apprentice for not meet his expectations. "If you become like Shi Yan, even if I have to die, I'm willing to do it."

Ye Chang Feng could only laugh to cover his embarrassment. He didn't dare to answer.

"Not good!" Li Zheng Rong shouted as he suddenly recalled something. "He has created a big change. As long as someone knows about the Wandering Star Shower, he will come here to satisfy his curiosity. Especially... many disciples of the Radiant God

Cult in the Perpetual Night Forest."

Listening to him, Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan discolored in fright as they realized the seriousness of this situation.

Fiery Flame, Fiery Dragon, Silver-horned, and Blood-maned had left to prepare the materials for their body quenching. Fiery Dragon had come to Blood-maned's territory to exchange the materials to strengthen himself and to explain the details to the giant ape.

At this moment, there were only four people, including Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, and Ye Chang Feng. If a strong warrior at the True God Realm appeared, all of them would have to pay a bloody price.

Especially, Shi Yan was now at the critical time to comprehend the power of the Star. He shouldn't be disturbed. Otherwise, not only he wouldn't be able to take the Star power, he would also have his soul perished.

"It's tough!" Yang Tian Emperor pondered for a while and then made a quick decision. "We'll go up there first. No matter who dares to come here, we will kill them all. We won't let anybody leave alive. No one else should know about this."

When they were in the Endless Sea, Yang Tian Emperor was the tyrant overlord of a whole sea. When he killed people, he would never hesitate. He understood that Shi Yan's current situation was unique, and also the importance of the Creator's Divine Pond. Ultimately, he came to the best solution at this moment.

"Okay!" Di Shan nodded.

"Chang Feng, you break the seal at the water surface and let us out." Li Zheng Rong mused for a while and then nodded. "You stay here. Later on, unless you receive the message sent by my soul, you should never go up there!"

He and Ye Chang Feng could use a secret treasure to engage in

soul communication. He was afraid that Ye Chang Feng could engage in bad things, so he had asked some blacksmith to forge this treasure.

"Teacher, please be careful. If you can endure, just run... Surviving is more important than anything," Ye Chang Feng's eyes were reddened. He nodded heavily. "I'll protect myself. I won't make you worried. Teacher, take care!"

The Perpetual Night Forest had many experts of the seven ancient factions operating. The alien tribes also sent their men here. Clansmen of the Ghost Mark Clan and the Dark Spirit Clan also appeared in the forest. The number of level 9 beasts in was more than the number of one's fingers.

Li Zheng Rong had only the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, as his efforts had all been put into refining medicines. So, his cultivation base wasn't worth mentioning. If he encountered a strong expert, it wasn't easy to survive.

He couldn't help but worry.

"Yeah, you have to open your eyes wider and live well!" Li Zheng Rong took a deep breath. "After this calamity, when I've entered the True God Realm, I can protect you well, kid."

Then, Li Zheng Rong was the first one moving towards the lake surface.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan followed closely behind him.

...

The center of the Perpetual Night Forest...

Heaven Temple's warriors got out of the Secret Domain. While they hadn't done anything yet, they saw the strange phenomenon in the sky in a daze.

The white-haired warrior kept silent for a while and then said with bright eyes. "We'll go there and check."



He had the Peak of Spirit Realm, just a little bit more to reach the True God Realm. He was a strong warrior who no one knew where he had been found from. No one knew his profile. But everyone knew he was a dangerous man who possessed a strange energy.

He was just a Peak of Spirit Realm warrior, but he had fought with Chu Bai Qing, the one who had just reached the True God Realm. However, he didn't lose that battle.

From that day, he became a character who no one dared to underestimate in the Heaven Temple. The Master of Heaven Temple favored this man a lot. If the situation this time weren't so bad and the Master weren't enraged, he wouldn't have had to get out of the Secret Domain.

Heaven Temple's warriors accompanying him didn't dare to go against his idea, and all nodded.

As they had set the target, they moved immediately without any hesitation. They dashed towards the Blood-maned Giant Ape's territory.

...

Almost at the same time...

Grand Elders Ji Mu and Yue Ying of the Radiant God Cult were staying in a different area. They were looking at the sky with a puzzled countenance.

These two had received the order from Yun Hao. They were finding Shi Yan. Not long after they had gotten out of the Secret Domain, they found the strange phenomenon in the sky. They were stunned instantly.

"Some expert of our cult is still in the Perpetual Night Forest?" Ji Mu's visage was odd. He was bewildered for a long time. Then he slammed his brows together. "A warrior that could inspire such phenomenon, and he still stays somewhere out there. This seems not right to me."

Yue Ying kept silent for a while and then said in a faint tone. "Shi Yan's cultivating the Star Martial Spirit. He... He's in the Perpetual Night Forest!"

Ji Mu was dumbstruck. He acclaimed and then sighed. "What a genius!"

Yue Ying's eyes were complicated, her face strange. "Perhaps our Master has predicted something?"

"How could it be?" Ji Mu shook his head constantly as though he didn't know whether he should cry or smile. "You think our Master is that superb? If he could even predict this, he would have snatched Shi Yan from the Endless Sea earlier. He would never wait for the man to turn himself in, right?"

"Oh, it's true," Yue Ying got it.

"Anyway, our Master has always protected him. Certainly, he has seen the young man's potential. This proves that our Master's eyes are sharp and his vision is excellent." Ji Mu contemplated for a while and then said, "Our Master always wanted to protect them before, even if he had to go against the other six factions or our own members. I didn't get it before. But now... Yeah, I really admire his wide vision."

"I told you. Shi Yan will go beyond people's imagination. How could we compare to our Master's knowledge?" Yue Ying snorted.

Ji Mu forced a smile, raising one hand. "Alright, my bad. I shouldn't have scolded you. I'm sorry. Okay?"

"Forget it. I'm not going to haggle with you." Yue Ying put on a serious countenance and then said faintly, "Quick. We should go there and check. That kid is really a genius."

# Chapter 633: Apprehend

---

At the lake bottom, Shi Yan closed his eyes, his breathing steady. Starlight radiated from his chest.

The Star Original Essence looked like a big glorious diamond, shooting out starlight that stormed towards Shi Yan and disappeared into his chest in just a blink of an eye.

All of a sudden, it seemed Shi Yan's soul had absorbed by some energy. He had no energy fluctuation now. It seemed even his soul had paused. If Ye Chang Feng didn't see Shi Yan still breathing, he would have shaken him already.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong had gone up to the lake surface. Ye Chang Feng sometimes faced up to check the situation above his head, to see if anything was strange or not.

The lake was still quiet. There was neither a sign of a battle nor strong living fluctuation.

Only the starlight still plunged down from the sky like fireflies. They pierced through the lake surface, falling into Shi Yan's chest.

Ye Chang Feng stayed at the bottom of the lake, so he could feel some magical sound emitted from Shi Yan. Gradually, he felt as if his soul and spirit resonated with Shi Yan.

Star dots in his eyes became the thought from Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness, giving him a feeling of having a life.

Ye Chang Feng was petrified, his face shocked.

He was sure that even Shi Yan didn't know what was happening to him. He didn't know that he had attracted so many star dots in the sky. They gathered around him and changed the Star Martial Spirit in his chest.

Ye Chang Feng could observe clearly!

When the lively star dots gathered in front of Shi Yan's chest,

they started to move on a magical trajectory, following some rules.

Awesome!

Ye Chang Feng exclaimed in his heart. He shook his head continually as he knew that after this event, Shi Yan could surely break through the second time.

By the time Ye Chang Feng had met Shi Yan, Shi Yan's realm was relatively low at the Nirvana Realm.

After just ten years, Shi Yan had leaped up from the Nirvana Realm to the Second Sky of Spirit Realm. And, in a short time, he would have the chance to break through the Third Sky of Spirit Realm!

Thinking about this fast progress, Ye Chang Feng couldn't hold his sigh. He had to accept this fate, giving the title genius to Shi Yan.

All of a sudden, Ye Chang Feng's pupils shrank. His face changed.

He could vaguely feel the new energy fluctuation above the lake. It seemed some new hotshots had arrived.

He knew that the short peace of this lake was about to be broken.

...

Above the lake surface...

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong were knitting their brows silently, their face grim. Especially Li Zheng Rong, he was surprised for a moment he felt his heart sinking. He let out a low shout. "Qiu Hong!"

Qiu Hong was the white-headed hotshot of the Heaven Temple with the Peak of Spirit Realm cultivation base. His face was always stiff, with a pair of unmoving eyes. He gave people the feeling of the dead.

Qiu Hong took more than ten warriors of the Heaven Temple, following the starlight to arrive at this place from the Secret

Domain in the center of the forest.

After he could steady his body, he rose one hand to signal the other warriors to stop. The group of Heaven Temple's warriors halted, waiting for his order with their mouths shut.

He glared at Li Zheng Rong then stooped to search around. His nose gently fanned as if he were searching for something. Di Shan slightly changed his visage. He looked at Yang Tian Emperor as if he had suddenly remembered something.

Yang Tian Emperor stood indifferently. He slightly shook his head to signal the other to not hasten.

This place still had the traces of Chu Bai Qing killing beasts. Although Yang Tian Emperor was careful enough to clean it up, if the other was a mindful person, he could see some streaks.

Apparently, Qiu Hong was that sort of person.

He seemed to have some magical power. After he took a tour around the place, he didn't say anything while pressing his slender and delicate white hand, more beautiful than the female hand, on the ground.

Light ash-gray smoke diffused from his fingers, swaying into the earth like worms. They quickly moved underground.

Qiu Hong closed his eyes, as a strange energy wave rippled from him. His body was swaying in the wind, as if he had no bones in his body. This looked extremely eccentric.

Afterward, the light smoke he had released came back to him, entering his body through his fingers.

Qiu Hong stood upright. He didn't sway with the wind anymore. His eyes opened on his stiff face as he said, "Chu Bai Qing had come here, and so had Ning Du Quan. If anything happened to them, it's because of you guys."

He pointed at Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong.

"However, it's impossible to kill them with your cultivation base and realm." Qiu Hong mused for a while and then said, "I can sense the aura of the Monster Clan. It's certain that the hotshots of the Monster Clan had helped you. This place belongs to Blood-maned, so he must have joined this battle."

He just assumed from the evidence he got and arranged the whole things again. They matched, as though he had seen what happened with his own eyes.

His voice was confirmative. Although his tone and words were slow-witted, he had the absolute confidence. Apparently, he agreed with his own assumption.

None of the warriors accompanying him doubted his opinion. They trusted him almost immediately. They all knew Qiu Hong's ability, so they knew his assumption wouldn't be wrong.

Yang Tian Emperor kept a cold face while observing carefully. Then, he begrudgingly accepted the fact that, whether he admitted it or not, he couldn't change the direction of this event's development.

"Be careful!" Li Zheng Rong sighed, talking in a low tone. "Qiu Hong's a dangerous person. Although he has only the Spirit Realm cultivation base, he could fight a tied battle with the True God Realm warriors."

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan were grim.

"Tell me the reasons," Qiu Hong didn't hasten to attack them. He kept talking with a dull voice. "Why did you guys join hands with the Monster Clan? Why did you kill our Heaven Temple's warriors?"

He paused for a while and then continued. "The reasons why you guys are still alive was because you hadn't attacked the seven ancient factions' warriors. But now, you're walking the same path with the Monster Clan. This means you are standing on the

opposite side to us. I think, without a reasonable explanation, I can only kill you all."

Qiu Hong spoke as if it was the most natural thing.

Yang Tian Emperor cracked a smile. "Then it's simple. You die, or we die."

"Good then," Qiu Hong nodded and attacked them immediately.

...

In a thick forest...

The two high-grade existences of the Monster Clan, Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned, were quarreling. They slowly exposed themselves.

"Fiery Dragon, you are an a\*shole! You want to take benefit from this alone! Harrumph, I know what you think. You are waiting until your energy reaches the acme and you will find me and take revenge, right?" Blood-maned grunted. "I'm telling you, you will never be my rival! I will always subdue you!"

"Blood-maned, you shouldn't be so contented. After I've refined my body this time, I will break to another level. Then, I will kick you're a\*s easily!" said Fiery Dragon angrily.

When the beasts communicated, they always made it simple and savage. They wouldn't be wordy or probing too much. They were always frank; It would be joining hands or being the enemy... or shouting at each other.

"Ah!" Blood-maned suddenly shouted. He looked around and cursed. "Someone's swaggering in my territory! Not good! They are above the lake!"

Fiery Dragon also cursed. "They must be the damn humans. They came already. Grrrr, I hate them!"

Blood-maned was roaring like an erupting volcano. He wanted to go to the lake immediately.

Right at this moment, a cold, gloomy voice arose. "Misters, I want to discuss something with you."

Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon halted, their face grim.

Comoros and Cassidy, the two sages of the Ghost Mark Clan, emerged from the forest. Their spooky deep green eyes gazed at Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon, but their attitude wasn't clear.

"Ghost Mark Clan!" Blood-maned snorted, his face impatient. "You've been strolling around the Perpetual Night Forest for so long. What do you want after all? No matter what you want to do, do it quick. Don't be sticky here. You're so annoying!"

Comoros darkened his face. "We come to ask why Fiery Dragon wants to protect the humans."

Fiery Dragon didn't put him in his mind. "What does it matter to you? Should you be able to control who I should protect? This is the Perpetual Night Forest, our Monster Clan's territory. It isn't your Shady Firmament Old Mound. Do you think you could chair everything here?"

"Fiery Dragon, what is he babbling about?" Blood-maned harrumphed.

"He wants to kill Shi Yan," Fiery Dragon faced up, talking as if he were really irritated. "That kid is my distinguished guest. How can I let these cunning folks kill him? I want to favor him more."

Of course, Blood-maned knew what 'favor' he mentioned. He almost didn't hesitate and nodded continually. "You guys can't kill him. He's useful to us. I don't care if you want to kill anyone else. But if you want to touch him, don't blame me for being impolite!"

"I don't understand why the strong beasts like you guys need a human kid?" Cassidy couldn't understand their points.

"I can't explain it to you guys," Apparently, Fiery Dragon didn't want to answer.



"Can you not protect him?" Comoros pondered and then shouted, his face malicious.

"Stop being arrogant in front of us. This place is the Perpetual Night Forest. The Ghost Mark Clan can't swagger here!" Blood-maned's aura bloomed out. He couldn't hold it but attack the others.

"Kill!" Comoros was also stimulated. The Yin Written Charm Scripture needed strong souls. If they could get the souls of Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon, their big business would be done. He thought he could bet on it this time.

...

Ji Mu and Yue Ying were running as fast as if they were flying. They almost got there.

Seeing the star dots falling like a heavy rain toward a lake, Ji Mu and Yue Ying were excited. They kept complimenting.

Boom Boom Boom!

Fierce noise of energy impact arose from that area. The shocking waves shook the entire ground. A frightened streak appeared across Ji Mu's eyes. He shouted, "Furious battles are ahead of us. Two places... There're True God Realm warriors!"

Yue Ying changed her face dramatically. She hesitated and then asked, "Do we need to notify our Master?"

"Of course!" Ji Mu affirmed, "Shi Yan wouldn't be safe in any area. I think these battles relate to him!"

Yue Ying agreed. She nodded continually as she started to send the news to Yun Hao.

# Chapter 634: Mind perception

---

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan were struggling hard with grimaced faces. Qiu Hong had stirred up their temperament.

Qiu Hong had pushed them, making them have no strategy left to try. Qiu Hong had stopped their mysterious attacks right before they could cast them completely. None of their attacks could reach Qiu Hong.

It seemed Qiu Hong could predict their moves. He could always avoid Yang Tian Emperor's and Di Shan's attack one step ahead. It seemed the void was filled with Qiu Hong eyes, giving him the ability to see every single situation.

Swoosh!

A drop of blood shot out from Yang Tian Emperor's middle finger, a drop of Immortal Blood. It turned into a flow of red light that nothing could compare with, carrying the thick smell of bloody waves, darting rapidly.

Wind howled and twirled from the pair of Di Shan's pure black wings. Wind blades covered the whole sky like countless shiny knives, creating a light curtain of wind blades. It looked terrifying.

However, under the waves of Yang Tian Emperor's and Di Shan's attack, Qiu Hong had always moved one step ahead of them.

When he reappeared, he was in the blind corner that Yang Tian Emperor's and Di Shan's attack couldn't reach. Then, he walked to Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan with a golden leaf in his hand, his face still emotionless. His palm glowed with a glorious golden light.

The golden light radiated, shining on that golden leaf, revealing the clear lines like the lines of human palms. It seemed to contain the life Upanishads.

Gradually, immense fluctuations of life rippled from that golden

leaf, turning into a gold light sea, raging torrentially. It dissolved Yang Tian Emperor's and Di Shan's attacks, pushing them backward continually.

The gold light sea that the golden leaf created could confine people's souls and restrain their hearts.

When the golden light shone on Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan, they immediately had a dispirited feeling, making them quit attacking and want to surrender.

It was fortunate that these two had the will of steel and they were both brave and ruthless. They reacted by biting their tongue to wake up themselves from this state.

Qiu Hong didn't say anything during their battle. His face was dull and emotionless. With a steady mood, he attacked the other two neither slowly nor fast. However, Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan had no means to stop him. The situation was obviously getting worse.

Yang Tian Emperor was at the Second Sky of Spirit Realm. With his martial spirit, the profound experience in fighting, and the God Blood in his body, when he fought with the experts at the Peak of Spirit Realm, he wouldn't fall into the disadvantaged situation. Di Shan was the patriarch of the Black Winged Clan with exquisite powers and a special rigid body of the Demon Clan; fighting with a human at the same realm, he should be more certain.

However, Qiu Hong's prophetic ability had broken their perception, revealing their weak points. They had to struggle hard to resist.

Li Zheng Rong was engaging in the battle with the ten warriors that Qiu Hong had brought. Four of them were at the Spirit Realm, and the others were at the Third Sky of Sky Realm. This force was dealing with Li Zheng Rong alone. Li Zheng Rong's situation wasn't positive, either.

However, those warriors didn't want to kill Li Zheng Rong, apparently. They were controlling their attacks as they just wanted to capture him alive, perhaps.

Li Zheng Rong had too many secret treasures. While his hands were moving, his strange secret treasures soared to the sky, releasing magical waves that neutralized the warriors' attack.

As the most brilliant alchemist of the Dead Soul Mountain Range, his position was noble. Alchemists around the world respected and admired him a lot. Using secret treasures to exchange for medicines wasn't a strange business.

During these recent years, the treasures he got in the Dead Soul Mountain Range weren't bad. The worst of them were the Spirit Grade ones. He also had seven or eight Sacred Grade treasures. He only needed to use the secret treasures and weapons to smash the warriors at his realm.

Li Zheng Rong was holding a massive banner, which was embroidered with lively monsters and devils. When he waved it, these figures started to bare their claws and fangs, as if they had been revived, spurting thick green smoke.

This smoke carried a poison that dizzied people. Everybody had to halt their attacks and deal with this poison.

Seized the opportunity, Li Zheng Rong ran away, flying to Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan and shouting, "Be careful! Qiu Hong has the Mind Perception Martial Spirit. He can read your thoughts and predict your moves!"

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan changed their countenances in fright. Finally, they knew why they were opposed.

The Mind Perception Martial Spirit could read changes in the mind of the opponent, which helped him find the way to break or avoid it one step ahead.

Although there weren't so many martial spirits in the Divine

Great Land, they could buy some martial spirits. However, the magical and unpredictable martial spirits were rare and precious. No ancient factions would sell the martial spirit's original seal. It would be inherited through the family's bloodline.

The mind martial spirit was the most magical one. Every warrior had to long for it.

In the Divine Great Land, mind and soul martial techniques were the precious resources of the seven ancient factions. Even the hotshots of that faction sometimes didn't have a chance to practice them.

Qiu Hong's Mind Perception Martial Spirit was inborn. During fighting, he could use this martial spirit to read the next move of the opponent precisely. Warriors at the same realm could never be his rivals. Even the high-realm warriors had to receive a big headache fighting with him. No matter how strong their attacks were, they were useless.

Yang Tian Emperor's and Di Shan's cultivation base wasn't much different from Qiu Hong's. In their battle, he could use the Mind Perception ability to avoid all of their attacks. He just needed to focus on them. Right at the beginning, he was undefeatable.

"Oh, that's it!" Yang Tian Emperor was surprised. He reacted immediately, laughed, then sat down motionlessly.

Flows of thick blood aura diffused from Yang Tian Emperor, creating a curtain of dense blood smog, covering him. Layers of blood air currents moved, rippling around him. The energy of heaven and earth sizzled together.

"I got it," Di Shan was amazed. He followed the other to sit down. He didn't attack, just using his best to defend.

As long as they attacked, their mind would reflect their moves and Qiu Hong could read them immediately, and he always dodged the attacks on time. This way, he could wear their energies and

defeat them ultimately.

However, when the two didn't take action but just defended, waiting for his attack, this was another situation.

Although Qiu Hong knew their defending energy fluctuations, what could he do?

He had to break their defense to reach Di Shan and Yang Tian Emperor. He had to consume his energy to do that.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan used this strategy to carry out the battle of attrition with Qiu Hong, using the unchanged to deal with the ever-changing. Once Qiu Hong ran out of power, they would attack him again. This was a good tactic to deal with warriors who cultivated mind techniques like Qiu Hong.

"Marvelous!" Li Zheng Rong complimented. "Yang-ge is really extraordinary! You can think of the countermeasure that quickly!"

Yang Tian Emperor cracked a smile, teasing Qiu Hong, "Come over here!"

Qiu Hong stopped all of a sudden. He frowned, then swept his eyes through Li Zheng Rong, talking indifferently. "Mister Li, I didn't want to hurt you. You are an alchemist; your life benefits us. But if you want to stand on the opposite side to the seven ancient factions, you shouldn't blame me."

Then, Qiu Hong shifted his target to Li Zheng Rong. He ignored Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan.

Li Zheng Rong changed his visage.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan frowned, exchanging looks, their complexions worried.

Although Li Zheng Rong had the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, he had paid too much attention to refining medicines. His fighting experience wasn't enough. When Qiu Hong aimed at him, he could know the attacking trajectory of Li Zheng Rong's secret treasures.

Even if Li Zheng Rong put forth everything to defense, he wasn't Qiu Hong's opponent.

Li Zheng Rong was in danger.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan were hesitant. They were about to break their defending state to assist him.

Right at this moment, two lights zoomed over from a far distance. Two figures were flying toward them. They were Yue Ying and Ji Mu.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan shivered. They were astounded, their face petrified.

"Ah!" When Ji Mu arrived, he looked here and there, his face surprised. "Where's he? Where's that kid?"

"In the lake," Yue Ying pointed at the lake. "Don't you see that all of the starlight is flying into the lake. He should be in the bottom of the lake."

Ji Mu nodded, "Yeah, should be in the lake. Haha. Seems we arrived at the wrong time. The fight here is bustling."

Everybody paused, looking at Ji Mu and Yue Ying with a stunned face, as they didn't know the two's attitude.

"You... Why do you come here?" Yang Tian Emperor hesitated for a while and then frowned.

Recently, when the seven ancient factions wanted to kill them, only the Radiant God Cult stood up to protect them. As these two were from the Radiant God Cult, Yang Tian Emperor was confused, so he had to ask them, then planned the next countermeasure.

"We're finding Shi Yan," Yue Ying beamed a faint smile. "We don't care about the other things. You guys just need to tell me where Shi Yan is. Argh, I don't need you to tell us, anyway. He should be in the lake bottom."

Grrrrrr! Roaaaaarrrr!

Two crazy roars arose not far from them. Afterward, two intimidating auras were moving fast towards them.

Yue Ying and Ji Mu exchanged looks. Their faces darkened as they knew the situation wasn't going well.

Not long after that, Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned appeared. Their giant bodies crushed the ancient big trees as if they were just little dried branches. They were roaring and fighting against someone while moving towards this area. Seemed they were besieged in a bad situation.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong were struck. They had planned to use Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned to solve the situation here. But when they saw the situation of the two monsters, they had to change their faces in fear. Their heart sank as they knew the situation was too bad.

All of them saw the True God Realm experts of the Ghost Mark Clan and the Dark Spirit Clan. This made them grimmer.



# Chapter 635: Yang Tian Emperor gets crazy!

---

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned were restlessly agitated. Comoros and Cassidy of the Ghost Mark Clan were oppressing them furiously. Especially the True God Realm expert of the Dark Spirit Clan, his attack was so malicious.

Comoros and Cassidy had the True God Realm cultivation base. Cassidy was at the Second Sky of True God Realm while Comoros was at the Third Sky of True God Realm. However, they couldn't use their full power at this moment. They seemed to be equal to Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned.

Ivision of the Dark Spirit Clan had the Second Sky of True God Realm cultivation base. The warrior of the Dark Spirit Clan had a body as firm as pure steel. Perhaps his body was even more tenacious than Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned.

Comoros, Cassidy, and Ivision had joined hands, together with many hotshots of the Ghost Mark Clan, Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned couldn't endure such force. They were fighting and retreating at the same time. They wanted to find Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan to help them.

Too bad, Yang Tian Emperor's side had been already struggling. Qin Hong was enough to hold them down.

Seeing Comoros leading a group of the Ghost Mark Clan's hotshots, pushing Blood-maned to this area, Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan were hesitant, their faces grimaced.

"ARGH!" Fiery Dragon shouted, rolling his eyes at Qin Hong and the Heaven Temple's group, speaking indignantly. "So annoying! Why do I have to meet these human brats everywhere!"

"Blood-maned, Fiery Dragon, if you ignore Shi Yan, we will leave immediately," Comoros hovered in the air, his face cold.

Ivion of the Dark Spirit Clan didn't say anything. His deep green eyes flared a bloodthirsty, malicious light as if he hated that he couldn't kill everybody here. He was looking at the group of human experts including Qin Hong, Yang Tian Emperor, and Ji Mu.

While the Dark Spirit Clan had been confined in the Dead Soul Mountain Range, many wandering dead souls had been hunted by human warriors in the Dead Soul Mountain Range, turning into refining materials for their weapons or medicines. Turning back to the resentment they had cast ten thousand years ago, Human Clan had sealed them in the foreign land, making the members of the Dark Spirit Clan live with their bodies and souls separated, which had decreased their power drastically.

Ivion had a deep grudge against humans, much more than what he had against Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned.

"This situation doesn't seem right," Ji Mu shifted his look from Fiery Dragon, Blood-maned, to the hotshots of the Dark Spirit Clan and the Ghost Mark Clan. He said with great confusion. "Seems like... All this relates to that kid Shi Yan."

Yue Ying couldn't hold her forced smile, talking in a low tone. "That boy... is truly a disaster."

Ji Mu and Yue Ying didn't join their conversation. They just stood there with a complicated complexion. They wanted to retreat quietly as they saw something wrong here.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned were the level 9 members of the Monster Clan. They were equal to the True God Realm warriors. Besides, there were three more pagans at the True God Realm. This force was something Human Clan could resist. If they stayed here, it was not different from suicide.

Qin Hong was hesitant. His face suddenly changed into a little anxious. He spoke to the other warriors quietly. "Prepare to withdraw."

"Damn humans!" Ivision of the Dark Spirit Clan changed his countenance and shouted as he saw the human groups want to leave. "Kill them first!"

Comoros, Cassidy of the Ghost Mark Clan heard Ivision; they nodded, swinging their arms. "Kill humans first!"

The warriors of the Ghost Mark Clan stormed out from behind Comoros and Cassidy, furiously attacked Qin Hong and the warriors of the Heaven Temple.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned didn't move. They didn't know Qin Hong, Yue Ying, and Ji Mu. Of course, they wouldn't care about their lives. They even wished that the Ghost Mark Clan and the Dark Spirit Clan would kill them all.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying paled. They halted while dashing under the shades of the ancient trees.

They suddenly felt a malicious soul thought snatching down like a soul seal, dizzying their consciousness.

Comoros looked cold and evil. A strange light shone radiantly on his eyes as he was using the mysterious soul technique of the Ghost Mark Clan, covering all people around him.

Although Qin Hong could sense it beforehand as his Mind Perception could recognize the soul seal, he didn't have the competence to avoid it since the soul binding technique the other was using had blocked all directions.

An invisible soul net snatched down from the sky, enveloping the entire area.

The creatures under that massive net felt as if their soul had been stagnant in a bog. The more their souls struggling, the deeper they sank into the darkness. Their consciousness started to scatter, as they were about to lose their minds.

Yang Tian Emperor, Li Zheng Rong, Qin Hong, Ji Mu, and Yue Ying weren't exceptions. These human warriors were covered in

the soul restraining power that Comoros had released. Their Sea of Consciousness became turbulent. Gradually, they were all stirred up.

Quite the contrary, Di Shan wasn't affected. He stayed unharmed.

Although he didn't understand soul power, with the sturdy body of the Winged Clan, he wouldn't be affected by strong soul energy. Regarding using soul, he was really dumb. Although he could recognize something weird, he didn't know where it came from.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned weren't affected either. Their situation was similar to Di Shan of the Black Winged Clan. They all had a tenacious body. They were the creatures that didn't depend on the soul to level up.

To Human Clan, it was the deadly soul fluctuation. But to them, its effects weren't really fierce, so they didn't need to be tense.

The Sun, Moon, and Stars were shining in the sky. The bustling forest where furious battles had taken place suddenly quieted. There was no sound or noise. Only Yang Tian Emperor, Li Zheng Rong, and the others were holding their heads, painfully resisting something.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned stood next to each other. They were discussing in a low tone, considering whether to help Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong or not.

Di Shan stood not far from Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned. His eyes were filled with wicked thoughts. He was urging his power impatiently.

He understood that if Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned didn't help them, Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong would have the same ending as Qin Hong and his warriors. The soul energy Comoros had released would kill them little by little. Di Shan knew his competence. He would never be able to disturb the experts of the

Ghost Mark Clan and the Dark Spirit Clan.

He could only depend on Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned, but he didn't dare to provoke their beast instinct, as he was afraid that it would break everything.

"If he dies, Shi Yan won't let us at ease. He's Shi Yan's great-grandfather." Di Shan waited for a while then pointed at Yang Tian Emperor. "If Shi Yan's agitated, none of you will live in peace."

Hearing Di Shan, Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned couldn't help but change their visage. They became restless quietly.

"ROOAARR!"

However, at this moment, Yang Tian Emperor suddenly roared with a wild countenance. Blood splashed from his entire body. Instantly, he became bloody crazy.

The soul restraint from Comoros lost its effect on Yang Tian Emperor.

The bloody Yang Tian Emperor stormed forward like the moth heading towards the flame. He dashed towards Comoros and shouted, "I want you to die!"

Drops of ruby Immortal Blood flowed through his veins, blending with the God Blood in his body. At this moment, Yang Tian Emperor's power was beyond the power of a Spirit Realm warrior. His flow of energy was wild and brutal, carrying an endless murderous aura.

His flesh and blood started to melt when he got enraged, which looked terrifying.

Everybody gazed at him in fright. Their faces changed dramatically. They didn't expect that this Second Sky of Spirit Realm human warrior could be so formidable and insane at the same time. They all were petrified.

Even Ivision of the Dark Spirit Clan was startled, his face

disbelieving. This was the first time he put on the solemn countenance.

When they were in the Endless Sea, Yang Tian Emperor was the peerless warrior. That year, when he was still at the First Sky of Spirit Realm, he had resisted the three Third Sky of Spirit Realm hotshots of the Demon Clan. The power he had shown them at that time had terrorized people.

Today, he had reached the Second Sky of Spirit Realm. At the most critical time, he had burned the Immortal Blood as the price for his tremendous bursting power.

A precious armor made of blood emerged from his bloody bones, covering his bones. It was vivid red and evilly strange. This armor seemed to drink from his flesh and blood, making his aura more imposing.

A magical blood wheel appeared in Yang Tian Emperor's hand. The blood wheel looked like a sun dyed in blood. It was burning, releasing a garnet light accompanied by the thick scent of blood, darting towards Comoros.

While the magical wheel was moving, blood waves rippled layers by layers. Hundreds of waves piled up, creating a viscous blood object. It nauseated the True God Realm warriors like Comoros. The blood in their bodies couldn't help but surge turbulently.

Yang Tian Emperor's aura burst instantly as a blood light shot toward Comoros.

Comoros was frightened, as he was scared by the erupting power of Yang Tian Emperor. He shouted, "Cassidy!"

Cassidy's face showed that he was struck. The scattered tattoos on his body suddenly revived. The tattoos flew out of his body, turning into so many dark green written techniques, gathering in the void. A strange, evil fluctuation emitted from them.

All ancient trees near Cassidy seemed to be led by that strange

energy. Rigid branches became as flexible as cotton. They extended massively towards Yang Tian Emperor like countless tentacles.

Wood power!

This was the innate ability of the ghost tattoos on Cassidy's body. It could manipulate any kind of flora to help him. The trees would become the extension of his limbs.

These giant trees seemed to have a new life. They wiggled and extended their branches to cover the entire sky. Yang Tian Emperor was coiled, and his speed reduced.

"F\*ck it! MOVE!" Fiery Dragon roared. He twisted his giant body, sweeping his dragon tail forward, cutting the branches piece by piece.

As Blood-maned saw the dragon taking action, his brutal nature was stirred up. He let out a long roar and then started to attack Cassidy. The gold fur in front of his chest was like a shower, shooting and covering both Cassidy and Comoros.

The soul power Comoros had released lost its effects instantly.

Human warriors including Li Zheng Rong, Qin Hong, Ji Mu, and Yue Ying restored their clear mind. They immediately got the situation.

Right at this moment, the tranquil lake started to ripple. A halo of starlight shot out from the bottom of the lake.

Di Shan's eyes brightened. He was cheered up.

"The boy's good now!" Fiery Dragon laughed wildly. He steadied his mind and attacked Comoros while roaring furiously. "The Perpetual Night Forest belongs to the Demon Clan! Who dares to mess here, I'll make him live in misery!"

# Chapter 636: Fierce man!

---

Yang Tian Emperor's blood and flesh were burning hot like flames. He was sinking in insanity. What he was burning was his Immortal Blood and the God Blood he had absorbed!

The Immortal Blood and the God Blood were stimulated thoroughly. The erupting energy had broken Comoros's soul restraint. It also burned Cassidy's wood power, that was entangling him, into ashes.

Just like the moth flying into the flame, he stormed towards Cassidy, using the blood sea to cover him.

In the blood sea Yang Tian Emperor had released, even the True God Realm warrior Cassidy had to struggle hard. The energy from Yang Tian Emperor's body had disordered Cassidy's blood, making it turbulent. His consciousness became hazy.

When Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned saw the big change in their current situation, they didn't hesitate anymore, barging in and entangling Comoros and Ivision.

Above the lake surface, light shadows entangled. Different energies impacted. Two giant figures towered the entire area like giant cloud clusters. Countless trees were exploded and smashed due to the shock waves and energy impact.

Qin Hong and the Heaven Temple's group felt tiny in such an earth-shaking battle. They felt anxious.

Qin Hong didn't dare to act rashly. He wasn't sure if leaving at this moment would enrage the beasts or not. They hid in the broken pieces of wood, still panic-stricken.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying exchanged looks. They gawked, unable to believe their own eyes as they were looking at Yang Tian Emperor in his insanity. They were scared.

"That man, is he really at the Spirit Realm?" Ji Mu sighed in fear,



shaking his head continually. "I can't imagine any Spirit Realm warrior could burst out such formidable power like him."

Yue Ying bit her lips, couldn't hold her miserable smile. "Perhaps, people around Shi Yan are all mysterious and imposing like him. Sometimes, I think whether it's true or not that our Divine Great Land has been peaceful for so long, and that's why we don't have any peerless warrior."

The brutal craziness Yang Tian Emperor was exposing was beyond their common knowledge. It was so formidable!

Cassidy was a True God Realm warrior of the Ghost Mark Clan. He had received the ancient inheritance with the innate mysterious tattoos of the Ghost Mark Clan. Although he hadn't recovered completely, it was enough to have a battle with the peak human warriors of the Divine Great Land.

However, Cassidy was struggling to fight with Yang Tian Emperor. Apparently, he had fallen into the disadvantaged situation!

The development of this battle had gone beyond their imagination. As Ji Mu and Yue Ying found that no one noticed them, they didn't hasten to leave, but hid in a corner and observed the situation. They wanted to know the next events.

Yang Tian Emperor seemed to get crazy. A blood armor covered his exquisite bones. The blood wheel in his hand was rippling blood waves, carrying out the energy of desperation.

Di Shan faced up to watch the sky. His black wings fluttered gently as a helpless, desperate feeling swarmed his soul.

Yang Tian Emperor had also affected him.

At this moment, Di Shan got to know that Yang Tian Emperor had concealed his real competence from the beginning. He hadn't performed his best yet.

The blood wheel and the energy Yang Tian Emperor released

around his body carried a deep despair Intent Domain. It looked like he could only urge his real power instantly at the moment he had fallen into a desperate situation. At that time, he could achieve a state no one had ever imagined.

He had used desperation to awake his rampage power, causing the subdued opponents an immense despair. He had used his steel will, which had been quenched by hundreds of battles, to destroy his opponent's minds.

The way Yang Tian Emperor comprehended his power was apparently an evil, crooked path. It was crazy and stubborn. Only the imposing character, whose face was calm and heart was wild like him, could walk on this extraordinary cultivating path.

He could burn his own flesh and blood in desperation, igniting the God Blood he had absorbed to burst out his best potential in the dead corner.

Only an extremely cold-blooded person, who was cruel to even himself, could comprehend and develop it furiously.

Yang Tian Emperor was that sort of a fierce man!

Using the Second Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base, he had burned his blood and flesh to gather the power from the desperate situation to stimulate his potential and erupt the power hiding in his flesh and blood. He had used the hopeless thought of the certain death to forcefully drag his opponents into the nightmare of despair. He had used his incomparable will to die together with his opponents.

Such a character, if he weren't crazy, he was a madman with great wisdom and willpower.

Cassidy was distressed. Submerged in the Intent Domain created by Yang Tian Emperor, the terrifying sight in which the Ghost Mark Clan was destroyed emerged in his head.

Each member of the Ghost Mark Clan burned like dying

fireworks. They shot up to the sky and fell one by one. Their souls perished before their bodies reached the ground.

As their Grand Sages, he and Comoros had no solution. Their souls were confined, and they could only see things accelerated to the point they were afraid of the most. They could only watch their patriarch being besieged and hurt severely by countless experts. They had witnessed their patriarch burn his soul to send them into the Yin Written Charm Scripture before he sealed it and died.

Painful and pathetic memories uncontrollably rose in his heart. No matter how hard he tried, he couldn't wash them away.

Cassidy's inner demon was born. A helpless despair appeared from a deep place in his heart. He felt all of his power had left him, while his soul was sinking into darkness.

He was a True God Realm expert, but he couldn't get rid of the desperate power Yang Tian Emperor had released. He had been dragged into the abyss of a nightmarish memory. He didn't have the will to resist or the determination to risk his life to escape.

That genocide battle was forever his inner demon. After so many years, he had pressed it down, trying to forget. He didn't dare to recall or think about it.

He thought he had gotten over this painful challenge.

Only when Yang Tian Emperor burned his God Blood and his flesh to release the energy he had comprehended in despair, Cassidy recognized that he hadn't escaped that knot in his heart. He still bore the grudge of that humiliating past.

He was a True God Realm warrior, but his mind was seized, and his power decreased drastically. In Yang Tian Emperor's furious wave of attack – the red blood sea – he was like a simple leaf that would sink in the blood sea at any minute.

Everybody was subdued by the strange phenomenon in the sky.

At his Second Sky of Spirit Realm, the power Yang Tian Emperor had demonstrated now wasn't less than the Peak of True God Realm warriors in the Divine Great Land.

The bursting power in desperation was the most stubborn and extreme power in the world. It was like the sharp sword dyed in blood that could pierce through everything!

Ptui!

Cassidy gushed out blood, dripping on his chest. His clear and bright eyes started to lose the focus, as they no longer had light.

Yang Tian Emperor was now a bloody skeleton. None of his muscles was intact. He looked so terrible that everybody would feel the extreme fear at first glance looking at him.

Some timid people would instantly have butterflies in their stomach and vomit directly.

To which degree of brutality and craziness he had to burn his body to pursue the extreme power Upanishad under the pain of ripping the heart?

The one who could reach this far, who didn't treat his flesh body as he should, if he couldn't increase his strength massively, even God would disagree!

Cassidy spat blood. His aura was restrained. Blood trickled from the corners of his mouth like two small streams, continually flowing down his body. It was as if blood in his body was led by some mysterious force, and it wouldn't stop until all of his blood had run out of his body.

Qin Hong watched the scene from a distance. Later on, he sighed and shook his head. "Hero!"

He suddenly realized that although he had been pressing Yang Tian Emperor, he couldn't put the old man into a hopeless situation. He felt lucky now. Otherwise, what awaited him was the extreme sea blood!

Qin Hong understood that if Yang Tian Emperor had done it on him, with his real competence, he would have died already.

In Heaven Temple, he was addressed as the 'the man who should never be underestimated.' However, as he had witnessed Yang Tian Emperor's burst in a desperate situation, he knew he was too far behind this man.

"No wonder why our Master has appreciated him that much," Ji Mu was bewildered for a while and then sighed. "I rarely admire people. But today, I admire him. Turns out there is a fierce man like him in this world!"

Yue Ying kept silent, just nodding to show her agreement.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned were concentrating on dealing with Comoros and Ivision. These two high-grade Monster Clan's experts were savage. Their powers weren't less than the other two pagans.

When everybody was gazing at Yang Tian Emperor, the rippling lake had calmed down.

The brilliant starlight didn't shower from the sky anymore. The lake surface became the tranquil, bright mirror again. It reflected the fierce fight above the lake.

There was no ripple on the lake surface. A scarlet halo appeared on the lake and started to expand. The extreme heat rose, and shortly, the lake surface cracked open into a small duct.

While the battle above the lake was still excited and furious, a majestic body got out of the lake from that small duct. He slowly emerged in the light of the sun, moon, and stars. Then, he frowned and observed the site.

Di Shan was looking at Yang Tian Emperor with admiration. He suddenly sensed something, turning around. He was dumbstruck, kneeling down right away and greeting with great respect. "Master!"

Shi Yan nodded gently. Millions of star dots were covering him. They looked like a dense cloud of winged insects, hovering around him. At first glance, he looked like he was wearing a brilliant costume made of stars, which was gloriously beautiful.

On his chest, intimidating soul fluctuations rippled. Countless star rivers crossed each other, twinkling as though they could dazzle people. It looked like he had numerous galaxies gathered in front of his chest and helping him collect and maintain the mysterious star abilities of the vast star sea.

"Master, you've broken through again?" Di Shan sensed for a while and then shouted in joy.

Shi Yan beamed a faint smile to confirm his assumption. Suddenly, Shi Yan darkened his face, squinting and looking at Yang Tian Emperor, who was covered in blood. "What's going on?"

Di Shan stooped and quickly briefed him about what had happened.

Shi Yan listened to him with a stiff face. His eyes gradually became cold and evil. Later, he nodded, raking his eyes through Qin Hong's group and ordering Di Shan. "Kill!"

Di Shan happily regarded him and then stormed towards the Heaven Temple's group.

# Chapter 637: Tit for tat!

---

Shi Yan lifted his head while his arms positioned in the posture of drawing a bowstring. Countless star dots massively rolled from his chest to between his arms.

In just a moment, a Big Dipper Bow was formed by the star dots. Fist-sized clusters of star dots arrayed the Big Dipper. A starlight arrow was slowly condensed, then gently nocked on the bow.

Swoosh!

A shooting light crossed the sky and pierced through layers of obstacles, darting towards Qiu Hong.

Qiu Hong's spirit trembled. His Mind Perception Martial Spirit couldn't catch Shi Yan's thought. It couldn't guess the trajectory of this starlight arrow.

He could only feel an imposing danger flying towards him at an unimaginable speed. It was like a dark hand that he couldn't see, grabbing and squeezing his neck resentfully.

Qiu Hong felt suffocated. His pores were all blocked, and his face was filled with fear.

Light dots zoomed in his eyes. That light shot was like a meteorite falling from the immense galaxy, bringing with it the ancient power of the vault of heaven, shooting directly to his chest.

Qiu Hong's visage changed dramatically. He didn't have time to think as he urged his Mind Perception Martial Spirit, pouring all his vehement thought into the golden leaf.

The golden leaf bloomed a fierce, dazzling, golden halo. It transformed in the void, turning into many glorious golden leaves, piling up and creating a hefty shield in front of him.

Clang! Clang!

Light sparked everywhere, while the golden leaf wall was shaken. Sounds echoed like the jingling of bells.

Qiu Hong's face suddenly reddened, as fear arose deep inside his gray eyes.

At this moment, Di Shan arrived, and started to slaughter the other warriors of the Heaven Temple.

"Old Li!" Shi Yan let out a low shout.

Li Zheng Rong reacted timely. He didn't say anything but stormed forward. Many different types secret treasures flew out, bombarding the warriors.

At the same time, Shi Yan summoned War Devil, pointing at Qiu Hong.

War Devil turned into a shadow, disappearing into the bright sky. When it reappeared, it had already reached Qiu Hong.

Qiu Hong discolored. His mind trembled. This was the first time he got scared.

He didn't know why his Mind Perception Martial Spirit had lost its effect. He couldn't read War Devil at all.

War Devil wasn't a creature; it didn't have the soul fluctuation. It was just a fighting puppet with the powers of its owner when he was still alive. The puppet's appearance was to deal with Qiu Hong.

Qiu Hong was always dependent on his Mind Perception Martial Spirit, but it didn't work with War Devil. At this moment, his weakness was exposed. His power wasn't excellent enough. War Devil pushed forward, and the golden halo in front of Qiu Hong was devoured bit by bit. All of a sudden, he fell into a dark abyss.

The War Devil alone was enough to deal with him.

Li Zheng Rong and Di Shan had joined them from a far distance. Sometimes they barged in, totally subduing Qiu Hong.

Not far from them, Shi Yan turned around to look at Yang Tian



Emperor. His eyes became cold and evil as his anger blazed.

He didn't know that the more Yang Tian Emperor was pushed, the more intimidating power he could erupt with. In Shi Yan's eyes, Yang Tian Emperor had consumed all of his flesh and blood, which indicated he had been strenuous to the acme. He was pushed until he went insane.

Comoros and Cassidy arrived here to show him that they wanted to clear the Dark Devil Clan. They also wanted to kill him – their master. To ensure the result, they had even invited the hotshot of the Dark Spirit Clan. They wanted to capture them all at once.

If Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned hadn't supported them, even if Yang Tian Emperor had burst out his energy of desperation, they wouldn't have been able to endure it. Perhaps, they all would have already died.

Shi Yan's face was cold and dark. His lips curled into a freezing smile, as dazzling starlight suddenly shot out from his eyes.

The Big Dipper Bow created by the star power was drawn. Star dots started to congeal on an arrow before it shot out furiously.

Star Fall of the Big Dipper God Arrow!

This arrow was connected tightly with the stars from nine skies. Stars in the sky all twinkled, overwhelming even the bright moon.

Star dots fell like a heavy rain over their heads. Starlight condensed in the sky, turning into the fist-sized stars. They all carried an imposing star energy, moving according to the trajectory Shi Yan had in his mind, as they rumblingly bombarded Heaven Temple's warriors.

Warriors of the Heaven Temple that came here this time didn't have high realms. Their realms were lower than the Spirit Realm. No matter how hard they tried to dodge, they couldn't avoid the star bombardment of the Star Fall. Starlight glowed on them as their living fluctuation faded away, and their aura disappeared.

Warriors who had the Spirit Realm had more falling stars aimed at them. All of a sudden, they found themselves confined in a star barrier. They couldn't move, and their consciousness became hazy.

Right at this moment, Shi Yan aimed his arrow and shot it. The Big Dipper Arrow shot out like the meteor chasing after the moon. Many meteors shot out from the Big Dipper Bow at the same time, darting rapidly as if they could pierce through space, thrusting through the flesh bodies of those Heaven Temple's warriors.

Puff Puff!

Blood splashed, as the Heaven Temple's warriors had their bodies tattered.

Even Qiu Hong, who could see the martial technique beforehand, couldn't gather his luck to escape. Three meteors shot at his legs, breaking his bones.

War Devil seized the chance and covered the man with its dark halo. Then, it fiercely attacked him.

Di Shan and Li Zheng Rong took the opportunity when the Heaven Temple's warriors were disorderly panic-stricken, to harvest their lives one by one.

A magical black ball emerged from Shi Yan's palm. Just like a wandering spirit, it moved around the dead warriors and collected their souls.

While entangling in the battle with Fiery Dragon, Comoros saw the Heaven Temple's warriors die. He was shaken, as he wanted to throw the Yin Written Charm Scripture there so as it could absorb the souls. However, right after that, he saw the Soul Gathering Pearl had taken all the souls.

Comoros felt a chunk of blood stuck in his throat. He was so indignant that he wanted to shout and die.

He wanted to trouble Shi Yan. The reasons he wanted to kill the Dark Devil Clan, besides the humiliation, was because he wanted

to collect souls through slaughtering. This would supply the energy to help their patriarch awaken.

Seeing Shi Yan using the Soul Gathering Pearl to snatch the souls of the dead warriors before they vanished, he was enraged.

"Shi Yan!"

Ji Mu and Yue Ying suddenly cried, their faces frightened.

Shi Yan glared at them with an indifferent countenance. "What?"

"Are you crazy?" Yue Ying's eyes filled with worries. "Do you know what you are doing? If you do that, even the Cult Master can't protect you! You've turned your back to the seven ancient factions! Qin Gu Chuan of the Heaven Temple would never spare your life! He will stimulate the other ancient factions to kill you, your friends, and your family!"

Yue Ying came here this time to deliver Yun Hao's message to Shi Yan, asking them to visit the Secret Domain, where they would have a thorough discussion to see if they could find a solution to bring the Yang family to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain.

Yun Hao had such a risky plan because he appreciated Shi Yan, and wanted to gather the force of the Yang family. He had tried his best to carry out this plan.

As far as he was concerned, the alien tribes were raging here and there. If Shi Yan's team stayed outside, they would be all dead sooner or later. It would be better if they could go to the Secret Domain and join their force to fight against the hotshots of the pagan clans.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying came here with goodwill. However, they found that Shi Yan wanted to kill the warriors of the Heaven Temple. Once this affair was revealed, Shi Yan would never have a chance to be with the seven ancient factions.

"Yes, I'm about to get crazy." Shi Yan looked calm. "I'm not going to bring my men to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. I don't want to

see us as the fish in the fish tank who will never have a chance to escape. About the other stuff... I even killed Chu Bai Qing, let alone these guys!"

"You killed him, indeed!" Qiu Hong screeched.

"True," Shi Yan stood nonchalantly. "Chu Bai Qing's dead. Ning Du Quan's dead. You will be dead, too. You've killed my people. It's just tit for tat! People who come here today will not leave this place alive. All of you. I want to see how many warriors Heaven Temple can send here for me to kill continually!"

He continued to gather and condense the star energy as he knocked the arrows and shot them like a furious storm. He killed them one by one, except for Qiu Hong, to prove his words.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying were petrified; they were totally struck dumb. Chu Bai Qing's death made them realize that Shi Yan was really crazy. Just like Yang Tian Emperor, he wanted a big fight at any cost.

"So... Do we need to linger here?" Ji Mu beamed a forced smile, looking at Yue Ying as he didn't know what to say in this situation.

"You guys shouldn't think about leaving this place, either." Shi Yan's face became cold.

Yue Ying discolored. She got enraged immediately. "Shi Yan, you won't spare me, will you?"

"I don't want to disclose things happened today. No one can leave." Shi Yan was indifferent. "Before I get to know of the plans of the seven ancient factions, you have to stay where I can see you. If you guys want to go without my permission, don't blame me for being impolite."

Ji Mu and Yue Ying were indignant, their faces grimaced.

"I have to be careful," Shi Yan was still calm. Ji Mu and Yue Ying couldn't shake him. "I hope you will understand my worries. Going the same way with me, at this moment, isn't a bad thing to you

guys."

"Di Shan, Old Li, watch them!" Shi Yan let out a low shout. Then, he contacted the War Devil using his soul to ask it to be more watchful.

After that, his eyes turned garnet. Negative energy burst out from his body, as pallid tentacles jutted out from his pores. He looked eccentric and evil.

The Sky Destroyer divine sword appeared in his palms, and the eyes on the sword opened. An evil, destructive energy fluctuation rippled, raking through every corner from him as its core.

Qiu Hong's soul shivered. His Mind Perception Martial Spirit sent him an intimidating fear. He felt hopeless.

"Lock!"

Shi Yan's garnet eyes gazed at him, and then he roared suddenly.

It was as if thunder reverberated in Qiu Hong's head. Blood dripped down from seven holes in his face while he was shaking uncontrollably.

Di Shan, War Devil, and Li Zheng Rong seized the chance to attack him. Immediately, Qiu Hong's blood and flesh exploded. His soul was like a balloon that was blown too much and burst directly.

Shi Yan pointed at Ji Mu and Yue Ying. "Wait until the situation gets better, I won't maltreat you. If you still want to leave, don't blame me for being merciless."

Then, he held the Sky Destroyer divine sword, with the three snow-white Bone Thorns in his sleeves, and walked to Comoros while the pale tentacles were wiggling around his body.

The Soul Gathering Pearl floated behind him. It was dragging Qiu Hong's soul into the bead.

Essence Qi of Qiu Hong's group turned into invisible energy that naked eyes couldn't observe. They were flying from everywhere

and connecting with the ‘tentacles’ jutted out from his body, making his appearance more evil and frightening.

## Chapter 638: Negative field !

---

None of the Heaven Temple's warriors, including Qiu Hong, escaped death. Under Shi Yan, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong's slaughter, they were all dead bodies now.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying were indignant. They wanted to fight with Shi Yan, but when they witnessed Qiu Hong getting killed easily, they felt a chill in their hearts. The energy they had accumulated discreetly slipped away.

It wasn't that they were scared, but they didn't want to see both sides bear losses. And, they didn't want to cause grudge against Shi Yan.

In their eyes, Shi Yan was crazy at this moment. He didn't have his cognition with him now. Facing with him under such circumstances wasn't a wise move.

They wanted to wait until Shi Yan restored his calmness to discuss again.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying didn't move, waiting at their spots in silence.

Their eyes were bright, looking at Shi Yan without blinking. They didn't care about the gazes that came from Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, and War Devil.

Shi Yan had told them his ideas. As long as they didn't hasten and act rashly, they didn't need to worry about being oppressed.

Di Shan and Li Zheng Rong trusted Shi Yan completely, and they would always follow his words.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying observed Shi Yan's demonic appearance, as fear and surprise arose from deep inside their eyes. The pale finger-sized 'tentacles' covered his entire body, condensed from the negative energy, between one to three meters long.

Looking at him from a far distance, Shi Yan didn't look like a

human anymore. He now appeared as a beast or demon that frightened people.

Yue Ying and Ji Mu could see that those 'tentacles' weren't real. They were just condensed energy.

However, each 'tentacle' was releasing terrifying soul fluctuations. Even on standing a couple hundred meters from him, Yue Ying and Ji Mu seemed to be affected. The desires in their hearts were stirred up, generating negative moods.

They were petrified, although they knew Shi Yan didn't aim at them, as he didn't treat them his enemy.

The ones Shi Yan considered his enemies were Comoros, Cassidy, and Ivision. His surging soul fluctuation from the tentacles only aimed for those three.

A magical soul field was created by the pallid tentacles, turning them into soul ribbons, tying Comoros, Cassidy, and Ivision.

A negative, chaotic aura surged from Shi Yan like a rising tide. The negative moods rumblingly covered the three of them, as if they were submerged in the deep ocean.

However, this mood just stayed for three seconds. Afterward, from deep inside their eyes, the feeble light of desires flashed.

A kind of energy that could distort the Sea of Consciousness filled the space around Shi Yan. The 'tentacles' emerged from his acupuncture points constantly released the negative moods, creating a magical Negative Field, which affected all kinds of creatures around him.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned were also affected. The desires hiding in their inner world rose. Their minds were occupied as they had entered the bloodthirsty state, the basic instinct of the Monster Clan.

Yang Tian Emperor was also affected. He had already fallen into insanity. Under the effect of the Negative Field, his aura rocketed.



Desperation filled his eyes, but his power increased one more time.

Waves of blood sea rose and splashed one after another, striking on Cassidy. Cassidy felt his chest heavy and pressed, as blood trickled from the corners of his mouth uncontrollably.

The blood wheel on Yang Tian Emperor's hand shimmered with a bizarre red halo, covering half the sky. It even dyed the horizon blood red, and Cassidy sank in it gradually.

Holding the Sky Destroyer divine sword in his hand, Shi Yan, at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, could feel the magical effect of the negative energy deeply. He was still calm in the Negative Field. He gathered and poured the negative energy more into the sword, as more blood red eyes opened one by one on the sword.

The garnet pupils were like tongues of beasts, releasing an evil blood light that illuminated the whole area.

A destructive Intent Domain emerged from the sword blade, expanding everywhere.

Big trees shriveled, luxuriant green foliage yellowed and died, and insects stopped singing from deep underground. It seemed their life was reaped instantly.

Shi Yan closed his eyes, adding the Intent Domain he had comprehended into the Sky Destroyer divine sword. The Death Intend Domain became a place to slaughter, gradually pushing forward.

At the same time, another vital soul thought of his shot towards Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned. His soul thought gave back the vitality to Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned, which saved them from the effects of the Death Intent Domain. Also, it helped Yang Tian Emperor promote his strength better.

Shi Yan's Death Intent Domain overflowed into the Sky Destroyer. A tranquil, sluggish thought started to transgress the area, while the foliage on its way had its life sucked away.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying kept observing silently. They looked at the thousand-year-old trees wither rapidly, as if they had been dead years ago. The luxuriant grass turned yellow, dried, and finally turned into dark fertilizer for the soil. The singing of insects disappeared instantly.

These signs outlined the space in front of Shi Yan, which was wrecked by the formidable, endless, destructive Intent Domain.

Ji Mu and Yue Ying couldn't stand the sight. Their eyes changed in fright. Eventually, they realized that if Shi Yan wanted to kill them, it wouldn't be a difficult task.

Different from the brutal and crazy Yang Tian Emperor, Shi Yan's attack didn't multiply or thunder. It was strangely quiet. But this quietness gave people a fierce anxiety. It was like the Death embracing the Earth.

Shi Yan's attack was like a calm stream with his Intent Domain as the pioneer, followed by his powers, which carried some meanings of death and destruction in this world. His attack had seized the minds of the three True God Realm warriors, Comoros, Cassidy, and Ivision. They couldn't maintain their sound mind anymore.

The furious Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned were calmed down by his vital soul light. The two hotshots of the Monster Clan looked at the situation around them, staying silent.

Yang Tian Emperor was the only warrior who wasn't affected much. He was still bombarding Cassidy. With the Blood Wheel in his hand, he looked like a bloody skinned man. Everybody would shiver at the first at him.

Cassidy had lost his mind. He forgot to use the advanced soul of the Ghost Mark Clan while wrestling with Yang Tian Emperor. They were entangling with each other in close combat.

With only one glance, Shi Yan knew Cassidy was over. Yang Tian Emperor would crush him fiercely.

Shi Yan had experienced the bursting power of the Yang family's Immortal Martial Spirit in close combat. Yang Tian Emperor's Immortal Martial Spirit had a high level. As long as he hadn't burned all of his Immortal Blood, he could have an undying body. Only someone who had mental problems would want to fight face to face with him.

Cassidy was that sort of a person.

"Help me kill that hotshot of the Dark Spirit Clan." Shi Yan was calm. His eyes were like the tranquil water in the well as he talked to Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned. "Kill him. We all gain benefits!"

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned were hesitant. At this moment, they couldn't decide. They exchanged looks and used the distinctive body gestures of Monster Clan to communicate.

They were from the Monster Clan, one of the alien tribes. Cooperating with Shi Yan had violated their rules already. If they joined Shi Yan and killed the members of the Ghost Mark Clan and the Dark Spirit Clan, once it was exposed, the consequence would be like Shi Yan's, the seven ancient factions would reject them. They would become the crooked traitors of the Monster Clan.

They had shouted, telling Comoros and Ivision to wait and see their deadly powers. However, at this point, they were hesitant.

Shi Yan frowned as he changed his mind. His eyes gave people an ancient, torrential aura.

The Big Dipper Bow was created one more time. He touched his chest, as countless star dots gushed out, turning into clusters of light which were as big as a finger, and shot forward thunderously.

This attack seemed to provoke the stars in the sky again. Abundant starlight above their heads showered like the water of the Milky Way. Starlight poured into the clusters of star dots, turning into the sharp Star Arrow, covering all members of the Ghost Mark Clan who Comoros had led to this place.

He closed his eyes, and when he opened them again, they were blood red.

Flows of negative energy diffused from the 'tentacles' on his body. At that moment, Shi Yan's evil aura rocketed. Shortly, after three breaths, his aura had surpassed Yang Tian Emperor!

Third Sky of Rampage Realm!

Shi Yan's eyes were tranquil. They didn't carry any emotions a human should have. He looked like an evil, ancient creature from the foreign land, arrogantly looking at the creatures under his eyes as if he had the control of Death in his eyes.

Essence Qi from Qiu Hong and the warriors of the Heaven Temple had entered his body through the tentacles, stimulating his negative energy to the acme, making him evil and brutal.

When he had entered the Third Sky of Rampage Realm the second time, the bursting energy he could urge now was intimidatingly formidable, something he had never experienced before!

When it fused with his Qi and the energy in his muscles, the combination had made the power he could control surpass Yang Tian Emperor!

His eyes weren't wild and stubborn anymore. At this moment, they were so cold that they could chill people's hearts.

He clutched the Sky Destroyer divine sword, walking deliberately. Occasionally, he swung his arm once. No blood light was generated from his hand movement, however, one of the Ghost Mark Clan's warriors exploded on the spot. Pieces of flesh scattered everywhere.

Many warriors who came here with Comoros had the Spirit Realm cultivation base. However, after each move of Shi Yan, they were like they had been tied tightly, unable to even wiggle.

If someone scrutinized the scene, they would see the 'tentacles' of

his entire body jiggle furiously, as if they were capturing something.

Only Shi Yan knew what the 'tentacles' were coiling; it was the soul of the warrior!

Although the Ghost Mark Clan was well-known for their soul ability, they couldn't avoid the negative energy 'tentacles.' Even if they stood a thousand meters away, their souls would still be seized.

It seemed those 'tentacles' could appear directly in their Sea of Consciousness. They were bizarre and malicious indeed!

Shi Yan took each step nonchalantly. People present there then saw the Ghost Mark Clan's hotshot, who was a thousand meters away from him, explode.

Afterward, the Soul Gathering Pearl would snatch their souls all, while Shi Yan's tentacles collected their Essence Qi. Shi Yan was now a devil walking on earth, which could easily take lives of any creatures, snatching their rights to be alive.

# Chapter 639: Repercussion

---

Shi Yan's Negative Field affected Comoros, Cassidy, and Ivision, the three True God Realm warriors of the pagan tribes. Their minds were blurry, which subdued their energy altogether.

These three True God Realm warriors of the alien tribes had been worn out over ten thousand years. Their power had been damaged badly, or perhaps they were hurt before, and were yet to recover fully.

Comoros' team had high realms, but the energy accumulated in their bodies was far behind the human experts at the same realm, such as Yun Hao or Qin Gu Chuan. Without the support from Bao Ao and experts of the Corpse Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan in the Shady Firmament Old Mound could never destroy the entire Spirit Treasure Sect.

With insufficient energy, they couldn't bring out their competence well. Of course, they couldn't show the ability of their realms.

Comoros had the cultivation base at the Third Sky of True God Realm, but he got the most wounded body that year, and he hadn't recovered fully until now. At most, he could endure a fight with Yun Hao, but he would fall in a disadvantaged situation for sure.

Cassidy and Ivision were at the Second Sky of True God Realm, but their real competence was only equal to Chu Bai Qing. Otherwise, Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned wouldn't have been able to subdue them.

The Dark Spirit Clan and the Ghost Mark Clan were the strong tribes in the Antiquity Time. If they had restored their powers to their peak, Yang Tian Emperor, Fiery Dragon, and Blood-maned would have never been their opponents.

Shi Yan walked calmly in the void. Ash-gray smoke moved

around him, as thick as the steam above the lake. He surprised people a lot.

Comoros, Cassidy, and Ivision had their minds occupied by the Negative Field, which made them forget to use the fighting method they understood the best. They were instinctively urging the energy in their bodies to counter, which wasn't a good move.

Ghost Mark Clan's members fell and exploded one by one along with Shi Yan's steps. Their Essence Qi and souls were absorbed completely by him.

"Ahhhhhhhh!"

A desperate, mournful roar came out from the mouth of the last warrior of the Ghost Mark Clan at First Sky of Spirit Realm. His voice was like a sharp weapon that could shake people's hearts.

Comoros was baffled. A strange light dot sparkled in his sleeve all of a sudden. The Yin Written Charm Scripture flew out, releasing an immense, gray mist, covering Cassidy, Comoros, and Ivision altogether.

Comoros almost awakened instantly, his eyes clear and calm.

As soon as he woke up, he found all of his clansmen accompanying him had exploded to death. They were just pieces of meat and blood puddles now.

Comoros's eyes reddened instantly.

"Earth Spirit Bind!" (坤: Kun, one of the Eight Trigrams, symbolizing Earth – TL)

He let out a low cry that was almost inaudible. The sound wave from his mouth stormed into the Yin Written Charm Scripture.

Numerous eccentric ghost scripture on the Yin Written Charm Scripture started to move. Mysterious Yin Qi overflowed from the scripture, blending with Comoros's energy. Flows of soul energy also reached Comoros's Sea of Consciousness.

A strange, invisible aura diffused from Comoros. His reddened eyes became clear again. He held the Yin Written Charm Scripture, moving his hands to form some hand seals while continually muttering something under his breath.

Yang Tian Emperor was attacking Cassidy furiously. All of a sudden, his bloody body trembled, as fine cracks appeared on his blood red armor.

Numerous ghost symbols of the Yin Written Charm Scripture flew up to the sky, arraying a magical word formation. It was like the writing of some mysterious technique, that furiously absorbed the energy of heaven and earth, converting it into Yin Qi.

Countless five-colored ghost writings appeared in the sky from thin air, interweaving with each other and creating the seal of an ancient barrier. A strange, invisible energy was generated.

Even though they couldn't see the attack or impact, the armor covering Yang Tian Emperor's chest cracked at a speed naked eyes could observe. It seemed ready to explode shortly.

Yang Tian Emperor was sinking in his slaughtering, but he suddenly awakened. His bloody body shook violently.

Although Comoros's power had been decreased dramatically compared to his peak state, he was still a True God Realm expert. This time, he was determined to use the accumulated energy of the Yin Written Charm Scripture to make up for his energy's shortage. Eventually, he could use the power that he could bring out when he was at his peak state.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned were impacted. Blood splashed from their giant bodies. Those Ghost Mark Clan's symbols seemed to cut them too.

The two experts of the Monster Clan screeched. They hastened to shrink their bodies, transforming to human form to minimize the impact.



Comoros stooped with a cold face while his hands were constantly making hand seals, pouring into the Yin Written Charm Scripture.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture sparkled, releasing so many magical symbols dancing in the air. They arrayed a strange ghost scripture formation, creating a terrifying restraining and cutting energy.

Yang Tian Emperor couldn't move anymore. He halted in the void as pain transgressed over his entire body like a surging tide.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned didn't dare to act recklessly. They used the rigid body of the Monster Clan to resist. Their blood and flesh mixed, bringing an extreme pain that they'd rather die than endure.

Just like them, Shi Yan was affected, his body cut by some invisible threads.

However, unlike to Yang Tian Emperor, Fiery Dragon, and Blood-maned, he didn't scream in pain. He just frowned and stayed calm as usual.

The others didn't know when his body started to glow with a golden halo. At first glance, he looked like a freak that was molded from pure gold. After that, the invisible ghost scripture formation couldn't cut through his body.

He suddenly got it, as he finally recognized the effects of the Golden Marrow of the Golden Giant, which had promoted its effects in his body. This kind of defense was unbreakable, even dissolving Comoros's mysterious attack.

Seeing Yang Tian Emperor, Fiery Dragon, and Blood-maned unable to resist the formation anymore, Shi Yan contemplated and then touched his chest.

The Star Original Essence he had absorbed into his heart looked like the most glorious big diamond as it flew out under the star

power's driving and struck towards Comoros.

The boundless sky where stars shone dazzlingly seemed to expand further. A downpour of starlight from the sky looked like a big river pouring into the Star Original Essence. Shi Yan was struggling, using his soul to manipulate the Star Original Essence as it approached closer to Comoros.

Just like ranges of mountains collapsing at the same time, the small Star Original Essence bloomed out a formidable pressure, which made Comoros pale in fear.

The Star Original Essence was the intrinsic nature of the stars in the sky. It was much heavier than it looked. A fist-sized Star Original Essence could be heavier than ten mountains. Under such pressure, Comoros couldn't hold his fort.

Crack Crack Crack!

The Star Original Essence was pressing to the point that even space was about to crack. The cracking sounds echoed in the void, making people's hearts shiver.

The mountain-like pressure covered the entire space. Even the True God Realm warriors like Cassidy felt his body getting unusually heavy, his soul stagnant.

Comoros mused on the Star Original Essence, then quickly urged his energy to counter. Ultimately, he couldn't stand it anymore, retreating the ghost symbols in the sky into the Yin Written Charm Scripture. He was struggling hard to stand still.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Three snow-white Bone Thorns glided through space and appeared simultaneously behind Comoros, Cassidy, and Ivision, stabbing them violently.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Three Bone Thorns were refined from the bones of the level 10

beast. They attacked the three aliens from their backs, but two of them couldn't pierce through Comoros and Ivision. However, blood gushed out from their mouths.

Cassidy's situation was the most pitiful. A Bone Thorn pierced through his chest from his back. His heart was torn, and his life was sliding away from him. Cassidy couldn't endure anymore.

Comoros's face grimaced. He roared and crazily shouted, as he was about to strike a fatal attack.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned stormed over with their bloody bodies. Their ferocious instinct had been stimulated. They wanted to pull Comoros and kill him.

"GO!" Ivision shouted.

Comoros was struck. He swung the Yin Written Charm Scripture in his hand to collect Cassidy's God Soul. Then, he urged the Yin Written Charm Scripture the second time to pull Ivision into the scripture too.

A marvelous wave of energy shot out from the Yin Written Charm Scripture.

Comoros and Ivision shrank rapidly inside that energy wave, as countless dazzling beams interweaved in layers of space next to them. The others then saw their bodies shrink, until they were as big as a light dot. They then disappeared into thin air like dust.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned swarmed over, but they found that Comoros and Ivision had disappeared completely. They left nothing behind, not even a wave of soul energy.

Lying in that place was only the body of Cassidy, which was pierced through. His God Soul had been collected and kept in the Yin Written Charm Scripture.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture was the halidom of the Ghost Mark Clan at the Divine Grade. Comoros using the scripture to escape in just a blink was something Shi Yan's team had never

thought about, and they could only watch the others leave.

"Damn the Ghost Mark Clan!" Fiery Dragon roared indignantly, while blood still dripped from his body. "He has given me bad wounds. I'm so unlucky!"

Blood-maned also had so many open cuts on his body. Even the steel-like bodies of the Monster Clan couldn't endure Comoros's furious attack.

Yang Tian Emperor's eyes restored their natural look. In the others' eyes, he was just a bloody skeleton. Without blood and flesh, he looked pitiful and scary at the same time.

At first glance, Shi Yan understood that Yang Tian Emperor was hurt badly. Even if he could receive treatment timely, he couldn't recover in just a short time.

Burning his God Blood and his own flesh and blood to urge all the potential power of his body, Yang Tian Emperor had burst out a formidable power. However, it was beyond his endurance. And, Comoros had attacked him, cracking his armor.

Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, Ji Mu, and Yue Ying were hiding at a far distance and observing the situation. At this moment, they finally got the guts to step over, looking at Yang Tian Emperor with a frightened but respectful expression.

"How are you?" Shi Yan moved, walking towards Yang Tian Emperor. He asked while taking in the Essence Qi from Cassidy.

"I got hurt badly, and I can't recover in a short time." Yang Tian Emperor's voice seemed to sound from his throat, which was really bizarre. "However, after this fight, my understanding of the power of desperation has reached a whole new world. If nothing unexpected happens, when I'm healed, my realm will increase too."

Shi Yan was struck with joy, as a light flashed across his head. "Great Grandpa, don't worry. I'll make you recover fast... really

fast!"

# Chapter 640: Demon Clan? God Clan?

---

The area by the lake became quiet again.

Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned transformed into their beast shape, balling their bodies near the lake to heal themselves in silence. The two level 9 hotshots were using the secret techniques of the Demon Clan to gather heaven and earth spiritual Qi.

Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, Yue Ying, and Ji Mu, the four Spirit Realm warriors, kept silent, but many thoughts were moving in their heads.

Shi Yan was standing next to Yang Tian Emperor. Yang Tian Emperor was now a bloody skeleton. After his insanity had subsided, he was exhausted. The ferocious, wild aura he possessed had settled. From deep inside his eyes, people could see that he was fatigued.

Shi Yan sat neatly. His face was indifferent, his eyes slightly squinted.

The 'tentacles' jutting out from his acupuncture points had retreated. They were shaking inside his acupuncture points to filter the energy.

Trying to press down the craziness in his heart, he sent his thought to the Star Original Essence, using its power to clear his mind and purify his soul. This way, he could keep himself safe from the negative energy's side effects.

He had used the Star Original Essence to understand the star power. His Star Martial Spirit had a new breakthrough, which promoted his realm to the Third Sky of Spirit Realm.

As he had many boosts, when he entered the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, he could bring out the power of a True God Realm warrior, which helped him seize the upper hand while fighting with Comoros.

Feeling the energies in his body calm down, Shi Yan used his Soul Consciousness to sense, and saw his unbreakable golden skeleton.

The Golden Marrow of the Golden Giant's bones had improved his body's durability to another level. Now, it was inconceivably rigid.

His Petrification Martial Spirit had obviously surpassed the barrier that the Shi family had always encountered. After the second breakthrough, even Shi Jian couldn't imagine his situation at this moment.

Thanks to all sorts of fortuitous encounters, he had been able to resist Comoros' attack with a body that would never be broken. He could also stabilize his mind and attack Comoros, making him run away in fear.

Today, he had the cultivation base at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, and an incomparable body. His negative energy was tremendous. He had a new breakthrough in his martial spirits, along with the undying body of the Yang family. The combination of these miraculous abilities gave him the foundation to deal with higher-realm warriors.

Quieting down his emotions, Shi Yan used the mysterious martial spirit he had gotten the first to refine the Essence Qi that he had absorbed.

The negative emotions generated from this process were pressed down by his brave and persistent will. As he felt the torrential storms in his acupuncture points, he calmed his mind and emptied it.

After an unknown period, he woke up, putting two hands on Yang Tian Emperor all of a sudden.

Yang Tian Emperor's bloody body was shaken, while a divine light bloomed out from his eyes. He couldn't help but let out a low shout. "Little Yan! You can't!"

Yang Tian Emperor could feel a mysterious energy from Shi Yan's palms. This energy quickly merged with his Essence Qi and combined with his blood, bringing formidable energy fluctuations to help him condense the Immortal Blood once again.

This massive energy was rolling into Yang Tian Emperor's body, making him feel as if his body was soaked in a hot spring. It was so comfortable that he almost groaned.

However, he shortly restrained his joy, as he thought that if he absorbed this energy, Shi Yan would have to consume his own energy massively.

Thus, he didn't want to take it in, and even wanted to stop receiving it unilaterally.

"Don't move!" Shi Yan shouted, talking in a serious tone. "Great Grandpa, I don't need this energy. If I want it, I can always obtain it quite easily. I have a magical martial spirit, which helps me not to worry about lacking energy... forever."

Having heard him, Yang Tian Emperor's bloody skeleton trembled.

Although Shi Yan didn't say it clearly, Yang Tian Emperor could understand the hidden meaning in his words – He would never have to worry about lacking energy. How dangerous it was to go against the natural order like that?

He suddenly recognized why Shi Yan could progress that fast, entering the new realms before his estimated time. Apparently, it was related to the martial spirit Shi Yan had just mentioned.

"You should take in this energy. It will be handy to your body now," Shi Yan continued to mutter. "I don't need it now. Even if I need it, it's as easy as a piece of cake to obtain it again."

Yang Tian Emperor contemplated for a while and then received the energy from him with joy.

Shi Yan suddenly felt the power he had been pouring into Yang



Tian Emperor's body flow smoothly. He knew Yang Tian Emperor agreed to receive it.

Soon, the mysterious energy refined by his acupuncture points all poured into Yang Tian Emperor's body.

Yang Tian Emperor started to condense the Immortal Blood again. Next, he used his Immortal Blood to perform the Immortal Rebirth Secret of the Yang family to grow his flesh again, connecting his broken vessels and tendons.

After four hours, Yang Tian Emperor had become a lively human again from a bloody skeleton.

Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, Yue Ying, and Ji Mu stood not far from them. They all gawked in fear, but didn't know what to say.

Yang Tian Emperor had used the Immortal Martial Spirit of the Yang family to its peak ability. He had used the Immortal Blood to grow his flesh again. This miracle was beyond their knowledge.

Only Shi Yan knew that after each time their bodies were annealed by the Immortal Rebirth Secret, they would surpass the tenacious level of the previous bodies, which would facilitate the growth of their powers.

After each time of rebirth, their bodies would change completely. When Yang Tian Emperor recovered, the tenacity of his body leaped up by a big part compared to the previous one.

Moreover, Yang Tian Emperor had also broken through to the Third Sky of Spirit Realm after this event.

"I want to stay quiet for a little bit!" After Yang Tian Emperor had recovered his body, he uttered simply while joy could be seen on his face.

Shi Yan reacted immediately and used the Earth Flame to create the passage leading to the bottom of the lake. He brought Yang Tian Emperor there, followed by Di Shan and Li Zheng Rong.

Now, Shi Yan, Fiery Dragon, Blood-maned, and Yue Ying, Ji Mu who came from the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, were standing by the lake now.

"You guys stay here. When the time comes, I will let you leave." Shi Yan glared at the other two, talking to them faintly. "Don't worry; I won't mistreat you. Not long afterward, you will figure out that being with me was a wise decision."

"Boy, you are so naughty!" Generous laughter arose from a far distance.

Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon were trying to restore fast, jolting up with a solemn expression.

A halo appeared in front of Shi Yan, gradually turning into a good-looking middle-aged man. He was smiling warmly.

"Master!" Ji Mu and Yue Ying bent down to greet him.

Shi Yan kept quiet for a while, then also bent and greeted him. "Master, thanks for protecting the Yang family. I will always keep your favor in mind."

"You remember my favor, but you treat my elders like that?" Yun Hao shook his head with an odd face. "Ji Mu and Yue Ying came here to bring you to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. The pagans are raging outside. Eventually, they would kill you all."

"Harrumph!" Blood-maned disagreed. "We are living in good harmony with Shi Yan. Why do we need to harm him? Only you cunning humans could have many wild schemes. You guys always attack your own fellows."

Yun Hao felt funny. "It's really me who does things in vain. I didn't think that you would stay with the pagans. Sigh, it was my one-sided thought I guess."

Ji Mu and Yue Ying frowned. They had witnessed the dangerous interaction between Shi Yan and the alien tribes. They didn't know what to say.

"I will keep your good thought in mind," Shi Yan was honest and respectful while talking with Yun Hao. "But I don't want to go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. I've killed many people of the seven ancient factions... I can't stay with them. I know my situation isn't good either. Sooner or later, the seven ancient factions will aim at me. I just want to survive. No matter what I have to do, as long as I can stay in the Perpetual Night Forest, I don't care whether my partners are pagans or not."

Yun Hao was surprised. He hesitated for a while and then said, "You know, when you do that, you will never have a chance to be accepted by Human Clan. At least... members of the seven ancient factions will never approve your operations. If you do so, you will stand on the opposite side to us."

"I understand," Shi Yan smiled begrudgingly. "I can't destroy the Dark Devil Clan and the Winged Clan. The relationship between the alien tribes and me is deep, and the current situation isn't something I want to see. The seven ancient factions are pushing us. I just do my best to protect myself."

"Who says Shi Yan is a human?!?" At this moment, Blood-maned screamed from the other side. "He has the bloodline of alien tribes. Otherwise, he wouldn't be like that. You Human Clan has your bloodline mixed with other tribes. You are not pure, you know. Without blending with our alien tribes' bloodline, you low humans, how could you grow that fast? You always say pagans and aliens, how clean do you think you are?"

"I don't know about the others, but the Head Master of the Yang family should have an alien bloodline. His tremendous recovery ability is something only the alien tribes can have. You Human Clan will never have such innate ability!"

Fiery Dragon suddenly mocked, "If you hadn't mixed with our bloodline, the Human Clan would have been annihilated in the Antiquity Epoch. How could you slowly rebel that way? Harrumph! The reason why humans can thrive fast is because of

snatching and robbing. You've robbed spiritual Qi, precious materials, the properties of different clans. You are the corrupted insects of this continent!"

"The other tribes agree with this statement," Blood-maned groaned.

Yun Hao was muted by the words of the two experts of the Monster Clan.

Shi Yan was startled too. He frowned, looking at Fiery Dragon with a dull face. "You say there's alien tribe bloodline in my Great Grandpa's body?"

"Absolutely!" Fiery Dragon confirmed resolutely. "Human Clan has never had such a vigorous recovery ability. In the Antiquity Time, there were only two clans which had such ability."

"Which ones?" Shi Yan asked with astonishment.

"The Demon Clan...," Fiery Dragon answered seriously. He paused for a while, then continued gingerly, "...or the God Clan."

# Chapter 641: Parting ways

---

The God Clan was one of the ten antiquity clans, the strongest one.

Whenever members of the other clans got their inheritance, they would also receive the secrets. Then, they would try to avoid mentioning this clan. This clan seemed to be the forbidden word, which could tremble the other hotshots of the alien tribes.

According to the legends from different clans, the first clan that ever existed on this continent was the God Clan. They seemed to be the favored kind of the Almighty in heaven. From the day they were born, they were destined to be the lord of this place with endless powers.

During a very long period, the God Clan was the real leader of the other tribes. It was the leader who ruled the ten tribes, controlling the entire continent.

But all that changed one day when the other nine tribes united and banished the God Clan, this powerful clan. Thus, the strongest clan of this epoch disappeared.

Many other clans told the legend of this clan. They told the tale that when the nine tribes joined hands and dealt with the God Clan, this clan had run away, leaving the Grace Mainland, going to the universe. They had never appeared in the Grace Mainland ever since.

There were many tales about the God Clan. However, when the pagan tribes talked about the God clan, there were always some similar stories about how strong their supernatural powers were.

The nine clans had pushed this clan away from the Grace Mainland, but no tribe dared to say they had the triumph over this clan.

When Fiery Dragon mentioned the clan, he was a little bit

uneasy. He didn't dare to talk clearly. "The God Clan was the strongest clan in the Antiquity Time. Every tribe recognized them. If the God Clan were still on this continent, they would be our Masters, as before."

Shi Yan was dumbstruck. Later on, he shook his head with a forced smile. "It's okay. No matter it's the bloodline of the Demon Clan or the God clan, it's no different to me. I don't care what tribe it is, whoever helps me will be my friend, and whoever troubles me will be my enemy! No matter which race it is!"

Blood-maned really liked his attitude. He laughed evilly and then shouted. "Don't worry. We Monster Clan will be your friends. Being abandoned by the Human Clan isn't something so terrible. Human Clan will be cleared up, anyway."

Yun Hao's face grimaced.

"I'm not going to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, but I always keep your favor in my heart." Shi Yan sighed, shaking his head. "If Cult Master is here, Ji Mu and Yue Ying can leave with you. I just hope that we wouldn't meet again on the battlefield."

Yun Hao was struck. He slammed his eyebrows together as if he was thinking about the best result that could be obtained.

"You should be careful. If you don't go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain this time, I'm afraid you won't have any chance later." He pondered for a while and then said with worry. "Even if nothing happened today, the seven ancient factions would notice. I think... some people have started their stealthy operation, right?"

Shi Yan harrumphed and nodded, "It's true! After they got out of the Secret Domain, they attacked my people not just once. If they didn't push us, I wouldn't treat them that way."

"You should solve it," Yun Hao sighed. "The girl you said... Xia Xin Yan... she isn't an ordinary girl. She has entered the True God Realm, and has condensed the God Soul. Soon, she will be one of

our sharpest weapons."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He kept silent for seconds and then cracked a smile. "Good then. I know she would reach this point. She's faster than me."

"Don't you feel lost?" Yun Hao felt strange. "This means the gap between you two has been widened."

Shi Yan just smiled, but didn't answer him.

"Yeah, and Lin Meng of the Pure Land has reached the Third Sky of True God Realm. She seems to depend on that girl to break through again using some secret techniques." Yun Hao hesitated for a while. "If Lin Meng succeeds, we don't need to stay in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain anymore."

Shi Yan didn't react to his words. However, Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned changed their countenance, screaming in fear.

Lin Meng was the leader of the Pure Land. She had always wanted to kill the pagans. If she could break through to the King God Realm, she would be the nightmare for the alien tribes. And, the Monster Clan in the Perpetual Night Forest would be the first target.

"Not that fast or easy. The failure rate is relatively high though." Yun Hao frowned. "Perhaps Lin Ming would fail. However, if Xia Xin Yan could break through that fast, of course, she would reach the King God Realm soon. Shi Yan, have you ever thought that in the future, you and that little girl would have to stand on two opposite sides?"

"When the seven ancient factions attacked the Yang family, did she... did she show her attitude?" Shi Yan's sparkled, asking calmly.

"She has never shown up. The Pure Land has hidden her like a treasure. No one knows what attitude she has." Yun Hao shook his head. "Anyway, you have to think about it... I think, they will take

action not long afterward."

Shi Yan nodded while pondering. "Please tell Bing Qing Tong of the Ice Emperor City that if she has time, please come and meet me."

Yun Hao burst out into a strange laughter and then nodded at him.

"Take care. I will always memorize your favor, Cult Master," said Shi Yan sincerely.

Yun Hao wore a regretful countenance. He didn't advise the young man further, leaving with Ji Mu and Yue Ying to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain.

"This man's such a character," Blood-maned sighed in relief. "I thought he wanted to attack us. I didn't expect that he came here to pick up his people. Shi Yan, when will we start?"

"Wait until I get up here again. Oh right, where's the Five Elements Crystal Marrow?"

"Here you go."

Blood-maned spat out dozens of five colored crystal stones with an unwilling expression. These crystals were cyan, orange-red, yellow, green, and white. They looked like the most sparkling precious gems, carrying the pure powers of Five Elements. Under the shining light of the sun, moon, and stars in the sky, they radiated with a beautiful, mesmerizing dazzling halo.

The Five Elements Crystal Marrow was the essence of the Five Elements power. They were the energy source of some profound ancient formations. It wasn't easy for Blood-maned to collect these crystals. He had planned to merge these crystals with his beast bead when he leveled up again. Apparently, he had played with his initial capital.

"Don't worry, I won't be unfair to you," Shi Yan swung his arm to take the crystal, stacking them in his Storage Ring. "Wait until I



get back, I will satisfy you guys. I won't let your effort slip away in vain."

Then, Shi Yan flew up and sank into the lake, heading towards the Creator's Divine Pond directly. He urged the Star Martial Spirit, using the star power to put the Blood-maned back to the pond.

When he comprehended the star power, he didn't consume all the energy of the Star Original Essence. He had just watched and learned the process when a star was formed and ascended. In comprehending the mysteries of stars, he didn't encounter an energy shortage; he just needed to understand thoroughly.

The Star Original Essence recorded the meanings of the star's existence and its evolution, which he needed the most.

He had sunk his soul into it to see the internal construction of a star. Now he knew why a small star could get tremendously bigger. He knew the secrets when a star absorbed the power of heaven to strengthen itself.

Through this comprehension, he had used the Star Martial Spirit to reach the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. His Star Martial Spirit had evolved, which accelerated the star power absorption speed ten times faster!

The Star Original Essence slowly fell into the ancient formation. Shi Yan flickered his mind, releasing the Five Elements Crystal Marrow. Then, he used his soul to manipulate the crystals, falling into the eye of the formation in a special rhythm.

Shi Yan took out the Life Original Fluid he had collected before, and started to pour little by little into the center of the Creator's Divine Pond. It was moving distinctively, separating from the direction of the Soul Washing Divine Water, floating in the critical location of the spiritual station in the Creator's Divine Pond.

Magical hand seals flew out from his hands. Just like swimming

fishes, they started to gather and readjust the scattering energy.

Gradually, the Creator's Divine Pond released an immense halo. Countless top-grade Essence Crystals in the lake bottom seemed to be activated, Essence Qi started to roll massively into the Creator's Divine Pond.

"Great Grandpa!"

At this moment, Shi Yan shouted. Divine light surged torrentially in his eyes.

Yang Tian Emperor was awakened. He was surprised at first, but then, he shook his head. "It's a bit early for me. I've just reached the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, so I need time to improve it. Let Di Shan go first."

Shi Yan didn't say anything for a while before nodding his head.

Just like Yang Tian Emperor, he had reached the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, but he didn't want to enter the Creator's Divine Pond at this time, since he thought that his realm wasn't stable yet. It perhaps wasn't a right decision to get the True God Realm rashly this way.

He had thought that Yang Tian Emperor would be different. However, he had declined the opportunity too. He knew he too would be rushing if he did this.

The pressure from the seven ancient factions had always existed. And, it was going to be more intense. Comoros had escaped alive. When he came back, he would be more formidable.

Besides, there were other alien tribes – the Dark Spirit Clan and the Corpse Clan. They would arrive in the Perpetual Night Forest sooner or later to fight with the seven ancient factions face to face.

He thought that the time was less, and it would take a long time to improve his powers. Compared to the seven ancient factions and the alien tribes, he was small, and he couldn't influence the whole picture much, or be able to protect himself.

So, he had to enhance himself and the members of his team. The power Yang Tian Emperor had just shown everybody was much more than Di Shan. That's why Shi Yan hoped to see Yang Tian Emperor as the first one entering the True God Realm, which would give him more support.

"Di Shan, you go first," As he realized he shouldn't be rushing, he exhaled and then nodded to Di Shan.

Di Shan was struck. He jolted, his face excited. However, he looked nervous, standing in his spot as he didn't know what to do. "How should I get in there? What should I do after I get in?"

Shi Yan chuckled. "Don't be nervous. It's simple. You just need to fly to the spiritual station and land there. Then, you release your soul to enter the station. It will guide your soul. You just need to follow it."

The Creator's Divine Pond was created by the strongest clans in Antiquity Time, which cost a lot of efforts for a complicated formation and countless materials. However, it was effortless to use. The instruction was as simple as what Shi Yan had said.

Di Shan was comforted. He gathered himself and flew up, heading towards the Creator's Divine Pond.

Li Zheng Rong and Ye Chang Feng were looking at him with bright eyes. They didn't even blink, and their breathing was held.

"Old Li, after Di Shan's done, it's your turn." Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then said, "Your realm is enough, so you shouldn't worry. We have a big pressure at this moment. I want you to not go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain for the time being after you've succeeded."

"I'm going the same way with you guys," Li Zheng Rong agreed resolutely without any hesitation.

Shi Yan beamed a faint smile and gently nodded to him.

# Chapter 642: Upgrade the whole body!

---

Di Shan stood still on the station inside the Creator's Divine Pond, his eyes closed. There was no surging energy wave around him, and he looked as if he were sleeping.

Glowing top-grade Essence Crystals in the lake bottom had been activated. A large amount of pure, glorious energy gathered like gossamer, moving towards the Creator's Divine Pond.

The floating station was like the brain of a human soul. It was a messy place where different kinds of energy were intertwining. Although bunches and beams of light were dazzling, they still made people feel peaceful.

The refined soul power of the Life Original Fluid and the Soul Washing Divine Water gradually overflowed Di Shan's Sea of Consciousness. He sat still indifferently, while trying his best to absorb the energies into his Sea of Consciousness. He felt so comfortable, as if he were soaking in a warm stream. Each pore of his was relaxed.

Shi Yan, Li Zheng Rong, and Ye Chang Feng were standing by the Creator's Divine Pond and observing. They were a little bit nervous, as they were afraid something unexpected would happen.

The Creator's Divine Pond was a structure built in the Antiquity Time. Only the strongest clans could build it, since it cost countless materials and efforts. This divine pond had swallowed so many magical things to have such miraculous effects.

Although Shi Yan was 100% sure, he couldn't confirm whether Di Shan would succeed or not. The only thing he could confirm was that Di Shan wouldn't endure many strenuous experiences.

When the Life Original Fluid and the Soul Washing Divine Water blended with each other, they turned into an ivory fluid, seeping into Di Shan's head through seven holes on his face. At this

moment, Shi Yan couldn't help but exhale in relief.

Di Shan suddenly opened his eyes. From deep inside his pupils, people could vaguely see many light dots entangling with each other. It looked like the star movement to circulate energy in the Milky Way. A flow of energy emitted from his body, cheering up people in the surroundings.

Di Shan's Sea of Consciousness started to change slowly, beginning to follow the Creator's Divine Pond to rebuild. Each flow of his Soul Consciousness was refined to become the support when he condensed the God Soul.

Shi Yan suddenly turned to Li Zheng Rong and Ye Chang Feng, then smiled. "He's entered the main track. As long as no one disturbs him, it will take seven days max to create the God Soul. When Di Shan gets the God Soul, he can leave the Creator's Divine Pond. After that, he just needs to adjust himself to the new realm. Old Li, when he gets out, you can get in there to break through your realm. I wish for you to enter the True God Realm as soon as possible."

Li Zheng Rong was so joyful he couldn't stop laughing. His face looked like a blooming flower, as he was so excited he didn't know what to say.

He had stayed in the Spirit Realm for dozens of years. As one of the leading alchemists in the Grace Mainland, he understood the difference between the Spirit Realm and the True God Realm more than anyone else. He knew what it meant when he had stepped into the True God Realm.

In the True God Realm, the warriors had the God Soul, which was immortal unless it was attacked by some special treasures.

Although his body was smashed, a True God Realm expert could always escape the body, or, use a pregnant woman's womb to be reborn again in the shape of a baby. Alternatively, he could choose a young man with outstanding features and occupy his soul to

thrive further.

No matter which method the True God Realm warrior chose, he could have another chance to reach his original realm one more time. If he decided to be reborn as a baby, he could have a better chance at understanding the deep meanings of power faster while trying to recover his power.

This opportunity made the True God Realm leap up a long step reasonably. He would find it easy to break through a minor realm.

There were many Second Sky of True God Realm experts who couldn't find the right chance to comprehend the Upanishad. That's why they couldn't break through to the Third Sky of True God Realm.

At such a stage, True God Realm warriors with big guts and great desires would choose to be reborn as a child, so as to progress faster. It would take around ten years to reach the Second Sky of True God Realm, the realm of his previous body. Afterward, he could seize the chance to enter the Third Sky of True God Realm.

To the True God Realm warriors, this was a stupid method to break through. However, it was almost 100% certain without any incident.

Of course, most of the True God Realm warriors had the absolute confidence in themselves, so they wouldn't dare to take risks and be reborn.

Rebirth meant doing things all over again. If his enemy knew that, he would be killed before he had enough time to grow.

"You guys should watch here. I have to go out for a while. Wait until I come back. Old Li should be a True God Realm expert already." Shi Yan smiled as he was about to leave the lake bottom.

"Shi Yan, the Perpetual Night Forest isn't a safe place at this moment. Where do you want to go?" Li Zheng Rong frowned and asked

"I've agreed with Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned to help them anneal their bodies and weapons. I have to keep my word." Shi Yan glared at Yang Tian Emperor. "I assume Blood-maned still has Five Elements Crystal Marrow, which is the requirement to maintain the Creator's Divine Pond. If I don't comfort Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon, we wouldn't have enough Five Elements Crystal Marrow. The next time... It would be hard to use the pond to break through again."

He had thought for Yang Tian Emperor, Yu Ruo, and Yi Tian Mo. He wanted to use the divine pond to make his people enter the True God Realm quickly.

As long as his people could increase their realms, under the current circumstances, he could survive better, and wouldn't need to struggle his life in the valley between the clans.

"You should take these pellets. Perhaps, you'll need them soon," Li Zheng Rong pondered. A Storage Ring flew out from his finger, falling into Shi Yan's palm. "This ring stores many pellets I have refined dedicatedly. Although you don't need them, with these medicines, your people would have a bigger chance to survive."

Receiving the Storage Ring, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness flickered. He found that the ring contained almost a hundred bottles, storing different kinds of medicines and pellets. Some could nurture the soul, and the others could promote the Essence Qi. There were some pellets which could enhance the warrior's physique and heal wounds faster.

Li Zheng Rong was a Sacred Grade alchemist, and he had spent his whole life to study and refine medicines. He was a peerless expert in the Grace Mainland. The pellets he refined were treasures that the warriors always yearned for in the outside world.

Shi Yan nodded continually to thank him, his face happy.

"While Di Shan is breaking through his realm, I'm going to refine

some pellets. Yeah, when you return, I'll give them to you." Li Zheng Rong smiled then said, "Seems we have to stay together, if you and your people become stronger, I can have more support. Ah right, if you see Ya Qi, please take her with you."

"Where is she?"

"The Ice and Fire Secret Domain," Li Zheng Rong beamed a forced smile. "Her realm is too low, and her manners aren't good. As she isn't with us now, I'm afraid she might suffer in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. Sigh, Chu Bai Qing is dead. With Qin Gu Chuan's dark plan, when he deals with Ya Qi, I'm afraid something bad would happen to her."

Shi Yan's heart sank, but he nodded quietly. "I'll try my best."

Li Zheng Rong didn't say anything else.

...

Waves rippled on the quiet lake, and a bunch of fiery flames shot out. A figure appeared in the blaze.

Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon were waiting for him. Seeing him, they smiled, storming forward to greet him.

Shi Yan curled his lips into a smile, speaking faintly. "As we have made a deal, it's time to make it up to you guys. From now on, I'm going to refine your bodies and forge your treasures. Of course, you have to prepare materials sufficiently."

"Hahaha, we've prepared already. As long as you want it, everything will be at your service," Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon laughed in unison.

For the Monster Clan, things they had aplenty were all kinds of heaven and earth products. Living in the Perpetual Night Forest for thousands of years, the materials that the Monster Clan's experts had collected were piled up, enough to support both their bodies and weapon quenching.



Among the clans, Human Clan was good at using heaven and earth objects. They had various methods to do that. Human alchemists and blacksmiths were all the excellent experts who could use these things fluently.

Normally, no human dared to cause grudges against the entire mankind to refine weapons for Monster Clan. That's why, although they had collected abundant materials, they couldn't find a suitable refiner.

Shi Yan dared to hold this precedent as he didn't care about the anger of the entire humanity. It was more than what Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon wished.

Under Fiery Dragon and Blood-maned's guidance, Shi Yan found Blood-maned's treasure which had been hidden for several thousand years. Looking at the colorful materials filling up the whole spacious cave, the smile on his face widened. "Alright, you should be prepared. We are going to start now."

Blood-maned and Fiery Dragon were so excited that flame sparked from their eyes.

...

Half a month later...

Somewhere in the cave underground, Blood-maned with his shining gold body roared fiercely and stormed out rumblingly.

Light of flame was still glowing on his giant body. He looked like he was molded from melting iron, and looked vigorously beautiful. Waves of sharp and imposing aura rippled from the blood mane on his body, heating up the entire space.

Blood-maned was moving back and forth. Giant ancient trees on his way were smacked down, turning into wood chips. He was like a bulldozer, crushing the dozen meters tall trees into pieces.

Blood-maned was releasing his energy freely, gold waves rippling from him. Blood-maned was like the Grand Master of the Monster

Clan, imposingly vigorous and lively, with abundant aura.

ROOOAAARR!

Blood-maned laughed wildly. He was so excited that he couldn't stop moving through the forest. Gold light bloomed from his body, carrying the Metal power of the Five Elements, which could simply break even the hardest defenses.

After rolling around for a while, Blood-maned felt satisfied. Smiles filled his eyes as he then moved his giant body back to the cave underground.

A silver chain that was around one hundred meters long soared up from the cave. This chain was as wide as a human body. Countless complicated patterns meandered on the chain as if they were the blood veins, and a blood aura emitted from it.

Fiery Dragon appeared all of a sudden. When he flickered his dragon claw, the silver chain seemed like it was stuck with a flow of fire, burning fiercely. The silver chain flew around as fast as lightning, along with his maneuver. Where it passed through, giant stones were broken into small pieces. This power was really intimidating.

"Shi Yan, I need a good treasure like that!" Blood-maned cried dissatisfied. "You forged the chain for Fiery Dragon, but you've used a big amount of my materials. You have to make it up for me."

Shi Yan emerged from the cave underground, his face covered in dust. However, his eyes were bright with divine light, dark and profound like the galaxy in the sky. His appearance made people respect and fear him.

"We need to negotiate. It's for the future of your Monster Clan." Shi Yan laughed loudly. He strolled towards them, his mood elevated.

# Chapter 643: King of Perpetual Night Forest

---

(Translator's note: From this chapter, I will use pinyin names for members of the Monster Clan with notes of their literal meanings. Since they have human forms, I think it's better to call them with pinyin names. For example, Fiery Dragon will become Yan Long, Blood-maned will be Xue Lu. If you prefer the previous names, please let me know. Thank you!)

"For the future of our Monster Clan?" Yan Long didn't understand anything, but he thought Shi Yan's words were shocking. He was bewildered for a while. "Our Monster Clan's doing well. How could it matter to the future of our clan?"

"Times have changed," Shi Yan said with a solemn visage. "Today, every clan is thriving. Demon Clan, Dark Clan, Corpse Clan, Dark Spirit Clan, Ghost Mark Clan... They're all the clans from the Antiquity. They aren't weaker than you guys. Since the Great Space Fission happened, experts from different clans have received the ancient inheritance. If the Monster Clan is stagnant, the other clans will dominate you... You'll decline gradually... You guys will become their mounts."

The faces of Yan Long and Xue Lu became grim immediately. This was the most forbidden word the Monster Clan never wanted to mention: mount.

No matter what era it was, after the Monster Clan declined, they would become the mounts of the other clans. They would be enslaved and become the other's subordinates.

"The Monster Clan's one of the ten clans. You've had your peak times. I know you used to be so strong. I know the experts of the Monster Clan like you two will never be willing to be enslaved." Shi Yan calmly talked to them while discreetly observing their expressions. He recognized that these two had taken his words seriously.

"I want to befriend the Monster Clan. Besides you two, I can help more members of the Monster Clan," Shi Yan smiled. "In this Perpetual Night Forest, there're many strong monsters, and many of them have intelligence as you do. With my help, they can become like you. They will be much stronger very quickly. What do you think about it?"

Yan Long and Xue Lu couldn't conceal that they were moved.

"Take me to see the strongest one of your Monster Clan. As long as we can deal with him, it will be the good news to every member of the Monster Clan in Perpetual Night Forest," Shi Yan tempted them.

At this moment, his situation was relatively safe. But in fact, dangers existed everywhere. Demon Clan, Dark Spirit Clan, Gosh Mark Clan, and the Corpse Clan would come to the Perpetual Night Forest shortly. This forest would become the hot zone of war on this continent.

The Human Clan was also cultivating hard, seeking for the methods to rally themselves. As Shi Yan was a human, and the seven ancient factions wanted his life, they would come to the forest for him soon.

With his current force, he had no significant advantage compared to the other clans or the seven ancient factions. He could be the sacrifice at any minute.

If he could establish a relationship with Monster Clan, it should be good news to him and his people.

His people, besides the Yang family and the Cao, included the Ghost Hunter, the Devouring Gold Silkworm, and the King of Demonic Insects. They were all members of the Monster Clan.

Shi Yan knew this clan was imposing. Moreover, they didn't have many wild schemes. Once he got accepted, he would have tremendous support.

"You want to see our King of the Perpetual Night Forest?" Xue Lu was hesitant. Then he became a little bit annoyed. "He doesn't want to meet us, though. Different from the other experts of the Monster Clan, he's too arrogant. He hasn't gathered any force under his regime. He has cultivated alone. We went to greet him, but he ignored us."

"Take me to him," Shi Yan was deliberate. "I believe he will meet me."

Yan Long and Xue Lu exchanged looks. They considered his proposal for a long while. Later on, they nodded.

"He stays near the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, in the Black Pool. It's the prohibited area of our Monster Clan. When Human Clan got into the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, they didn't dare to trespass that place," said Yan Long.

"Let's go," Shi Yan smiled and urged.

Yan Long and Xue Lu were reluctant. But under his persistence, they couldn't help but take him to that place.

Three days later, Shi Yan and the two warriors of the Monster Clan reached a pond where black smog was lingering above its surface. A bizarre, black froth popped everywhere.

This pond was large, more than a hundred miles squared. No foliage could be seen around the pond. Shi Yan couldn't sense even a single life fluctuation of any insect.

After Yan Long and Xue Lu had taken him here, they looked at the Black Pool and said, "He's there, staying in the bottom of the pool. Usually, he won't appear. This is a prohibited area. No humans or beasts dare to put their foot here. He... Ah!"

Yan Long changed his expression before he could finish. He pointed towards the pool, his face as if he had seen a ghost. "Someone's there! Oh, someone doesn't care about life to trespass the Black Pool!"

As they had arrived at this place, Shi Yan felt the Black Pool was really strange. Nothing was floating above the pond. Even if someone could fly above the pool, he would be dragged into the pool by some unknown force.

Any creatures entering the Black Pool, no matter it was a human or a beast, it would never reappear.

It seemed something invisible and intimidating was staying in the bottom of the Black Pool, which could swallow both the body and the soul of any creature, making them stay forever under the pool.

However, a mild young girl was staying in the middle of the pool. She was riding some creature, taking in the black smog above the Black Pool. She seemed to be cultivating some secret technique.

Shi Yan was startled. He gathered his mind and observed carefully.

Next, he cried in fear, his face odd.

Yan Long and Xue Lu didn't dare to speak. They stood dully by the Black Pool, as though they were waiting for something.

In the center of the pool, the girl opened her mouth and took in the black smog above the pool. Flows of magical, pure energy got into her mouth, increasing her aura. Her flesh body was accumulating the tremendous energy from the pool.

She was Zuo Shi.

Shi Yan felt his brain convulse. He thought the scene he was watching was unbelievable. At this moment, he was puzzled, didn't know what to say.

Why was she here?

Shi Yan suddenly remembered that since he had come to the Perpetual Night Forest, he had never seen Zuo Shi. But, he had met Zuo Xu, Chi Xiao, and the other warriors of the Zuo family in the

Yang family's shelter.

However, he didn't notice Zuo Shi. As he tried digging in further, he felt something wrong.

The young girl was riding a creature which was sinking into the pool. Her face was serious, as though she was cultivating something. She didn't realize that someone was watching her.

The peak of Sky Realm!

Shi Yan observed for a while, and he got more surprised. He felt that his brain wasn't working well enough. He wore a forced smile.

Zuo Shi had reached the Peak of Sky Realm! She was just a step from the Spirit Realm!

It had been years. He didn't know what kind of good chances this little girl had encountered. She seemed to have transformed, and had progressed fast. Apparently, she wasn't bad.

What was going on?

As he was looking at Zuo Shi, he found that the creature she was riding had suddenly started to move. Until he could recognize its movement, the distance between them was shortened rapidly. Shortly, Zuo Shi appeared in front of him.

Zuo Shi hadn't realized anything yet. She was still closing her eyes and cultivating. She gently frowned, which made her look cute.

However, Yan Long and Xue Lu were frightened. They had transformed into their human shape. At this moment, they crouched down, slightly looking up to Zuo Shi with a respectful expression.

They were looking at the creature Zuo Shi was riding to be exact.

"Master Xuan Ming (lit. mysteriously black – TL)," Yan Long and Xue Lu cried, using the language of the Monster Clan to greet the other. Their voices even trembled.

Shi Yan knew the King of the Perpetual Night Forest's name was Xuan Ming. He was an imposing expert of the Monster Clan, who had reached the Peak of level 9. He could enter level 10 at any moment.

During ten thousand years, this terrifying monster named Xuan Ming would only show himself when the Monster Clan in the Perpetual Night Forest had a big mess that they couldn't clean up themselves. He showed up to reconfirm the existence of the strong forces of the Monster Clan and maintain the order.

Xuan Ming of the Perpetual Night Forest was the King of the Monster Clan in the eyes of the warriors in the Divine Great Land. He was the Grand Master who ruled the beasts everywhere, the scariest existence.

Even the strong human forces like Pure Land didn't dare to provoke the beasts in the Perpetual Night Forest. It was because of Xuan Ming, the almighty of the Monster Clan.

"You two idiots, why are you here?" An old voice arose from under Zuo Shi. He was using the Monster language too.

Shi Yan had been together with the King of Demonic Insects and the Devouring Gold Silkworm for many years, so it wasn't a problem for him to understand Monster Language. He could even hear and understand each word.

Zuo Shi was still cultivating, but when the voice arose, she woke up. Her eyes were as bright as stars in the sky. She rolled her eyes, then covered her mouth in surprise. "Hey, why are you here?"

Afterward, Zuo Shi got excited and stood up from the pool. Her slender legs moved, then jumped to the land, walking towards Shi Yan. "Shouldn't you be in the Endless Sea?" asked the girl curiously.

Shi Yan's face was odd. He looked at the girl for a while and then forced a smile. "Well, I do want to know why you are here."



"Old Xuan Ming brought me here. He said that he wants to help me increase my realm. This old man had captured me not long after I arrived in the Perpetual Night Forest." Zuo Shi frowned, then put her hands on her waist, rolling her eyes at the thin, small old man who was slowly emerging from the pool. She pointed at him and mumbled. "That's him! Shi Yan gege, help me to teach him a lesson. I can't help it anymore. He doesn't let me go."

The old man wore a pure black robe. His head looked like a snakehead, paired with gloomy brown eyes. Turtle shells covered his face, which made him look more like a stupid, decayed stone.

Shi Yan forced a smile. First, he bent his body to greet the old man, then talked to Zuo Shi. "I can't teach him. He will teach me instead. Anyway... Why are you here?"

"Little Shi's cultivating the Black Tortoise True Star. She has my clan bloodline in her body. What's wrong with staying here?" The old man's eyes rolled around. His face grew longer as he dropped his jaw. "Little Shi has brought me the inheritance of my clan from the ancient time. It's natural that I should take care of her. Kid, you are a human, but you dare to trespass my Black Pool. Aren't you afraid that I will swallow you?"

"You are Xuan Ming?" Shi Yan was astounded for a while. All of a sudden, he shouted, "You are from the Black Tortoise Tribe?"

# Chapter 644: Corpse Clan's Soul Sacrificial Altar

---

In the Antiquity, the Monster Clan had four strongest tribes. They were the royal tribes of the Monster Clan.

They were called the Sacred Tribes, and included the Azure Dragon, the Black Tortoise, the Vermillion Bird, and the White Tiger. They had always ruled the Monster Clan with their invincible supernatural powers.

Xuan Ming was a Black Tortoise, the King of Perpetual Night Forest. Shi Yan didn't expect the old man to be from the Black Tortoise Tribe, which had disappeared for so many years.

He still remembered that year when he had just arrived at the Sky Meteor City. Zuo Shi had asked him to translate the turtle shell she got. She then received the Black Tortoise True Star scripture to cultivate. And, she also had a precious, heavy armor.

Was that why Xuan Ming got close to Zuo Shi and protected her as if she were his closest relative?

"Only persons with our Black Tortoise bloodline could understand the power Upanishad of our tribe. Zuo Shi has our tribe bloodline. It isn't like what you think." Xuan Ming whispered something, pursed his lips, and explained impatiently.

Shi Yan was frightened, screaming, "You can read my mind?"

"What's difficult with that?" snorted Xuan Ming. "You didn't use your soul power to conceal. With my realm, even if I don't use my energy, I can still read your mind. It's as easy as flipping my hand."

"Old Xuan Ming, I don't want to cultivate with you. Let me go. It's not fun here." Zuo Shi didn't seem to be happy, crying.

"I want the best for you," Xuan Ming rolled his eyes. "You haven't reached the Spirit Realm yet. If you leave me, you'll die soon. I'm

not going to allow you to go."

The two experts of the Monster Clan, Yan Long, and Xue Lu, didn't talk much after they saw Xuan Ming. They were afraid of him.

"Kid, I don't care why you come here. I don't want to know either. Because you know Little Shi, I won't harm you. You should get lost quickly. If you disturb Little Shi's cultivation, I will make you regret." Xuan Ming snorted impatiently, swinging his hand. "You two idiots should go too."

A flow of silver energy rolled Yan Long and Xue Lu, throwing them away. Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness couldn't catch it.

Shi Yan hadn't had time to reply as Xuan Ming continued, "You've spent a lot of efforts on Yan Long and Xue Lu. However, you're a human. Human Clan will be destroyed sooner or later. You shouldn't bring trouble to our Monster Clan."

After he finished, Xuan Ming swung his hands nonchalantly one more time. Shi Yan felt he was pressed by many streams of water before he was thrown away.

He got dizzy. Until he could gather himself again, he found that he was in the shelter area of the Yang family.

Standing indifferently by the lake, Shi Yan's face was complicated. It was the first time he felt helpless.

Xuan Ming at his Peak of level 9 had supernatural powers. Shi Yan didn't know what kind of power he had used to deliver him hundreds of li away like that with only a wave of his hand.

Suddenly, Shi Yan understood that his operation in the Perpetual Night Forest hadn't escaped Xuan Ming's view. This old man was secluding himself in the Black Pool, but he could see all things happening in the Perpetual Night Forest.

As Yu Ruo, Cao Qiu Dao, Ling Ming, Yi Tian Mo and the others saw him, they started to gather from many places. Surprise filled

their eyes.

Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. He didn't want to talk much about Xuan Ming, because he thought that if he told them about him, it would create a bad shadow in their hearts.

"Master, what happened? Your face is... so grim." Yu Ruo stepped forward. A strange light sparked in her beautiful eyes as she was startled.

"Nothing," Shi Yan calmed his mind quickly. He smiled and then said, "You guys should try harder. As long as you've reached the Third Sky of Spirit Realm, I will help you to enter the True God Realm sooner."

Everybody was stunned. They thought that something was wrong with Shi Yan's mind.

"I found a good thing," Shi Yan smiled. "Who is going to enter the Third Sky of Spirit Realm?" While talking, he took out many pellets Li Zheng Rong had given him. "If you are confident, I will give you the suitable pellets."

Cao Qiu Dao's team had their eyes brightened.

"I think I'm about to break through," Yi Tian Mo was a little bit shy when he said with hesitation.

"I'm almost there too. After the change of heaven and earth, our speed of comprehending realms has increased too." Yu Ruo said with her bright eyes.

"Great Grandpa has reached the Peak of Spirit Realm. Not long afterward, he can take another step further." Shi Yan said confidently. "Di Shan has reached the True God Realm. I think he is adjusting his powers now. I will make your realms increase fast."

Cao Qiu Dao, Cao Zhi Lan, and Fan Xiang Yun were bewildered.

"Little Yan, are you... not exaggerating?" Shi Jian kept quiet for a while and then asked with a trembling voice.

Shi Yan nodded heavily.

While he was talking, he saw Zuo Xu. He waved at the old man and then asked him. "Grandpa Zuo, do you know Zuo Shi's story?"

Zuo Xu changed his face.

"I want to get it clearly." At first glance, Shi Yan got that he knew something. "The King of Perpetual Night Forest had captured Zuo Shi. But he doesn't mean harm. Everything he's done is for Zuo Shi. I just want to know when did it happen?"

"Not long after we arrived in the Perpetual Night Forest." Zuo Xu was hesitant, telling him the details of the situation. "We disputed with the seven ancient factions in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. Little Shi was together with us at that time. But suddenly, she disappeared."

Zuo Shi considered his words. "At the beginning, we were really worried. When we were about to go out and find her, someone sent the message to our souls, telling us not to find her. Little Shi also sent us her thoughts, telling us that she was alright. She was going with an expert to cultivate. She asked us not to tell anybody."

Shi Yan was silent. "Oh, so that's it."

"Is Little Shi okay?" Zuo Xu was worried.

"Don't worry... she's fine. She has reached the Peak of Sky Realm... Not long afterward, she will enter the Spirit Realm. Her innate endowment is better than anyone else. You guys don't need to worry about her. Under his protection, no one can touch her," Shi Yan explained.

Zuo Xu exhaled in relief.

"Everybody should prepare. We don't have much time. All clans are hostile to us, so we need to improve our competence fast." Shi Yan advised them. His figure flickered and disappeared as he went to find Yan Long and Xue Lu.

Xuan Ming didn't want to cooperate with him. At first, he could only convince the experts whose cultivation base wasn't much different from Yan Long and Xue Lu.

In the Perpetual Night Forest, there were several rulers of the Monster Clan like Yan Long and Xue Lu. If he could make a deal with them, even if he didn't have Xuan Ming, he wouldn't need to worry much.

Each strong expert like Yan Long and Xue Lu had accumulated plenty of treasures. They had abundant heaven and earth precious products.

Not only did he need to refine better weapons for the Yang family, but he also needed to prepare something for himself. Thus, he needed the accumulated properties of those beasts.

...

Ancient Corpse Tomb...

Inside a spacious dark cave where black crystal jades twinkled, corpse Qi permeated the area.

Many members of the Corpse Clan were scattered inside the cave, surrounding a sacrificial altar built of tombstones. The altar was moving slowly, while a magical soul fluctuation rippled from each tombstone. Each soul fluctuation was as bright as a flame, swaying in the tombstone.

Corpse Sea and Corpse Mount were moving inside that sacrificial altar. They were grimacing, as if they were enduring some serious pain. Every time they took a step, a soul fluctuation whipped them, then entering their souls.

The Corpse Clan's Sacrificial Altar held the inheritance seal of the Corpse Clan. Each clansman of the Corpse Clan could use their ability to receive the inheritance in the altar. After that, they would receive the old technique of the Corpse Clan, and the knowledge, as well as the history of the Corpse Clan.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were struggling, while magical soul thoughts were entering deep inside their souls.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea's soul had the shape of a headstone. While they were absorbing the soul thoughts, their souls were purified, getting rid of contaminants. They were taking in the inheritance inside the Soul Sacrificial Altar. After that, they could know secret techniques that had been stored and imparted for so many years in the Corpse Clan.

A large garnet coffin laid next to the cave entrance. It was sealed, but no corpses dared to approach it. They were looking at it with respectful expressions.

Thump Thump Thump!

Waves of living fluctuation beat rumblingly, rippling out from the coffin like a fighting drum, hitting each member of the Corpse Clan. Their souls resonated, as if they were working together with the sacrificial altar.

After an unknown period, Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea had many wounds on their bodies, with sticky blood flowing along their bodies. However, it couldn't stop their movements, as they still took each step strenuously.

Many members of the Corpse Clan showed their admiration and respect for Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea for their strong persistence and powerful potential.

Clansmen who could resist longer in the altar could receive more benefits, and the inheritance they would get would be more excellent.

After the Great Space Fission happened, they had discovered the soul sacrificial altar. Besides the one staying in that large coffin, Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea had the longest time staying in the altar.

Bang!

Formidable energy surged from the Soul Sacrificial Altar, pushing Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea away and making them fall.

The Corpse Clan's Soul Sacrificial Altar quieted down, as no more soul fluctuations rippled. The countless headstones didn't move anymore.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea struggled to get up, crouching on all fours. Their jaws were chattering, as if they were calling some power.

The lid of coffin next to them suddenly lifted, exposing a large hand that was as sharp as a dagger.

Under the attentive looks of so many clansmen, that hand created a strange hand seal, which then floated, dragging a flow of energy from the Soul Sacrificial Altar. Then, it divided into two seals and imprinted on Corpse Mount's and Corpse Sea's forehead.

This seal meant that Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were accepted. Just like the seal on Shi Yan's forehead, it represented that Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea had become the new members of one of the oldest tribes.



# Chapter 645: Contact the foreign land

---

Ice and Fire Secret Domain...

Inside a plain meeting hall built with flame stone, Lin Meng of the Pure Land, Yun Hao of the Radiant God Cult, Nie Ruo of the Devil Temple, Qin Gu Chuan of the Heaven Temple, Guan Hu of the Martial Spirit Palace, Luo Miao of the Spirit Treasure Sect, and Yu Wan Jian of the Fighting Union, the leaders of the seven ancient factions, were gathering.

These seven people were the overlords of the entire Divine Great Land. Each of them had ruled the richest parts of the continent for so many years.

Today, in this meeting hall, the hotshots of everywhere were gathered. Their faces were grim, looking at the bronze cauldron in the center of the hall.

The bronze cauldron was five meters high, with three supports as big as human legs. The cauldron was covered with magical patterns, including the clouds, beasts, alien tribes, ghosts, and demons. All of them looked animated, as if they were living creatures crawling around the cauldron.

Green smoke wound from the cauldron, while a refreshing fragrance was dispersing in the place, that could revitalize people and calm their souls.

It was the Original Universe Returning Cauldron, a divine tool of the Pure Land. Lin Meng had treasured it in the Pure Land; she didn't let the others see this treasure, as if it were the root of her life.

Lin Meng and the other six were sitting in silence, waiting for the green smoke to get thicker. Then, they released their God Soul, turning into seven beams of light flying towards the cauldron.

Their souls then found a spot for each on the mouth of the

cauldron. Then, they united the soul power into one flow, shining on the center of the cauldron.

The patterns on the Original Universe Returning Cauldron glowed. Twisting soul fluctuation shot out from the cauldron, dragging the entire Ice and Fire Secret Domain into a fierce soul vortex.

After an unknown period, Ling Meng's God Soul reached the center of the cauldron. It hovered in the crystal clear space inside, constantly using the soul power to clear the space.

Lin Meng's God Soul seemed like it had escaped the Grace Mainland, wandering into an immense galaxy. As if it could sense something magical, it flew in a particular direction.

The star sea was mysterious and endless. Lin Meng's soul was like a little fish strolling around, not daring to act rashly or sense the prestige of the other stars. It only watched over a spiritual platform.

Long after that, Lin Meng's soul power was consumed by a big part. She was bewildered, reaching a vast milky way.

It was like a dream. Lin Meng tried to control her mind, constantly releasing the soul thought to seek the prestige of the Human Sages, trying to make contact with them.

It seemed there was something really intimidating dormant in the center of the soul sea. These soul fluctuations had scared Lin Meng, as if they could burn her God Soul into ashes any minute.

All of a sudden, Lin Meng's soul shuddered, as she had caught a feeble soul fluctuation. She pulled herself together, trying to reach the source of the soul fluctuation.

However, right at this moment, an icy cold thought shot toward her from a corner of the star sea.

Lin Meng had neither seen the target nor established a connection with it. But, her God Soul was disordered, turning into

a beam of light and retreating from the soul sea immediately.

The Original Universe Returning Cauldron was shaking violently in the hall. Images of alien tribes on the cauldron seemed to be activated. They started to show their claws and bare their fangs, as if they wanted to get rid of the cauldron.

The God Souls of the other six were trembling hard. They hastened to release their soul power, pouring into the cauldron.

The Original Universe Returning Cauldron slowly quieted down. The beasts, ghosts, and demons rising on the surface of the cauldron were oppressed, as if an invisible giant palm was pressing them, preventing them from causing any harm.

Lin Meng's God Soul was shaking violently. She hurried to get back to the body from the Original Universe Returning Cauldron, and the other six followed her.

The seven strong True God Realm warriors of Human Clan in the Divine Great Land were pale and exhausted, as though they had just fought a fierce battle. Their soul power seemed to be completely drained.

Blood trickled from the seven apertures on Ling Meng's face. She looked distressed, just like someone had hurt her. It took her a long time to steady her breath.

She was still frightened, her voice helpless, "I don't know what has happened. My Grand Teacher seemed feeble. I don't know what has happened to her."

Yun Hao and Nie Ruo were scared, their faces glum.

"We know your Grand Teacher is the last one who had reached the King God Realm. She's the peerless warrior of the Divine Great Land. Her power and cultivation base could be deemed invincible. Did she meet anything unexpected in the Endless Foreign Starry Sky?" Nie Ruo couldn't hold his fright. "How dangerous is the Endless Foreign Starry Sky that she couldn't form a connection

with you?"

"Millions of years have passed. We have countless warriors who had reached the King God Realm, which gives them the ability to escape the Grace Mainland. They took turns and entered the Endless Foreign Starry Sky. Besides the extraordinary warriors of the Human Clan, there were the Grand Seniors of the Demon Clan and the Dark Clan. After they left, they sent no news back to us." Lin Meng was hesitant. "When my Grand Teacher left, she told me that when we encounter dangers we can't resist, I should use the Original Universe Returning Cauldron to contact her, and she would help me. However, I could sense she isn't well either. It seems... she's confined."

"Confined?!"

The hotshots of the seven ancient factions changed their visage. A strange light appeared in their eyes as they were startled.

Lin Meng's Teacher was the peerless hotshot who existed in the nearest era to the current epoch of the Divine Great Land. When she disappeared from the Divine Great Land, Yun Hao's group were still teenagers who had just entered the path of cultivation. Anyway, they knew about her legend. She left when she had reached the Second Sky of King God Realm.

It was so many years; her realm should be more profound. However, she was unexpectedly imprisoned in the Endless Foreign Starry Sky... What was going on?

"In the Antiquity Time, the God Clan had disappeared completely from the Grace Mainland... the whole clan. It has been more than one million years. I wonder if they still exist. In that era, the rulers of the Demon Clan and the Dark Clan had also left one by one. None of them have been heard to come back. It has been so many years. No one knows if they are dead or alive." Lin Meng sighed. "The existence at such a level isn't something we can predict. If we can't establish the connection with my Grand Teacher, we have to

think about some other way around."

"Some of the oldest books of our Martial Spirit Palace describe an era that was earlier than the Antiquity Time... The Immemorial Epoch. I heard that the clans didn't exist during that time, and there were the Immemorial living beings, which were much stronger than us. They seemed to have an endless life. I heard that those immemorial living beings could create a whole new world, where their bodies were the world. We can say that they were the origin of legends and myths. The Immemorial living beings were there before the ten clans. They disappeared one after another from the Grace Mainland. The only thing I know is that after they had reached the peak of their powers, the Grace Mainland couldn't nurture them anymore."

Guan Ho of the Martial Spirit Palace considered his word choice, talking with a frightened face.

Everybody was panic-stricken by his words. Their hearts sank.

"Our strength is nothing to the warriors in the Antiquity time, let alone the living beings in the Immemorial Epoch," Lin Meng forced a smile. "Seems like we can't rely on the external forces. We can only depend on ourselves."

"There are so many small spaces outside the Grace Mainland. Most of them belong to the other clans who couldn't get here in the past. After the Great Space Fission happened, they could arrive here through the space slits. At this moment, we have to recognize the existence of the invincible warriors from the Demon Clan, the Dark Clan, and the Dark Spirit Clan. Later on, it will be more unendurable," Guan Ho sighed.

"After so many years, the alien hotshots from the Antiquity Time are dead, or have left to the Endless Foreign Starry Sky. The ones that have just come are their grandchildren. Otherwise, we would have been killed already," Yun Hao snorted. "Not really that dangerous. At least... We haven't seen any at the King God Realm."

"But they all have the inheritance. The inheritance of our Human Clan isn't complete anymore, after so many years." Lin Meng shook her head. "The survivors of the alien tribes are all intimidating. They have survived many dreadful challenges. We have only this number of limited hotshots. It's really tough to resist the other clans."

Lin Meng paused, then her countenance turned cold as she snorted, "Moreover, we have some b\*stards in our team."

At this point, Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Ho, and Luo Miao had their faces darkened.

Yun Hao kept silent. He felt agitated, but he didn't know what to say.

"Dares to join the alien tribes! Should kill them all! We should prevent them from being a big trouble in the future." Qin Gu Chuan sneered. "That boy named Shi Yan isn't bad. If we let him do what he wants like that, he will cause a lot of troubles. I think we should take action earlier. Before the other clans come here, we should clean this wild grass."

"Shi Yan belongs to the Human Clan," Yun Hao knitted his brows, his voice uncertain. After he heard Yan Long talk about the alien bloodline of Shi Yan, he wasn't sure whether his decision was right or not. "They are a force anyway. If they are alive, our Human Clan will have support in the future."

"I propose to kill them all," Qin Gu Chuan suddenly stood up. "We should vote. Who approves this?"

Lin Meng, Nie Ruo, Luo Miao, and Guan Ho voted to kill Shi Yan's group.

Among the seven of them, besides Yun Hao, only Yu Wan Jiang of the Fighting Union, the City Master of the Celestial Emperor City, the Hegemon of the Fighting Union, didn't vote.

"Yu-ge, how about you?" Luo Miao looked at him.

"That kid has a good relationship with my Fighting Union. I think he's not bad," said Yu Wan Jiang faintly.

"Among the seven, five agree. According to our rule, this is settled." Qin Gu Chuan looked at Lin Meng of the Pure Land.

Lin Meng nodded.

"Alright, before we have the war with the alien tribes, we will kill the insects first!"

Qin Gu Chuan was sinister. "Our five forces will carry out this operation. The Radiant God Cult and the Fighting Union don't need to join us. But, I hope you guys won't interfere."

Yun Hao and Yu Wang frowned. They didn't answer, as they knew it was difficult to solve the matter.

## Chapter 646: No return!

---

A hundred-meters-tall ancient tree with dense branches and leaves shook suddenly in the Perpetual Night Forest. Green leaves rattled and then fell.

A light spot appeared on the tree trunk, near the thick roots. It slowly divided into many beams, crawling on the branches like snakes, and creating a mysterious light door.

Two silhouettes flashed in the door. From the icy and burning hot area, they appeared in front of the giant tree.

The strange phenomenon of the tree vanished when the two people appeared.

Turning her head to look at the entrance of the Secret Domain behind, Bing Qing Tong frowned. Her countenance was cold but elegant as she said faintly, "We should be hurried."

"Don't know what has happened to that brat. Why does he have to be with the alien tribes? Sigh, he always gives us a headache!" Han Cui was still as beautiful as a flower. Her watery black eyes twinkled, accompanying her succulent red lips. All her features made her so charming that her charisma could capture people's souls.

As she thought she was about to meet someone, her soft body got hot, and her heart bounced in her chest.

"Don't mess things up. That b\*stard's in danger now. If we're late, I'm not sure we can help him," Bing Qing Tong snorted, then knitted her brows. She seemed to hurry.

A group of warrior strolled towards them from the far forest. This group went out to hunt beasts. Their realms weren't the same, and some of them looked really handsome. However, they were walking and joking and laughing, as though they didn't know about the calamity Human Clan was about to face.



When they reached the entrance, they saw Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui. Their eyes brightened while they couldn't help but pant.

Outstanding young warriors of the seven ancient factions raked their eyes through Bing Qing Tong's and Han Cui's bodies. They gulped as their temptation rose like animals.

A leader of that group, who thought that he was excellent enough with his Sky Realm, beamed a smile and then bowed to greet the other two. "Master Bing, where are you going?"

Bing Qing Tong's face was as cold as ice. "Somewhere."

"Haha, if you want to hunt beasts, I can take you. I'm familiar with this area. I'm willing to help you." The young man laughed and tried to show his servile manner.

"No need," Bing Qing Tong wore a cold face, moving swiftly, crossing this group. She disappeared instantly. Han Cui smiled beautifully, like hundreds of flowers blooming. She didn't pay attention to these people and just left.

"Lie Kuan, you've wasted your heart. These two women are at the Third Sky of Spirit Realm. Why would they have to favor you?" A dark skinned, short young man laughed evilly. "Well, these famous flowers have an owner already."

"B\*tches," Lie Kuan was surprised. But then, he thundered with a dark face. "They dare to join the barbarian man. Harrumph, they don't favor living. Such sl\*ts! The man called Shi Yan will be doomed soon. Perhaps, they would be involved too."

Shen Lin, the one who had left the Yang, was in this group. He frowned and then asked. "These two women have a relationship with Shi Yan?"

Shen Lin had spent a lot of time in the Perpetual Night Forest. That's why Lie Kuan asked him to show the way. Lie Kuan smiled on hearing him. "Mister Shen, I heard that the Yang family has many beautiful young ladies. Is that true?"

Shen Mu slightly bent his body, his face respectful. "Yeah, it's true. Li Feng Er and Yang Xue are really prominent. Why does young master Lie ask me that?"

Lie Kuan and the others had their eyes brightened, chuckling evilly.

"I think we should ask to attack the enemy first. They have to die, eventually. Well, if we can have fun with them, when they die, their lives won't be wasted." The short, fat guy pursed his lips perversely.

"A bunch of trash!" However, a voice came from that tree. Lie Feng of the Devil Valley appeared, glaring coldly at them. "Is that your future career?"

When they realized Lie Feng was coming, they paled immediately, bending to greet him loudly. "Brother."

"Get lost! Don't embarrass our Devil Valley! Killing you is as easy as smashing an ant. Shi Yan can always do that before he dies." Lie Feng was cold, and didn't want to look at them. He walked away.

After Lie Feng had left for a while, Lie Kuan continued with an irritated expression. "F\*ck! He didn't defeat the opponent whose realm is lower than his. Well, don't know who has lost our Devil Valley's face."

"Lie Kuan, are you interested in the operation to deal with the Yang?" the fat guy instigated again.

"Of course, yes!" Lie Kuan laughed. "The seniors have announced already. They want to kill all the members of the Yang family and the Shi family. I heard that they are filthy rich. If we can earn some good stuff, it will be superb for us."

These people then laughed obscenely.

Shen Lin, the Yang family's traitor, kept silent. He felt a sadness swell in his heart. However, when he thought about that, Shen Lin darkened his face. He thought that Yang Tian Emperor and his

people deserved that. They had given up the big tree – the seven ancient factions – to group with the alien tribes. They deserved death.

...

After Lie Feng left that area, he took out a bronze coin, flipping it between his fingers. While moving, the coin sometimes sparkled a dark light. Just like black mist, it flew forward.

Lie Feng followed the faint light from the bronze coin. His pace was fast, then slow; he didn't look hurried.

After a long time, Lie Feng suddenly felt tense. He halted, releasing the Soul Consciousness to sense, then beamed a forced smile. "You guys busted me."

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui silently walked out from the shade of a big tree, looking at him with an unfriendly countenance. Han Cui arched her brows. She rarely felt angry, but she screamed. "Why are you following us?"

"I'm ordered." Lie Feng didn't seem tense. He smiled and answered deliberately.

"Whose orders?" Bing Qing Tong looked cold. "Lie Feng, although your competence isn't bad, if we sisters join hands, it's not hard to kill you."

Lie Feng had reached the Second Sky of Spirit Realm. He was the strongest leader of the new generation of the Devil Valley. His cultivation of the Devil Valley's supernatural Upanishad was excellent. If they battled one-on-one, Bing Qing Tong with her Third Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base couldn't defeat him.

"From the Supreme Leaders, not just my teacher." Lie Feng smiled. "If you want to defeat me, well, of course, you can do that. But if you want to kill me, haha, it's not easy."

"What is your purpose for following us?" As Han Cui felt time was running out, she got annoyed. Anger rose in her beautiful eyes.

"You know already," Lie Feng took several steps backward. He squinted, his face eccentric. "Personally, I don't have any bad intentions towards you two. I'm here to tell you that if you decide to go, you should be prepared, and you should know that you can't come back. In other words, if you return, even the Hegemon of your Fighting Union can't protect you."

"Why do you want to tell us this?" Bing Qing Tong furrowed her brows, talking in a low tone. "As far as I've known, Shi Yan had irritated you in the Precious Tool Valley, right?"

"Irritated... I don't think so." Lie Feng pursed his lips, talking arrogantly. "I don't like the weak. Only the strong can get into my eyes. And Shi Yan... he's one of the rare kinds I like. Although I like slaughtering and being mean, I always respect and admire strong experts. And, I don't want to see that kid be killed unknowingly. I want to defeat him officially for once."

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui kept silent, their faces complicated.

Many members of the seven ancient factions had a good relationship with Shi Yan. For instance, Zhu Yi of the Wonderful Stone City, the elders of the Radiant God Cult, the Banner family, and the Aoke Family.

However, after they knew the relation between Shi Yan and the alien tribes, most of them didn't dare to show their agreement. They decided to ignore it. Some even got enraged, and they wanted to attack the Yang family.

People who wanted to help him were pitifully rare.

Lie Feng was a new face of the Devil Valley. His brutal name was famous in the Divine Great Land. He liked slaughtering, and here was almost no nice word to describe him.

However, a character like that had told Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui the dark thoughts of the higher levels in the seven ancient factions. At this moment, Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui were

moved.

"How about my other two sisters? Are they alright?" Bing Qing Tong pondered for a while and then asked nervously.

Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Yu Zhu were still in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. Bing Qing Tong was afraid that the other two would be involved and the seven ancient factions would trouble them. She couldn't press down her worries.

"They should be okay. The high levels mean that... The traitors are the ones who send intelligence to Shi Yan discreetly. They don't want us to treat you well. Yeah, only you two." Lie Feng contemplated for a while and then continued. "If you return now, I will consider nothing has happened. The high levels won't attack you. But if you are persistent, I will say the same... You shouldn't return."

"Thank you," Bing Qing Tong nodded to him. "We won't come back. If you have the chance... please help us notify my other two sisters. Please let them know."

Lie Feng was dumbstruck. He beamed a faint smile. "I envy that kid. Haha, I didn't think that you were willing to leave the seven ancient factions for him. Alright, I will send your message to your sisters. Just leave and don't worry about them. If we meet again, I won't be polite. You should solve your matters yourself."

Then, Lie Feng turned around generously. He sauntered towards the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, not wanting to follow them anymore.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui stood there in silence for a while. Han Cui spoke first. "That man does have good intentions. I didn't expect that he would remind us. If he hadn't talked to us, I think we would have returned to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. At that time, we would be miserable."

"Yeah, it's hard to see through people's hearts. At the most

struggling time, there are those who look like your enemy but will help you discreetly." Bing Qing Tong suddenly remembered something, her face disdain. "And then there are some who are so shameful!"

Han Cui's visage became grimaced as she snorted.

# Chapter 647: Impasse?

---

These days, Shi Yan was really busy.

The Perpetual Night Forest was vast. As he was doing business with the other three hotshots of the Monster Clan, he had to run back and forth in the forest, consuming a lot of his efforts to make them accept him.

Nine-headed Bird, Silver-winged Sky Wolf, and Glacial Armor Giant Alligator were the Rank 2 Level 9 beasts, the high-grade leaders of the Monster Clan, at the same level as Xue Lie.

The three of them occupied vast areas in the Perpetual Night Forest. They were all brutal and sinister. They had many level 7 and 8 subordinates, who were staying in different areas. However, they didn't have a good relationship with Yan Long and Xue Lie. Quite the contrary, they fought all the time.

To get the approval from these three, Shi Yan had to put much effort, using Yan Long and Xue Lie as the precedent to persuade them, making them give him the treasures they had stashed for thousands of years.

After one month of refining through days and nights, Shi Yan was exhausted. With Ye Chang Feng's assistance, he had the Purgatory True Flame, which helped him please the three hotshots of the Monster Clan.

Nine-headed Bird, Silver-winged Sky Wolf, and Glacial Armor Giant Alligator were the overlords of a vast area. They all had intellect, which became more profound after the Great Fission. Negotiating with them gave Shi Yan a big headache as they weren't so easy to be deceived.

If they hadn't seen the great changes on Yan Long and Xue Lie after their bodies had been refined, these three monsters would never pay attention to Shi Yan.

The precious treasures they had collected over thousands of years widened Shi Yan's vision. Now he knew that the most precious earth and heaven products weren't in the hands of the seven ancient factions, but in the cave mansions of the beasts.

After one month of refining, no matter day or night, Shi Yan was so exhausted that his soul had weakened. However, his Third Sky of Spirit Realm cultivation base was steadied.

He found that while he was quenching the monsters' bodies or forging the simple weapons with tremendous power, his mind and spirit were quiet and clear. During the refining process, his soul was sublimated. This wonderful realm of having nothing else in his head was really useful to steady his Sea of Consciousness.

After one month, his understanding of the star Upanishad became deeper.

While he was annealing the Glacial Armor Giant Alligator, he had accidentally stirred up space, causing many space slits again. This experience gave him a deeper knowledge of space power.

Although he was tired out during the whole month, he knew this period was constructive for his martial cultivating path. It made his recognition of earth and heaven power clearer.

Di Shan and Li Zheng Rong had used the Creator's Divine Pond to enter the True God Realm and create the God Soul. Finally, he had True God Realm warriors on his side. They didn't fail him.

Yang Tian Emperor wasn't hurried. He said that he didn't want to use the Creator's Divine Pond that quickly. He was still cultivating on the lake bottom, using the willpower that was almost harmful to him to comprehend the power Upanishad he had understood.

Today, he managed to have some free time to go to the Yang family's gathering point. He was surprised to see Yi Tian Mo and Yu Ruo were in their comprehension stage. They sat still for seven



days, while magical halos were moving around them.

With his knowledge, Shi Yan understood that when Yi Tian Mo and Yu Rou woke up, they would be at the Peak of Spirit Realm. At that time, they could enter the Creator's Divine Pond.

When he was still observing them, Yang Tian Emperor asked Ye Chang Feng to open the lake passage. He returned with a grim face.

"The seven ancient factions want to attack us now." Right after he arrived, Yang Tian Emperor threw a powerful grenade, which sank everybody's hearts.

Although they knew the seven ancient factions didn't have good intentions, they always thought that as they were all humans, the seven ancient factions wouldn't force them into the dead corner. Having heard Yang Tian Emperor, people found their hearts all chilled.

The seven ancient factions were the strongest human forces in the Divine Great Land. Before the rise of the alien tribes, they had dominated the richest land, and everybody knew their reputation.

When they were determined, it would be very terrifying.

"Great Grandpa, how did you know that?" Shi Yan's face darkened. "You were always staying in the lake bottom. How did you receive the news?"

"It's from Tang Yuan Nan. Before we detached, I exchanged the Sound Stone seal with him." Yang Tian Emperor's visage was grim. "However, it's not Tang Yuan Nan's voice. Perhaps, he had sent someone out of the Secret Domain and sent me the message. That person said that the seven ancient factions are about to carry out a slaughter against us. We are told to leave the Perpetual Night Forest as fast as possible."

"Tang Yuan Nan... He still remembers our relationship. It's worth my good treats to him." Shi Yan nodded. He contemplated for a while and then asked, "How about Xia Qing Hou? You didn't

contact only Tang Yuan Nan, did you? Has he ever sent any message to you?"

Yang Tian Emperor kept silent.

Shi Yan's face darkened. He snorted and then said faintly, "Seems like not everyone remembers the old favors."

"Without the Teleportation Formation Little Yan had built, the Xia family would have perished in the Endless Sea. This old man, when they had arrived in the Divine Great Land, he immediately joined the Pure Land as though he didn't remember who we are," Yang Zhuo smiled faintly.

"Don't say useless things. Everybody has their own path. We can't force anyone." Yang Tian Emperor scolded then frowned. "Everyone has his own choice. The day we chose to leave, we should have known that we would be on the opposite side one day. Tang Yuan Nan has remembered our friendship. We have to appreciate him. Xia Qing Hou didn't notify us, but we don't need to criticize. We just... don't consider him a friend anymore."

"Yang-ge, do you really think that way?" Cao Qiu Dao, the one who always kept silent from the beginning, suddenly arched his eyebrows. "The hero of the Endless Sea, when have you become so sympathetic? In my eyes, the ones that aren't my friends, of course, are my enemies!"

Yang Tian Emperor was nonchalant, not answering. No one knew what he was thinking.

Yang Tian Emperor was always arrogant in the Endless Sea. He didn't have many close friends, and Xia Qing Hou was one of his close friends.

Before Xia Qing Hou had fallen into insanity, Yang Tian Emperor had a good relationship with him. The Xia family always followed the Yang family. They had stayed in the Kyara Sea. No matter what situation it was, they were still with the Yang family.

Yang Tian Emperor had treated him well. Xia Qing Hou appreciated his favor, and he had done his best to maintain a good relationship with the Yangs. When Yang Tian Emperor found the danger, he had notified Xia Qing Hou first, asking him to bring the Xia family to the Immortal Island so that they could leave the Endless Sea together.

Quite the contrary, Tang Yuan Nan was Yang Tian Emperor's opponent right from the beginning. The Three Gods Sect and the Yang family had had conflicts for hundreds of years. Yang Tian Emperor and Tang Yuan Nan had fought before. They didn't like each other.

When Shi Yan appeared, their hostile relationship was calmed, as they gradually became allies. However, his relationship with Tang Yuan Nan was much worse than the relationship he had with Xia Qing Hou. When they decided to leave the Endless Sea, he had hesitated a lot before sending news to Tang Yuan Nan.

However, when he treated Xia Qing Hou, he had no hesitation. He immediately notified Xia Qing Hou when he knew the change of the Demon Area, which he couldn't resist.

However, when they needed intelligence the most, Tang Yuan Nan had sent it to them, while Xia Qing Hou didn't even move his fingers. Yang Tian Emperor found it hard to accept this fact.

"From now on, he will no longer be my friend. If he shows his hostility, I won't be merciful." Yang Tian Emperor kept silent for a while before continuing with a calm voice.

Cao Qiu Dao laughed. "This is the Yang Tian Emperor I know."

"What should we do?" Fan Xiang Yun was anxious, her face glum. "Shi Yan, do you have any countermeasures?"

"Time is rushing," Shi Yan gritted his teeth. "I thought we still have more time. After you guys all have the breakthrough, we will face them directly. I didn't think that they would take action that

fast."

He felt a headache coming.

He knew how strong the seven ancient factions were. They had more than ten True God Realm warriors. Even if Yun Hao and the Radiant God Cult didn't join this operation, the other six factions were enough to sweep them.

"How about the Monster Clan? Would they help us?" asked Yang Zhuo.

"They can help us a little bit. But, we can't expect that they would risk their lives for us. Our opponent is so intimidating. I think the Monster Clan will consider the pros and cons. They won't be rash." Shi Yan shook his head then said, "Unless..."

"Unless what?" Everybody was shaken.

Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. "Unless that dreadful old man Xuan Ming helps us, the other hotshots of the Monster Clan would never risk their lives against the Human Clan. Sigh! It's tough. That old man's a conservative one. He's a big racist nut. Last time I went there, he had struck me away before I had time to explain."

When he said that, people felt their hearts sink again. Dark clouds hovered in their heads.

"How about leaving this place?" said Fan Xiang Yun, "We should leave the Perpetual Night Forest for the time being. It should be... no problem?"

"We can leave. But should we not return?" Yang Tian Emperor shook his head. "Once we leave the Perpetual Night Forest, it's the empty land outside. It's easy for the alien tribes to detect us. Not only the alien tribes, the seven ancient factions could chase after us there. It's also a wild area with nothing else. We won't have even an obstacle to hide behind. We haven't prepared for that. It would make us more passive."

"Yes, we can't retreat. Once we retreat, it will be more

strenuous." Cao Qiu Dao, the Head Master of the Cao family, always had a clear mind.

Everybody was silent, their faces grim. They were thinking how to deal with this big oncoming calamity.

When they had to face the seven ancient factions directly, they recognized that they were so weak and tiny compared to this formidable force. They had no means or ways to stop their crushing attack.

"Little Yan, don't bear too big a pressure. As we are at this point, it's our choice. Without you, we still would have done the same." Yang Tian Emperor looked at him with affection. "In this vast world, we would have a way out. We will find a solution."

Shi Yan took a deep breath. "Great Grandpa, give me time. I need to think about it carefully to see if we can find a way out."

Everybody nodded and scattered, discussing with each other in a low tone to find a solution.

Yang Tian Emperor sighed, but didn't say anything, as a furious light was dancing in his eyes. No one knew which brutal thought he had at this moment.

Shi Yan didn't say anything. He sat down by the lake, closed his eyes, and pondered, his face grim.

# Chapter 648: Deep affection – Generous love

---

When Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui arrived, Shi Yan still wore a gloomy face, as he was yet to figure out the solution.

Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao's group were also upset and gloomy; their countenance looked heavy. They were stressed because of the pressure from the seven ancient factions.

When the two elegant beauties, whose appearance and bearings were more exquisite than Fan Xiang Yun, arrived, Cao Qiu Dao and Yang Tian Emperor changed their faces, starting to gather their powers. They all looked tense.

They thought that the seven ancient factions had started their operation. Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui were their first wave of attack. The two men were preparing to kill them.

At this moment, Shi Yan frowned and woke up from his deep thought. Seeing the two beautiful women who had a love knot with him, he tried to beam a smile. "Why are you here?"

"Lin Meng, Nie Ruo, and Guan Ho are about to attack you guys. We're here... to tell you to leave early. Don't wait until they come." Bing Qing Tong's pretty eyes held a faint streak of affection. She smiled elegantly. "It's good that you've reached the Third Sky of Spirit Realm."

Han Cui's eyes brightened as she smiled gorgeously. "You, this b\*stard! Can you stop making people worry about you? It's obvious that you have an excellent natural endowment. Why do you always put yourself in difficult situations? Sigh, I don't know what to tell you."

Hearing Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui, Yang Tian Emperor's group was startled as they felt something weird here.

They had heard about the story between Shi Yan and the four ice flowers of the Ice Emperor City... However, they couldn't confirm

if it were true or not. Today, as they had finally seen the two gorgeous women and their soft voices, they immediately recognized that the truth could be more unbelievable than the rumors.

"You guys shouldn't have come here. You should stay in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. Why do you want to come here for troubles?" Shi Yan felt warm. He put aside his worries for a moment and then smiled. "Where are the others? How were you doing in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain?" He was referring to Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Yu Zhu.

"They can't get out. Otherwise, they should be here already." Bing Qing Tong bit her lips. She was always a noble and cold woman, but now, she looked like a little girl who had just tasted love. "Go, we will go with you. It's alright if we can dodge this calamity. The power of the seven ancient factions is much more dangerous than what you've imagined. Your force... I think you can't deal with them."

She knew the seven ancient factions force was imposing. She knew Lin Meng's group was determined, and she also knew that Shi Yan was stubborn. Asking him to leave his people and join the seven ancient factions was impossible. She didn't talk much to persuade him.

"If I could leave, I would have left already." Shi Yan smiled and then shook his head, talking to Yang Tian Emperor's group. "Don't hasten. There's always a will. Give me more time."

Yang Tian Emperor smiled and waved his hand. "You guys should talk. I need to run some errands."

Cao Qiu Dao and Shi Jian were also tactful. They smiled and then left. The worries they had settled.

Both Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao were the heroes in the Endless Sea. After a hundred years, they had been through so many kinds of dangers. Their minds and hearts were persistent

and brave, such that nothing could compare. They would never be cracked easily by the current problem.

Everybody dispersed, as Shi Yan, Bing Qing Tong, and Han Cui sat together by the lake, where waves rippled beautifully with the sun, moon, and stars shining above their heads. Wind breezed, blowing the refreshing scent towards them. The three looked peaceful and harmonious.

"Have you ever... missed us?" Han Cui kept silent for a while and then asked weakly. Light flashed in her beautiful eyes, as a trace of longing appeared on her charming face.

"Sometimes," Shi Yan turned to look at her, flashing his white teeth in a radiant smile. The sinister and cold manners of the past vanished. "But I'm so busy. Each step I've taken is full of danger. I've been fighting with many people... I don't have much time..."

"It's alright," Bing Qing Tong's soft, delicious lips parted as she whispered. "We don't wish for many things. As long as we have a position in your heart... even if it's tiny, it's enough for us. Our ages are much different... We understand... We aren't matched..."

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui had been famous in the Divine Great Land for so many years. Their age was actually much bigger than his.

However, women who cultivated martial arts could keep their youth as their realm increased. At the same time, their Ice Jade Technique was specialized in retaining one's appearance. It helped them preserve their beauty forever. At first glance, they were just in their twenties.

However, they knew their real ages. During the time they had spent together, they always felt small, as they thought that they had taken advantage of Shi Yan. They had never wanted to occupy him.

As time flew, Shi Yan had reached the Third Sky of Spirit Realm,



the same realm as theirs. With their knowledge, they knew Shi Yan would go on to a wider world. Their thought of occupying Shi Yan had soon been cut off.

In this great land, strong warriors could do what they wanted. They could rule the others, or... they could destroy the whole world.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui had gawked at Shi Yan's progress, watching him about to surpass them. Gradually, they felt helpless. They thought that they should seize the time and spend more time with him. Although this affection was short, it was enough to comfort their hearts.

Most of the women treasured their love. And, they would always want to sink into the river of love.

Women who practiced martial arts didn't dare to fall in love. Since they weren't resolute like men, a relationship could entangle them for the rest of their lives, affecting their progress on the martial road.

These four women knew that they had sunk deep into this affection after Shi Yan left the Ice Emperor City. They always wanted to know his situation. During the quiet nights, they had yearned for that figure.

"We just want... just want to stay with you more." Han Cui was usually a strong woman. But under this ambiance, where the sun, moon, and stars reflected themselves radiantly in the lake, she seemed to turn weaker. "We women... are like that. When a man takes our hearts, we will become weak... and useless."

Shi Yan sat quietly. A puzzled thought appeared in his eyes as he felt so many flavors appear in his heart.

He had left them determinedly because he considered the four women an ingredient of the love in his life. They weren't his main course.

However, at the most critical moment, these two women didn't hesitate to go against the seven ancient factions. They didn't care about their lives coming here for him. They were like a rock falling into the lake of his heart, rippling vehemently.

"I'm an inborn heartless. I'm selfish, too. I'm not a good person. I don't know how to make up for your good deeds..." Shi Yan turned his head away, his eyes flurried. "It... I still have you... in my heart."

Light glowed from deep inside Bing Qing Tong's and Han Cui's eyes. They seemed to be revived. Their soul, spirit, and mind seemed to be sublimated.

Shi Yan was surprised. His Soul Consciousness started to sense as he said, "You... Your souls seem to have changed!" "

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui hadn't felt the change in their bodies yet. Hearing Shi Yan, a divine light sparkled in their eyes. Halos bloomed from them, as their aura was changed obviously.

After Shi Yan left, the inner world of Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui wasn't steady. Their hearts were puzzled, and they couldn't progress their power. Both their soul and realm were affected, as they were all covered by a gray mist that they couldn't see through.

This was Mara – the most dangerous obstacle in cultivating! If they couldn't get over it, they would have to stay in their current realm for the rest of their lives.

(Mara is the demon of temptation in Buddhism – TL)

At this moment, Mara in their hearts had been swept away, leaving their souls clean and safe. They no longer felt the dim curtain that restrained their hearts. Also, their realm seemed to be increased.

"Follow me. At this moment, you're about to break through easily. I'm making it up for you, giving you something that I can." Shi Yan stood up, waving his hand. A translucent halo covered the

two women.

Just like a meteor crossing through the Perpetual Night Forest, Shi Yan brought Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui swaying through many gaps in the forest. After an hour, they got to the lake.

Releasing the Earth Flame, he took Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui, who didn't understand anything, to the lake bottom, heading towards the Creator's Divine Pond.

Near the ancient formation, Ye Chang Feng, Li Zheng Rong, and Di Shan were adjusting themselves with their eyes closed.

Di Shan and Li Zheng Rong had entered the True God Realm, and they had created their God Soul. At this moment, they were enhancing their new realm. Magical earth and heaven energies were twirling around them.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui didn't know Di Shan, but they knew Li Zheng Rong. They couldn't help but shout, their faces astounded.

The alchemists and blacksmiths in the Divine Great Land were the groups of special people with noble status. They were famous, but their progress in martial cultivation was always slower than the other warriors. Even Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui had heard about Li Zheng Rong, who had been stuck in the Spirit Realm for so many years.

They had never thought that Li Zheng Rong could eventually break through to the True God realm and seclude in this ordinary lake. This was hard to believe.

"It's true. Old Li has entered the True God Realm warrior. From now on, he has discovered a new world." Shi Yan smiled, pointing at the wonderful spiritual station. "Bing Tong, you go in there then release your soul. Calm it down and let the station guide you."

Bing Qing Tong followed his words and flew up. She was still suspicious. When she was about to reach the station, she turned

her head and asked, "What will happen?"

"Ten days later, you'll reach the True God Realm. No risks. Nothing unexpected." Shi Yan smiled.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui were dumbstruck.

"Sisters-in-law, Shi Yan isn't joking. It's real. My teacher and Uncle Di Shan have finished that process." Ye Chang Feng giggled, his face inviting people to beat him.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui were startled when he addressed them 'sister-in-law.' They blushed, but joy filled their hearts.

"Go pursue the higher realm," Shi Yan urged.

The beautiful eyes of Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui glowed like the diamonds. They couldn't help but shiver. They were overwhelmed by this big joy.

# Chapter 649: A beam of hope for dawn

---

In the Black Pool...

Black smog hovered above the pool. It seemed that this smoke would never disperse, rolling like the dark clouds and moving downward.

Zuo Shi floated above the dark water, her face grimaced in pain. She was trying to take in the black smoke. Her aura gradually rocketed.

Black lightning struck the pool, hitting Zuo Shi and getting into her soft body.

Xuan Ming stayed in the pool, using human form to emerge. His both hands were constantly dragging, pulling, and distorting the power of heaven and earth. He was forcefully pulling lightning and dark clouds in the sky, using his supernatural power to pour all of them into Zuo Shi's body.

Six hours later, the pain ceased from Zuo Shi's face. She then felt happy, dancing above the pool.

One more hour later, Zuo Shi hummed, her face divine. She sang and then laughed. "It works!"

A satisfied smile appeared on Xuan Ming's face, which was covered in turtle shells. "You little girl, your innate natural endowment is unbelievable. If you focus on your cultivating, your future will be unimaginable. However... you are mischievous. You met me too late. Otherwise, you should be at the True God Realm now."

"Why do I need such power?" Zuo Shi mumbled, talking disdainfully. "Cultivating's strenuous, and not interesting at all. My monster teacher urges me every day. So annoying! Meeting you is worse. You are more annoying than that Chi Xiao. Don't force me, or I will hate you."

Xuan Ming beamed a forced smile. "There are so many people in this land who want to be my disciple. Well, you're a lucky little girl. I'm doing the strenuous job to help you without any benefit, and you blame me daily. Sigh, life is so hard."

"Snort," Zuo Shi didn't pay attention to him. "I've reached the Spirit Realm, would you let me go now?"

"No!" Xuan Ming's face stiffened. "It's really complicated out there. If you go there, you will be involved."

While they were talking, Xuan Ming suddenly snorted and then shouted. "Get you're a\*s here! All of you!"

Yan Long, Xue Lie, Nine-headed Bird, Glacial Armor Giant Alligator, and Silver-winged Sky Wolf appeared by the pool. All of them were using their true form, which was hundreds of meters tall.

"Xuan Ming, our Boss, what do you summon us for?" Glacial Armor Giant Alligator talked in a low tone. While he was talking, thick icy vapor emitted from his mouth.

"I still need a good weapon. I'm going to find that human kid and ask him for one. Xuan Ming, our Boss, if you don't have any important order, can I leave now?" Silver-winged Sky Wolf cried impatiently.

"You bunch of idiots!" Xuan Ming's beard twitched. "If I don't watch over you guys, you would be harmed to death. Perhaps you would know nothing, even if he was going to sell you."

Yan Long's body, which was covered in flaming scales, shuddered as he roared indignantly. "Xuan Ming, our Boss, could you not exaggerate? Shi Yan treats us well. He helped us refine the body and a good weapon, too. He isn't an ordinary human."

Xue Lie and Nine-headed Bird also nodded, as they claimed that Shi Yan had treated them well. Apparently, they stood on Shi Yan's side.

"Stupid! Stupid!" Xuan Ming shook his head continually, his face as if he were at a funeral. "My life is so hard. I have to watch over this group of idiots. Sigh, so annoying. You are so annoying!"

"Xuan Ming Old man, you said the other side is in danger. What do you mean?" Zuo Shi suddenly got serious, frowning. "My grandfather, is he going to meet danger? You should make it clear now."

"I'm going to tell you too," Xuan Ming snorted. "The people of the seven ancient factions want to attack those humans. As far as I am concerned, at least ten days or a half a month later, they will carry out their operation."

Listening to him, Zuo Shi's cute face paled. She cried immediately, "I have to go back! I must go back!"

"I won't allow you to go there!" Xuan Ming rolled his eyes at her. "You want to go back to get killed? Let alone the fact you've just reached the Spirit Realm, even if you were at the True God Realm, only death is what awaits you there! You can't imagine how strong the seven ancient factions force is. They have at least ten True God Realm warriors. What good is there for you if you go there?"

"No! I have to go back! Xuan Ming Old man, if you stop me, I will hate you forever!" Zuo Shi screamed.

Yan Long, Xue Lie, Nine-headed Bird were the rulers of the Monster Clan. From what Xuan Ming said, they understood the matter, their faces darkening.

"I have to tell you clearly first," Xuan Ming said with a serious complexion. "This is the civil war of the Human Clan. You can help a little bit to pay back the favors, but you are not allowed to risk your lives. Our grandchildren of the Monster Clan dwell in this Perpetual Night Forest. You shouldn't let the human civil war cause loss to us. Use your brain to think. Don't pioneer and be the idiots!"

Nine-headed Bird, Glacial Armor Giant Alligator, and Silver-winged Sky Wolf didn't answer, but Yan Long shouted, "Shi Yan has given us favors. We should help him... And, if he dies, who will help us refine the body?"

"If all of you die, you don't need to refine your body anymore!" Xuan Ming rolled his eyes. "If anyone goes against my order, I will kick his ass out of the Perpetual Night Forest. I will never allow him to come back!"

After he said that, the five great monsters shut their mouths. But their eyes changed constantly.

"Xuan Ming Old man, you have to help them. Otherwise, I'm not going to cultivate with you anymore. Even if you kill me, I'm not going to move my hands!" Zuo Shi cried bravely. Her soft body shivered. "If my family faces something unexpected, I will hate you for the rest of my life!"

Xuan Ming felt a headache coming. He grabbed his hard hair. "At most... I'll bring the Zuo family here. I will keep them safe."

"No!" Zuo Shi shook her head resolutely. "Shi Yan used to help me. You have to save him too!"

"That kid has a tremendous competence. I don't need to interfere. Sigh, he has messed up this Perpetual Night Forest. That kid doesn't learn the rules. He's avoided me to make this bunch of idiots die for him. Save him? Impossible!" Xuan Ming shook his head continually.

Zuo Shi kept silent, pouting her lips to show her discontent.

"My little ancestor, why do you need to care about his life?" Xuan Ming felt the pain swell in his head. "My life is so hard. You tell me, why do I need to save him? What makes him deserve that?"

"That year, we were all in the Quiet Cloud Land. He took us to the Endless Sea, and then the Divine Great Land. Without him, I couldn't have met you. And, the thing I got, he helped me to



translate. The Black Tortoise True Star is thanks to his labors too." Zuo Shi hastened to tell him the truth.

Xuan Ming was dazed. He frowned, "Is it true? You are trying to fabricate it, aren't you?"

"You fabricate it!" Zuo Shi snorted discontentedly. "You can read my mind. Why don't you try?"

Xuan Ming squinted. A shiny light crossed his eyes, entering Zuo Shi's head.

After a while, he pondered and then stroked his chin. "It's true. Yeah, let me think. Alright, you've reached the Spirit Realm. It's time to change the place to cultivate. If you progress fast to satisfy me, I will help that kid."

Zuo Shi's eyes brightened. "Are you sure?"

"I'm an old man, why should I deceive a little girl like you?" Xuan Ming rolled his eyes, then cried with a painful face. "This life... is really hard!"

"Alright, I agree with you. But, you have to help me!" Zuo Shi's face was filled with content. "Cultivating, right? I'm not good at anything but this thing. Hehe."

"Hey, Xuan Ming Boss, how about us?" The group of great monsters of the Monster Clan stared at him, waiting for his decision.

"Wait for my order. You guys can help them do something, but without my instruction, you are not allowed to get to the frontline and slaughter. Understand?" Xuan Ming snorted and then thundered. "All of you are idiots! After the Great Space Fission, you are still stupid. Sigh, this life is really hard!"

As Yan Long and Xue Lie saw the situation having a chance to overturn, they didn't linger, moving their giant bodies and disappearing from the Black Pool.

After the others all left, Xuan Ming opened his mouth and drew all the thick black smog above the Black Pool.

After that, he swung his hand to cover Zuo Shi in black smog. He brought the little girl to a special area in the Perpetual Night Forest, which would help her breakthrough faster.

...

Inside the Creator's Divine Pond...

Li Zheng Rong slowly woke up, his eyes bright as stars. His aura was torrential, bringing a streak of the ancient times.

"Ah, is that little girl Bing Qing Tong?" He turned his head to see the Creator's Divine Pond behind his back. He couldn't help but cry, then turned to Shi Yan. "What? Why are you so upset? Any problem?"

"The seven ancient faction forces are about to attack us," sighed Shi Yan.

Li Zheng Rong's mood suddenly became heavy.

He knew the dangerous features of the seven ancient factions. He knew how bad it would be when they wanted to attack someone. He also knew that Shi Yan's current force wasn't enough to counter such force.

"Have you found a solution yet?" He frowned while asking.

Shi Yan shook his head.

Li Zheng Rong contemplated for a while and then said, "You said you have the knowledge of a blacksmith. Should we start from there?"

"Refining weapons?" Shi Yan shook his head and beamed a forced smile. "Not enough time. The excellent treasures couldn't change the whole situation."

"I'm not talking about forging weapons." Li Zheng Rong's face was serious. "I'm talking about...formations! I remember that

there are so many powerful formations in the Antiquity Time. Some could even kill the King God Realm warriors!"

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He shuddered, then jolted up from his spot.

He stood still for a while, as if he were searching for the information in his head. Later on, he beamed a wry smile. "Difficult. Talking about materials, the Monster Clan has enough. But, it's going to be a mega construction. I can't build it in a short time."

"What if the Monster Clan helps you?" Li Zheng Rong reminded him. "As far as I know, the giant bodies of the beasts would be a great support in building massive constructions."

Shi Yan was shaken, as divine light shot out from his eyes. He laughed cheerfully. "Old Li, you are truly extraordinary! We can try this! Thank you Old Li. Haha, true. If the Monster Clan helps us, we can build the difficult ancient formation shortly. I think it will work!"

The problem that had troubled him for a long time finally had a beam of hope with Li Zheng Rong's reminder.

# Chapter 650: Construct the city walls

---

The gathering place of the Yang family...

Beasts were moving back and forth, their giant bodies seeming like the black clouds in the sky. They were rumblingly stomping on the ground, carrying many cultivating materials on their backs.

Each giant beast transporting the materials would shout its name contentedly. Then, it would smile servilely to a young man by the lake. "Remember me! Remember to refine my body! I can help you!"

The young man by the lake lifted his head every time, smiled, and nodded to the beasts tirelessly.

Yan Long, Xue Lie, Nine-headed Bird, Glacial Armor Giant Alligator, and Silver-winged Sky Wolf would sometimes appear from the dense forest to order their soldiers, helping them to dig a tunnel underground.

There appeared many ditches that connected to each other by the lake. Each ditch was dozens of meters deep. Humid steam diffused from them.

Deep inside the ditches, one could see many sparkling lights. With a closer look, one would find they were all the top-grade Essence Crystals. Every warrior was moved on seeing them.

These top-grade Essence Crystals came from the lake bottom near the Creator's Divine Pond. Each piece of them was precious, containing a massive amount of energy.

So many top-grade Essence Crystals formed the foundation. But they just looked like the cushion for this formation.

Looking from a bird's eye view, it was a complicated drawing formed by so many ditches. Looking at that formation for a long time, people would feel their souls tremble, as if it were an evil force that could shake people's souls.

Several thousand warriors of the Yang family, the Cao family, the Shi family, the Dark Devil Clan, and the Winged Clan stood in those ditches, constantly moving back and forth. Sweat covered their pale faces.

If someone zoomed in each ditch a hundred times, he would find a strange formation drawn at the bottom, which had the names of many materials.

The crowd of the Yang family and the alien tribes were putting the distinctive materials into their exact locations and arranging the Essence Crystals neatly.

A couple thousand members of the Monster Clan had been transporting materials for the whole three days. The heaven and earth products they had brought to this place were enough to cover the entire Perpetual Night Forest. They were piled up like many big mountains.

Super warriors like Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong had become workers. They were using their tremendous power to build the underground foundation. Even some Earth Realm and Disaster Realm warriors were busy too. They all wanted to contribute their strength.

When someone drained all his Essence Qi and got exhausted, he would come to the lake to receive the pellets.

Mighty warriors like Yang Tian Emperor would use the spiritual herbs, the ten-thousand-year stalactites, or other chalcedonies to enhance their Essence Qi and spirit. They didn't regret using so many precious treasures, as they just wanted to restore the power at the fastest speed.

This was willfully trampling on precious heaven and earth products.

The area covered by the ditches was around a hundred li squared, extending endlessly like giant dragons crawling on the ground,

entangling with each other. This formation looked both strange and mysterious.

After eight days of strenuous labor, human warriors and beasts had cooperated to dig the ground and form the foundation. So many strange formations were carved and inlaid with different precious materials. The energy of the top-grade Essence Crystals had activated the miraculous jades and crystals.

Lines of hundred-meters tall beasts brought the flame stones, diamonds, and rocks that were hard as steel, all from a distant place. Although they were of different kinds, they were all more rigid than steel and iron. Some stones were as big as a basketball court. Hundred-meters tall beasts carried them on their backs, which looked like they were carrying a whole small mountain.

Countless steel-like stones were pushed into the ditches, piling higher and higher.

Shi Yan and Ye Chang Feng were using the Earth Flame and the Purgatory True Flame to burn those mega rocks. They extracted the contaminants and quenched the rock firmness, pouring their energy into them.

Metals from many mines in the Perpetual Night Forest was melted into the blazing fluid, pouring into the ditches, covering the rigid stones. This scorching fluid enhanced the firmness of the stones, giving them a tremendous defending capacity.

The Ice Cold Flame also flew out. Right after the blazing fluid was poured into their exact position, the flame would cool it immediately using its cold air. This fluid then merged with the rocks, just like its armor.

Human warriors, pagans, and beasts were gathering, their spirit soaring up to the sky. They had gathered a massive amount of materials, using crystal stones, metals, mineral stones, jades, and gems to raise the area slowly. Eventually, it took the shape of a city, which was not really big.

By the time the primitive form of the city was established, Shi Yan had become busier. He carved the formations on the city walls and on some special corners. At the same time, he had to tell Yang Tian Emperor and Yi Tian Mo to assign the next tasks to the Monster Clan.

While they didn't pay much attention, the city situated in a hundred li squared area was getting taller, reaching the height of one hundred meters. It had a square shape; even the top was sealed. They just left a giant door facing the sky, which looked more like a hole.

The city was formed, but the atmosphere inside was still hustling and bustling. So many symbols and formation appeared on the walls. On the streets, piles of materials had been arrayed into different formations with different functions.

Shi Yan was exhausted, and his eyes were dull. He was constantly using pellets and spiritual herbs to resist the fatigue. He didn't stop even at nights, as he was drawing the general outline for the entire city.

All the beasts and pagans were working as he had planned. They increased the power and contributed their strength as he required. All of them were giving their best to build this city.

...

Ten days later, the big city was vaguely formed. From the outside, it looked relatively big. The city walls sparkled with a silver light. Under the light of the sun, moon, and stars, it looked more like a silver mountain range, radiating gloriously.

Shi Yan was busier. He was flying back and forth in the city, portraying formations, naming the materials that they needed more of, talking to the Monster Clan, and assisting Yang Tian Emperor's team in arranging their manpower. He was exhausted like an old dog.

Present day...

A senile old man with white hair and beard took a beautiful young girl and crossed this place. They were stunned on seeing the radiant city.

"Grandpa, since when has a city been here?" The little girl had a pair of eyes as bright as stars. Her small face looked like an apple, blushing lovely, showing that she was an active girl.

The old man held a dragon cane in his wrinkled hand. His eyes were turbid. It seemed he couldn't see things clearly.

He squinted, gazing the silver city that had just appeared for a while. His smoky eyes started to show his interest. "Who knows. From the structure, I can see it's not built by ordinary people. Interesting!"

"Is that the seven ancient factions' work?" The young girl was surprised for a while and then asked suddenly. "The seven ancient factions should be staying in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, right?"

"...Seven ancient factions." The old man contemplated for a while and then shook his head. "No, not them. Lin Meng and Nie Ruo wouldn't take the risk. The alien tribes are operating around the Perpetual Night Forest. If they are smart enough, they won't show themselves."

"Oh, then I don't know," the little girl chuckled. Suddenly, she seemed to be interested in this place. "Grandpa, can we go there and check it out?"

The old man didn't answer. He frowned, gazing at the silver city. Eventually, he found many beasts coming in and out the city, which astounded him more.

"Grandpa?" the little girl urged.

The old man woke up. He thought and then smiled with a nod, stroking the girl's head. "Tell me, Little Ying. Alright, we will go



there and see. We aren't hurried to see the Ice and Fire Domain anyway."

The old man and the little girl sauntered toward the silver city. When they were about to reach the city gate, they slowed down.

"People, who are you?" A clean but cold voice arose from the city, full of vigilance.

"We are the lucky humans that still survive in the Grace Mainland. As we heard the Perpetual Night Forest is relatively safe, we come here to avoid the pagan's slaughter."

Li Feng Er was standing in a watchtower tower inside the city. Hearing him, she was astounded. After considering for a while, she couldn't help but report to Yang Tian Emperor.

Yang Tian Emperor came. From the watchtower, he carefully observed the old man and the young girl. He felt really strange.

Yang Tian Emperor, at his realm, figured out that the old man seemed to be an ordinary elder. He had no energy fluctuations, and his vitality was weak. Quite the contrary, the little girl was... a Peak of Sky Realm warrior. However, her aura was powerful. Energy fluctuated around her body. At this level, even a Spirit Realm warrior was worse than her.

Yang Tian Emperor wasn't so sure. He hesitated, then sent a message to Yian Ti Mo.

Not long afterward, Yi Tian Mo and Di Shan came. They gazed at the old man for a while, but they couldn't find anything else. They shook their heads, not knowing what to do with this case.

This silver city hadn't been finished. If a strong expert with malicious intention came, he could affect the entire construction. But if they didn't let these two come in, the beasts or pagans in the Perpetual Night Forest would kill them.

As the old man saw no response from the city, he threw the little girl a glance to signal her.

The girl cheered up immediately. Then, she used a grimaced face while speaking. "Please, I'm begging you. Please let us in. We've been struggling the whole time until we got here. It's not been easy for us to survive until now. You are humans, right? Please help us!"

Yang Tian Emperor frowned. He hesitated for a while, then took out the Sound Stone to contact Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was using pellets to restore his energy. He pondered, then said, "Let them in. However, we should be watchful. Always keep an eye on them. Don't let them leave our sight."

Yang Tian Emperor stopped the communication. He nodded to Li Feng Er. "Pay attention to them. You are in charge of watching them. Don't let them go to the center."

Li Feng Er shouted with a severe countenance. "Let them in!"

The little girl was cheered up, as she continually said thanks and entered the city.

The old man didn't walk immediately. He frowned, looking at the shining silver city and the beasts moving back and forth. He seemed to be sinking into his thoughts.

"Little Ying, don't mess up in this city. Where the owner doesn't allow, don't trespass. Understand?" The old man caught up with the little girl, asking her in a low tone.

The young girl was surprised. She turned around to look at him, then nodded. She seemed to feel so strange in her heart.

# Chapter 651: Dispel visitors

---

After the old man and the young girl got into the city, Li Feng Er arranged them to stay in a big stone room in the outer region. Then, she asked the visitors about their origin.

"My name's Long Zhu. I'm a hunter in the Divine Great Land. This is my granddaughter, Long Ying. A warrior chose her to be his disciple when she was young, so she got some achievements. Thanks to her, I could dodge the pagans and survive until now. Eventually, we got the chance to come to the Perpetual Night Forest."

The old man named Long Zhu answered neither slowly nor fast. His eyes were misty.

Long Ying smiled, but didn't say anything.

Li Feng Er frowned, looking at them for a while, but she couldn't figure anything else. She then said begrudgingly. "You guys stay here. This is the outer area of the city. You can go wherever you want. However, please excuse us as you are not allowed to enter the center of the city."

Long Zhu smiled and nodded. "We will remember. Thank you, miss."

Li Feng Er nodded, leaving with a skeptical look on her face, as if she felt something was wrong.

Waiting until she left, Li Zheng Rong knocked the dragon cane on the wall of the room with a strange countenance. After a while, he frowned, his face astounded. He seemed to get something.

"How is it, grandpa?" Long Ying laughed cheerily.

"Excellent," Li Zheng Rong smiled and then said, "This stone wall is made of a combination of different rigid stones. Very good for defending. Seems it was quenched with high temperature. Really good! The one who could build this city should be a peerless

blacksmith. In our Divine Great Land, only some can achieve this."

Long Ying was terrified. "So, this place is a base of Human Clan? Grandpa, why don't you use your Soul Consciousness to sense?"

Li Zheng Rong shook his head as he explained smilingly. "It's not polite to do so. They are nice enough to let us in. We shouldn't break the rules. In any place, using the Soul Consciousness to peep into people's secrets is taboo. You little girl, you shouldn't mess up here."

"Harrumph!" Long Ying's eyes were disdainful. "With your power, even if the pagans are raging, we're still alright. Without them, we still live well."

"It's different. Girl, you have to be thankful." Li Zheng Rong shook his head grudgingly. "This city isn't finished. They have to bear big risks by letting us in. Haha, their bearings aren't similar to the seven ancient factions. If they were Lin Meng or Nie Ruo, they would give us no chance to visit the place."

"Hmm, so why do we need to go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain?"

"Lin Meng and Nie Rou, even if they are more selfish, they belong to our Human Clan. They are protecting the human bloodline. They've saved many people." Li Zheng Rong frowned, his face gloomy. "If the alien tribes are about to attack us on a big scale, we have to contribute our part."

...

Shi Yan didn't put those two people in his mind. He was still busy portraying the formations. He continually made the hand seals and released his energy to imprint the walls.

The silver city had six gates. Besides the four general directions, it had two more gates in the roof and underground. The underground gate led to the deep place in the earth, connecting with the earth's pulse.

The city was divided into the outer and the inner areas. The outer city was arranged with countless traps and dangers, created by so many barriers and formations. The inner part took one-fifth of the entire city, which was established with a Giant Universe Soul Gathering Formation. It could take the energy of heaven and earth through the gate in the roof.

To build this city, Shi Yan owed the Monster Clan a big deal, as he had almost gathered all of their sources.

The Yang family, the Cao family, the Winged Clan, and the Dark Devil Clan had temporarily stopped their cultivating process to focus on this mega construction.

Of course, without the Monster Clan's contribution, it was impossible to build such massive city in short time like this with only the human labor.

Li Zheng Rong had given him the inspiration.

"Little Yan, don't destroy yourself like that. Take a break. No need to hasten." Shi Jian came out of nowhere, walking to the lake with affection on his face.

Shi Yan smiled, looking really tired. "It's okay... I can still endure. The force of the seven ancient factions would come here in any minute. We have a little time. We must do our best to survive the pressure from the seven ancient factions."

Shi Jian sighed. "Your grandpa's useless. I can't help you much. Sigh, when we came to the Endless Sea, we knew how small we were. But, when we came to the Divine Great Land, we realized that we were the worst. Our vision is narrow. If we could go to the Endless Sea or the Divine Great Land earlier, we would have been able to help you better perhaps."

"It's alright. As long as we live, we still have time for everything." Shi Yan comforted him. "Grandpa, you should go to work. Please take care of the others. Ask them to save their strength. Don't get

paralyzed due to tiredness."

These days, many people had fainted because of running out of energy and bearing the big pressure.

A vigorous warrior fainted, which showed how exhausted his people were. Although Li Zheng Rong had refined many pellets, the number of warriors who needed to use pellets was increasing. Their medicines and pellets were in a shortage.

Luckily, at the critical time, the Cao family, Fan Xiang Yun and Man Gu had given the medicines and pellets they had stored for a hundred years. At this difficult moment, they had used the pellets to support for a while. Otherwise, it wasn't just a small number who would have had passed out.

It had come to the most critical time. No one had a different thought. To survive, they had put forth everything, becoming united more than ever before. People supplemented pellets, spiritual herbs, materials, and their physical strength.

In hopeless situations, people's potential would bloom. It was worth every moment. Without this city, they would never have had this state.

...

Another day had gone by...

In the thick forest outside the silver city, a group of one hundred human warriors was talking boisterously while walking in the forest. They all wore beautiful clothes.

Two elders took this group, an old woman with a glowing face, and an energetic old man. They knew each other, as they were discussing something along the way, their faces solemn.

Right behind them were dozens of Spirit Realm warriors, and some Sky Realm and Nirvana young men. All of them looked vigorous.

Among them were two appealing women. Surprisingly, they were He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing of the Endless Sea.

They were talking with each other in a low tone. Their faces were gorgeous. The long trip didn't wear them out. It only tangled their hair, giving them a different wild beauty.

Qu Yan Qing didn't wear her mask. Her beautiful face, which could even bring down a whole city, was exposed like a naturally magnificent gemstone. People would be mesmerized looking at her.

It was unknown what they had experienced, but they had reached the Peak of Sky Realm. Their aura was thick and surging, as waves of energy rippled from them.

There were many Nirvana and Earth Realm warriors walking near them. Sometimes, they would peep on them, revealing their yearning emotion with the hot look.

"Qing Man. We will arrive at the Ice and Fire Secret Domain soon. It's where the seven ancient factions of the Human Clan gather in the Divine Great Land. It should be interesting there. I know many people of the seven ancient factions. Can I take you around to visit the place?" A handsome young man holding a jade ruler chuckled, talking naturally.

He Qing Man frowned, but it was almost invisible. She shook her head. "Wei Zhai, I'm not close to you. Please don't call me Qing Man anymore."

Wei Zhai didn't change his countenance and just chuckled. "You little girl, you're so polite. My teacher and your teacher have a good relationship. So, you are my little sister. Why should we be too distant?"

"I can't reach that high." He Qing Man talked with a cold face as she was impatient. Wei Zhai was good at observing the situation. He got it right away, so didn't say anything more. He shifted his

look to Qu Yan Qing.

However, right before he was about to speak up, Qu Yan Qing sneered. "Stop it! You can try your luck with the others. You're not my type."

Wei Zhai was always dissolute, and it wasn't a secret here. Girls falling into his hands would be ignored when he got tired of them. He didn't consider his dissoluteness a shame, but pride. He often bragged about the details of his hunting for beauties, which ashamed his exes.

However, Wei Zhai was the biggest disciple of the old man who took the lead of this group. He had the Spirit Realm cultivation base. Not only did he have a profound realm, but he also had the benefits of distributing pellets and materials, which made the other girls, despite the crooked facts about him, admire him and want to be with him. Usually, these girls would lose both their bodies and reputation.

"People from the barbarian place like the Endless Sea, where no heroes were born, what do you have to have such cold manner?" Wei Zhai was surprised, but he didn't get angry. He still babbled. "I just want to befriend you guys. We can talk. We can discuss the cultivating techniques we like. Perhaps you are overthinking."

"No heroes?" Qu Yan Qing frowned, snorted, then said, "As I know, when Shi Yan arrived in the Divine Great Land, he defeated Lie Feng. Wei Zhai, you said that you're cool. Can you beat Lie Feng?"

Wei Zhai put on a dark and sinister complexion. He shouted coldly. "Shi Yan again! Along this trip, how many times have you mentioned that name? I'm so annoyed by this name!"

"It's you who said that our Endless Sea has no good heroes. If you can defeat Shi Yan, I will consider you the number one. Now what?" He Qing Man intervened disdainfully. "Shi Yan had spent ten years to reach the Peak of Sky Realm. Could you do that?"



Wei Zhai's face became more grimaced.

"Brother Wei, why do you need to get angry over a dead man? Even if he is more dangerous, the pagans will kill him soon. You don't need to be like that." A young man interfered.

Wei Zhai smiled faintly. "I hope he's dead. Otherwise... harrumph!"

However, this troop stopped all of a sudden. The old woman and Wei Zhai's teacher were surprised, looking at a dazzling silver city from a distance.

"Ah, a city's over there. Last time when I came here to train, it didn't exist!" The young man who had just interfered them acclaimed. He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing looked at the area ahead of them. They didn't know what mysterious thing was over there.

# Chapter 652: I'm the Master!

---

The group of around one hundred warriors was gazing at the silver city from the thick forest, all wearing strange faces.

Yan Ke and Wen Di, the two leaders, were the secluded experts in the Divine Great Land. He Qing Man, Qu Yan Qing, Wei Zhai, and the other young people behind them were the two's disciples. Some other Spirit Realm warriors were their followers.

Besides Yan Ke and Wen Di at the Second Sky of True God Realm, this group had a dozen Spirit Realm warriors. The others had the Earth Realm or Nirvana Realm cultivation base, and they were pretty young.

This force, in any aspects, was not worse than any other forces of the seven ancient factions. Moreover, they were the elite warriors with unimaginable potential.

When they reached the silver city, Li Feng Er and the others were watching from the guard tower. Their faces became solemn immediately.

Abruptly, waves of silver light rose from the city walls. Magical patterns appeared on the walls. There were drifting clouds, enormous mountains, flying birds, and swimming fishes, etc. All looked really animated, as if they were real objects, carrying magical energy.

Long Zhu and Long Ying immediately felt the movement from inside the city. They couldn't hide their surprise, walking out of the stone room. They stood on the high wall, peeping from a corner.

"Ah," Long Ying acclaimed with surprise. "Why are Grandma Yan and Master Wen here too?"

Long Zhu didn't reveal any emotion, talking indifferently. "Only the secret domain in the Perpetual Night Forest's the human

shelter at this moment. As the alien tribes want to kill Human Clan one for all, they come here to contribute their part."

"Grandpa, are we going to meet them?" Long Ying asked in a low tone.

Shaking his head, Long Zhu said, "No need to hurry. Let's see what the host will do. Yan Ke and Wen Di's team is different from us. They bring too many people. They didn't try to conceal the force. When such a force appears, the master of this place will show himself to see the situation."

Long Zhu had stayed in this silver city for two days. He kept being surprised because of the different ancient formations portrayed here and there. Moreover, he was struck seeing the big investment of this city. Everything made him so curious about the owner of the silver city.

He wanted to know what kind of a genius in the Divine Great Land could make the Monster Clan serve him. The ancient formations here were also a mystery to Long Zhu. He didn't know the purpose of the owner building a silver city here.

"So grandpa, you need to be careful. Don't let them see you," Long Ying smiled.

Long Zhu nodded nonchalantly. "Don't worry. We'll just watch the scene."

...

"Great work!"

Yan Ke and Wen Di observed the silver city for a while, looking at the countless drawings of formations appearing on the wall. Their countenance slightly changed, as they were crying with astonishment.

He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing gawked. They were scared by the energy fluctuation from the city walls, not daring to utter a word.

Wei Zhai had stopped his flirting, gazing at the silver city. He put on a serious face while fear filled his eyes.

He had visited the Perpetual Night Forest several times, so he knew this place was the Monster Clan's territory. Many tremendous beasts lived here. Moreover, after the seven ancient factions came here, they had been hiding in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. They didn't dare to provoke the Monster Clan.

Today, a majestic city had grown in the Monster Clan's territory. This was uncommon.

When Yan Ke and Wen Di were talking, some beasts transporting the materials flew out of the city, soaring into the sky. The beasts glared at them, snorted, then flew away.

"Glacial Armor Giant Alligator!"

Yan Ke's visage changed. She couldn't help but shout, her eyes sharp.

"I'm sure the Monster Clan can't have such exquisite attainment. This silver city isn't something they can build themselves."

Wen Di frowned, his face dark and gloomy. "Might be the Monster Clan has forced some excellent blacksmiths to build this city for them?"

"One or two blacksmiths could never be able to build such massive city. I think there's something we don't know." Yan Ke shook her head. "Just wait, I think the owner will come. I really want to see who dares to join the Monster Clan like that!"

"Should we go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain first? We should tell the seven ancient factions, then see how they deal with this silver city, right?" Wen Di was hesitant.

"It's okay. As long as we don't have any dispute with them, there would be no problem," said Yan Ke.

He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing looked at the silver city, their

faces astounded.

...

In the city center...

Shi Yan felt exhausted. He looked at the magical symbols and formation inlaid deep in the ground, and the Yang family's soldiers putting the special materials in their exact locations in the formation. He relaxed a bit.

Right at this moment, his Sound Stone transferred Yang Tian Emperor's thought. Shi Yan immediately got the news that almost one hundred warriors were gathering outside the city, their identities unknown.

Shi Yan looked distressed with his disheveled hair and dirty face. His clothes had many folds, his face was gloomy, and his eyes were dull. These were the signs of consuming too much Essence Qi and Soul Consciousness.

"I'll be there right now," Shi Yan sent his thought to the Sound Stone. A glorious silver light bloomed from a formation under his feet, covering his entire body. Shi Yan disappeared instantly.

...

A similar formation on the wall in outside area of the city glowed. A silhouette emerged from the rigid stone wall, gradually appearing in front of Yan Ke and Wen Di.

He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing shivered, as light sparkled from their beautiful eyes. It was unbelievable to them. They had to cover their mouths so as to not shout. In the crowd, they gazed at the young man.

Dust covered his face, and his clothes were wrinkled. Shi Yan stood atop the wall. His eyes raked through Yan Ke and Wen Di, then he took out some pellets, swallowing them all. After that, his countenance looked a little bit better.

"Ah!" From a corner of the city wall, Long Zhu sighed, his face odd. "The owner didn't come, but he let a junior talk for him? This isn't how we treat the guests."

Long Ying glared at Shi Yan from a far distance. She wore a strange smile on her face. "Eww, this man looks sloppy. He dares to meet people with that appearance. Well, doesn't he know that he should wash his face? Hmm, he ate some pellets in front of so many people. He has exposed his weak Essence Qi. I think the master of this place isn't a good person. His arrangement isn't good either."

He Qing Man covered her mouth. Her beautiful eyes gazed at the young man on the wall without blinking. Her soft body shivered.

Shi Yan hadn't recognized the two beauties he knew from the crowd in front of his eyes. He took in the pellets, then closed his eyes to adjust his body. Afterward, he said casually. "Where are you from? Where do you want to go?"

Wen Di took one step forward, frowned, then thundered. "Kid, tell your seniors to talk to us. Where's your master?"

His voice pitched as rumbling thunder, reverberating without ceasing.

"Don't mess up with us!" Shi Yan shouted impatiently. His face darkened. "I'm the Master. If you have no business here, you should leave early."

The city construction had come to the critical point. Shi Yan didn't want to waste much time with strangers. He couldn't help but urge them to leave.

This group wasn't similar to Long Zhu and Long Ying. Yang Tian Emperor and Li Feng Er couldn't recognize Long Zhu's real cultivation base, so they had just considered him an old man. And Long Ying at the Peak of Sky Realm, Yang Tian Emperor didn't consider her a threat.

This group of Yan Ke and Wen Di was different. They didn't conceal their aura and competence. The two Second Sky of True God Realm experts were enough to shake the later phase of their construction. Moreover, a dozen of Spirit Realm warriors could also affect the finishing of their city.

If they let them in, once they had the malicious thought, although the silver city could make them pay a bloody price, it would affect the progress of the construction badly.

At first glance, Shi Yan decided not to let them in the city, but he also didn't want to provoke them.

"You are the master?" Wen Di was a hot-tempered person. He shouted, "Kid, don't waste my time! I just want to ask your master. Why does he stay with the alien tribes? You are human. Why don't you go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain? What do you want to do here?"

"What do we want to do?" Shi Yan's face was mocking. "We build the city not to prevent the alien tribes, but to defend against the seven ancient factions!"

At that moment, not only Yan Ke and Wen Di, but Long Zhu and Long Ying in the city were also dumbstruck.

Shi Yan didn't want to talk much with them, waving his hand. "Sorry, we have our errands to run. Forgive us that we can't treat you well. The Ice and Fire Secret Domain isn't far from here. We're not going to accompany you."

Then, he strolled into the city wall. His body was like it was made of water that could merge with any part of the city wall with no restriction.

His figure flashed and disappeared. Numerous symbols and formations glowed on the city walls. The four gates at the four directions of the city started to diffuse a dangerous aura.

Yan Ke and Wen Di became grimaced.

They were all secluding experts. They hadn't interfered with the matters of the Divine Great Land for a long time. However, Lin Meng and Nie Rou always had to treat them with excellent etiquette. They wouldn't be so rude. Shi Yan's behavior had irritated them.

"Did we create a grudge with them?" After Shi Yan got back, Yang Tian Emperor frowned then talked to him. "The others are strong. Your behavior will create more enemies for us."

"How could I not know that?" Shi Yan sighed, "However, we can't let them in. Once they show their hostility, we can't bear the consequence. And, they are racist. Apparently, they don't go the same way as us. We can't persuade them."

Yang Tian Emperor nodded, "Then forget it. But... what if they attack us now? Can we resist it?"

"Not a big deal. Although this 'Utmost Eight Purgatories City' hasn't finished, its power isn't simple. If they want to get it, it would be their bad luck." Shi Yan beamed a faint smile, his face arrogant.

Yang Tian Emperor felt safe. He didn't talk more.



# Chapter 653: Wind and clouds move!

---

Yan Ke and Wen Di kept silent outside the silver city. They didn't dare to act rashly.

In the crowd, He Man Qing and Qu Yan Qing wanted to call Shi Yan, but they restrained their emotions eventually. Looking at the formations where dangerous energy was rippling, they felt like they were in the two different worlds. He was within their reach, yet they couldn't touch him.

"We should go," Yan Ke shook her head eventually. "It's not easy to break this city. Perhaps the seven ancient factions know them. When we get the information, it's not too late to come back."

Wen Di agreed with her decision. He looked at the silver city for a while then turned around, taking his team to leave the place.

He Man Qing and Qu Yan Qing lagged to the end of the team. Sometimes they turned their heads to look at the silver city, their complexion begrudging.

Yang Tian Emperor's group exhaled in relief seeing they leaving.

Yan Ke and Wen Di had profound cultivation base, and their warriors were also elite. If they had to fight with them, even if they won, their construction would be delayed. This wasn't what they wanted to see.

Right after Yan Ke and Wen Di left, Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui came to the silver city from the lake. The two of them had the True God Realm cultivation base now.

Shi Yan was joyful as he got to know that the two women had broken through a new realm. He then started to arrange for Yi Tian Mo and Yu Ruo.

Ye Chang Feng stayed in that lake because only the heaven flames could open the formation sealing the lake. After Yi Tian Mo and Yu Rou got there, he would return to the city, using his Purgatory

True Flame to help Shi Yan refine the city.

Everything got back to its neat order. And, Shi Yan was still busy as ever.

...

The Ice and Fire Secret Domain...

Inside an ice stone building, three Third Sky of Spirit Realm were guarding a secret chamber. Today, Xia Qing Hou came to the chamber. After the three warriors gave him the signal, he was allowed to get in.

Thick spiritual Qi drifted in the air, bobbing like clusters of cloud inside the chamber. Xia Xin Yan was sitting on a massive jade cushion. The dazzling light was twirling around her.

She recognized the visitor while cultivating. She opened her eyes, as beautiful as stars in the sky, and smiled at him. "Great Grandpa, why do you come here?"

Xia Qing Hou watched here and there. He pondered for a while, then said, "Little Yan, Shi Yan's in the Perpetual Night Forest."

Xia Xin Yan's bright eyes twinkled. "Where's he? Has he arrived in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain yet?"

Shaking his head, Xia Qing Hou's eyes were complicated. "He stays in the Perpetual Night Forest. He refused to go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. Yun Hao, the master of the Radiant God Cult, invited him many times, but he rejected his invitation. He wants to befriend the alien tribes."

Xia Xin Yan frowned, "He's always like that. What? Is he in danger?"

"The seven ancient factions want to kill him." Xia Qing Hou struggled in his head for a while. Eventually, he decided to tell the truth. "The seven ancient factions have a big resentment with the alien tribes. Anybody who joins the alien tribes will be treated as a

traitor. At this moment, besides the Radiant God Cult and the Fighting Union, the other five forces are prepared. Soon, they will kill Shi Yan and the Yang family. I... I don't want to conceal things from you. But, I don't want you to get involved either."

Xia Xin Yan suddenly shot up, as anger filled her jade-like face. "Great Grandpa, didn't you send messages to him and ask him to be careful?"

"No, I didn't. I didn't take that risk. For the Xia family, I don't want to reveal any weakness the others could use to threaten us. Once someone finds it, not only the Xia family would be in danger, but your future would also be affected. You will be the leader of the Pure Land in the future, the hope of humankind. I don't want you to get involved in this mess." Xia Qing Hou sighed begrudgingly. "You should give up that relationship. The Yang family is besotted. It's their choice that they want to be with the alien tribes. We can't force them to follow us. At most, we shouldn't join the operation."

"Great Grandpa!" Xia Xin Yan was enraged. "Without Shi Yan, you would have never regained your sanity, and the Xia family would have no chance to visit the Divine Great Land. Even me, it would have been impossible to break through the True God Realm that fast. He didn't regret giving you and me the Life Original Fluid. People should be thankful and repay the favors they have received. How could you behave like that?"

"I have no choice. For the Xia family, for your future, I could do nothing." Xia Qing Hou didn't seem to be regretful, his face resolute. "Little Yan, although Shi Yan isn't ordinary, he has chosen the opposite way. When he made his decision, he should have expected what would happen. However, he still chose that way. A man like him is very dangerous. He wouldn't resist for long in this life."

"I don't dare to agree with your assessment." Xia Xin Yan felt a big shame struck her heart. She looked at her great grandpa with a solemn face. "I have to go out!"

"Not allowed!" The freaky child-like voice of Lin Meng arose from outside. After a while, she got into the secret chamber. She glared at Xia Qing Hou. "You should get out first."

Xia Qing Hou bent to greet her, then left.

"Teacher, why?" Xia Xin Yan talked with a solemn countenance. "Why do you have to target Shi Yan? Because of me?"

"Yes," Lin Meng nodded without any hesitation. "His existence will affect your progress. To women, love is the biggest Mara in their hearts, especially to warriors who are wholeheartedly dedicated to the cultivation. As long as he's still alive, he's always a door leading to death in your heart. He will affect the whole life of yours!"

"Teacher, is it true that you have never been in love with any man?" Xia Qing Hou asked as if she weren't afraid of this woman.

"I have, but I killed him myself. That's why I don't have any knots in my heart," Lin Meng answered faintly.

Xia Xin Yan was frightened.

"I want the best things for you. In the future, you will surpass me and become the true leader of our Human Clan. You have to clean up Shi Yan, your Mara. If you can't, as your teacher, I'm responsible for helping you!" Lin Meng said in a low tone.

"No need!" Xia Qing Hou was persistent. "I don't want you to control everything of mine. I'm not your puppet!"

"Everything I do is for you. No matter you want it or not, as long as it benefits you, I will do anything." Lin Meng snorted, "I allowed your Great Grandpa to tell you everything is to show you that your teacher has never deceived you. Even if you want to hate me, I want to give you a clear reason for your hatred."

Then, Lin Meng's figure faded out until she disappeared completely from the secret chamber.

"Observe her. When you detect something abnormal, report me to immediately." Lin Meng advised the three guards outside the chamber.

"You think it's not good?" One of them asked.

"It's alright. She will feel hurt for a while. But she will get rid of it soon," Lin Meng coldly said.

"She... She will hate you."

"Then let her hate me. If she makes me her target to kill, I will be more joyful. In this special stage, she needs strong treatment! I always force her to cultivate. However, her motivation is not strong enough. If she makes killing me her purpose, she will try her best. That's what I want to see."

...

Outside the Perpetual Night Forest...

Many members of the Ghost Mark Clan were floating in the air. Comoros was holding Yin Written Charm Scripture in his hands with his dark face, using his Soul Consciousness to move it, making it more disorderly.

This group of Ghost Mark Clan was waiting for something.

After a long time, a light dot appeared in the sky from the left of the Ghost Mark Clan. It enlarged into the dead souls' evil lair. Clansmen of the Dark Spirit Clan strolled out from their lair. There was no emotion in their eyes.

A long time after the dead souls' evil lair arrived, they saw a Dark Spirit Clan member walked out of the cave.

Iverson, who had joined hands with Comoros, and the other three members of the Dark Spirit Clan bent their bodies with great respect when they saw that man.

That clansman of the Dark Spirit Clan had empty eyes. Thick dead aura diffused from him, as if he had just come from the space

of death. As soon as he arrived, everybody seemed to cease to be.

"Master, the Ghost Mark Clan got here before us." Ivison stooped and said in a low tone.

The member of the Dark Spirit Clan, who appeared the last, just nodded, but he didn't say anything. All clansmen of the Dark Spirit Clan stood silently, as if they were the wooden rooters. No one dared to utter a word.

After a while, a five-colored banner appeared on the horizon. That banner was moving rapidly, carrying many members of the Dark Clan standing upright on the banner.

The three Yama Kings Abi, Hades, and Hei Tian, who used to stir up the entire Endless Sea, stood in a triangle. A dark blue light appeared in their midst with many shades of light, such that people couldn't see the thing inside clearly. Vaguely, they could see something moving in there.

The three Yama Kings seemed to consider the thing in that dim blue halo their master. When they had just arrived, they immediately reported to that blue halo. They sometimes pointed to the place where the Dark Spirit Clan and the Ghost Mark Clan were gathering.

Crack Crack Crack!

Sometimes, they could hear the cracking sounds of bones rubbing against each other underground. Not long after that, the ground under their feet cracked into a big, deep abyss.

Right after that, many coffins emerged from the ground. Members of the Corpse Clan got out directly from earth one by one. Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were protecting a massive coffin standing in the middle of the Corpse Clan's crowd, which looked very special.

"Corpse Chief, you're late." The member of the Dark Spirit Clan, who appeared the last, said in a feeble tone. His voice was

mournful and sad like a resentful spirit crying in people's ears.

"I'm not the one who comes the last. Someone is even later than me." A sharp voice that sounded like sword slashing on a stone echoed from the coffin that Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were protecting. It was quite unpleasant to the ears.

At the same time, giant beasts appeared from the North and the East. Experts of the Demon Clan were riding those beasts.

They were the two different forces of the Demon Clan. One of them was the Ancient Bao family that Shi Yan had met before. Bao Ao was their leader.

The other force was also strong, no less than Bao Ao's. It was the Ancient Jie family of the Demon Clan, led by Jie Jie. This man had a lozenge mark on his forehead. Strange energy rippled from it, which could shake souls.

Bao Ao and Jie Jie came from the strongest ancient families of the Demon Clan. They had come from Demon Clan's spaces outside the Grace Mainland. At the same time, the two leaders were also rivals. They had always battled to unite the Demon Clan.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji took several thousand elite warriors of the clan, riding on demonic beasts. Their force was so strong that they could press the other alien tribes. They had arrived the last, as if they were so certain about their leading role.

Dark Clan, Corpse Clan, Dark Spirit Clan, and Ghost Mark Clan were the five great alien tribes on the Divine Great Land at this moment. They all showed up outside the Perpetual Night Forest as per the appointment made beforehand.

# Chapter 654: Master Acceptance Ceremony

---

The real name of the silver city was the 'Utmost Eight Purgatories City.' It was divided into eight directions, including the four directions East-South-West-North, the sky, the ground, the life gate, and the death gate. The city had two parts, the outer part and the center part, supported by countless barriers, restrictions, and formations.

To build this city, Shi Yan had used almost all of his efforts, using the precious materials that the Monster Clan in the Perpetual Night Forest had treasured for thousands of years. With the contribution of the Monster Clan, the Yang family, and the alien tribes, they had completed the city.

Today, Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Cao Qiu Dao, Bing Qing Tong, and Han Cui were gathering near Shi Yan.

A massive piece of silver crystal stood in the center of the city. It had many carvings of symbols, written charms, and scriptures. A radiant light was moving around this crystal, giving people a beautiful view that could touch their hearts.

This silver crystal was as big as a basketball court. It was solid, and no leaks or cracks could be found. Portrayed lines of energy intertwined complicatedly that was hard to describe.

"You must use the divine weapon to be the formation eye?" Yang Tian Emperor's face was heavy. He balled his hands into fists, showing that he was tense.

Just like him, the other people were holding their breath, waiting solemnly. They were waiting to see the moment when the Utmost Eight Purgatories City was complete.

"It must be a divine weapon! And, only divine weapons can make the Utmost Eight Purgatories City move, and resist the counterforce of this great formation." Shi Yan was breathing



regularly as if he were really calm. But only him knew how nervous he was at this moment.

"Divine weapons... In the Divine Great Land, only the leaders of the seven ancient factions could have. Shi Yan... Do you actually have one?" Li Zheng Rong's voice was uncertain. His eyes sparkled as he wasn't so sure.

If they didn't have a divine weapon to become the formation eye, the effort they had spent during this period was wasted. The Utmost Eight Purgatories City couldn't perform its power, which meant they couldn't withstand the seven ancient factions' attack.

Shi Yan still looked disheveled and dusty like before. He even had some tears on his clothes. At this moment, he looked like a beggar. Nothing in him made him look like the real owner of this silver city, the master behind the scene who had reached everywhere to gather the sources and build this city.

"Divine weapon... I do have one." At this critical moment, even Shi Yan had become hesitant. He wasn't so sure.

Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong didn't talk more. They kept silent, looking at him, waiting for his next move.

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan summoned the Sky Destroyer divine sword and stroked the Blood Vein Ring gingerly. He believed that both the Sky Destroyer and the Blood Vein Ring were Divine Grade treasures. However, he couldn't decide which treasure to use to be the formation eye and control the Utmost Eight Purgatories City.

The Sky Destroyer divine sword was powerful. With this sword, he could use the enormous energy during fighting, which would benefit him a lot.

And the Blood Vein Ring... It had the whole world inside. The War Devil, the Earth Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, the Vanishing Corpse Flame stayed inside the ring. Once he used the Blood Vein

Ring to be the formation eye, his life in the future would be full of struggles.

Everybody kept silent. Even the hotshots like Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong didn't have divine weapons to use.

Although the Grace Mainland was vast, divine treasures were still the scarcest items. They weren't something ordinary people could keep. They wanted to contribute, but they didn't have such things to give.

Shi Yan slammed his brows together. He hesitated for a while, and eventually, he decided to use the Sky Destroyer divine sword to be the formation eye.

Once this thought popped up in his mind, he stopped hesitating, using the Soul Consciousness to drive the divine sword and his will spirit to guide the sword stabbing in that massive crystal.

The divine sword sparkled, then disappeared, leaving a concave spot on the crystal.

After fifteen minutes, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness had turned into one with the entire silver city. The city now was like a part of his body. He could see everything inside the city. He could control any magical formations or activate any barriers with his mind.

Silver waves rippled from the enormous crystal. Light dots showered, shooting in different directions, entering the center of each formation and barrier.

The Great Universe Soul Gathering formation under their feet started to move and transferred the energy from the top-grade Essence Crystal underground. Just like burning energy, waves of energy surged torrentially from the ground under their feet, flooding the entire city.

The door that faced the sky acted as if it were a massive tornado, wildly drawing energy from heaven and earth in the Perpetual Night Forest, turning them into five-colored light that naked eyes

could see. The gate pulled them all and distributed them to different corners of the city.

It caused a significant change in heaven and earth's energy. All creatures in the Perpetual Night Forest at a certain level could sense this earth-shaking change.

Essence Qi and Soul Consciousness remained in Shi Yan were drawn rapidly, as the Sky Destroyer divine sword was taking them from him.

In front of everybody, he cried in pain, then crouched on the ground just like a massive mountain was pressing on him. His face paled, as sweat soaked his body. He looked miserable.

"Shi Yan!"

"Little Yan!"

"Master!"

Li Zheng Rong, Yang Tian Emperor, and Di Shan couldn't hold their screams. They wanted to step forward and help him.

Shi Yan crouched on the ground, wiggling and waving his hands. He shook his head, his face distorted as he was panting like a wild animal. "Don't come near! No one can help me!"

As he was the owner of the Sky Destroyer divine sword, the sword only took his energy. No one could help him. If he couldn't resist this challenge, he would vanish, turning into ashes together with the silver city and the Sky Destroyer.

Everybody was begrudging. Yang Tian Emperor had his eyes reddened, and his muscular body shuddered.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui bit their red lips, tears lingering in their eyes.

Crack Crack Crack!

Sounds of breaking bones echoed from Shi Yan's body. Shortly, his skin cracked, and blood splashed everywhere. In just a short

moment, his handsome face was covered with blood and shattered flesh.

He hadn't told anybody that if the owner of the divine weapon used to subdue this Utmost Eight Purgatories City didn't have enough power to resist, the moment the city accepted its new master, he would endure a terrifying pain.

If his power was insufficient, of course, he had to endure tremendous torture. Perhaps his body would be crushed, and his soul would be drained. At that time, he would explode to death right in the middle of the process.

He didn't tell them anything. However, now everybody knew how strenuous and painful it was.

Puff Puff!

Shi Yan's blood streamed down from his body, flowing into some special puddles and ponds under his feet, seeping into the silver crystal. There were pieces of flesh flowing together with his blood.

Shi Yan's body was muscular and robust. However, at this moment, he was bony like a skeleton that had no blood or meat. This view was so pathetic people didn't dare to watch any longer.

Yang Tian Emperor understood this pain. When using the Immortal Rebirth Secret to quench the body, even a madman couldn't endure the pain that was beyond the human body.

The pain Shi Yan was enduring included a soul level pain, which was several times more severe.

Yang Tian Emperor wasn't afraid that Shi Yan couldn't endure this pain. However, he was afraid that Shi Yan had risked his life to withstand it. Under his tough willpower, his soul would fall first.

While he didn't notice, Yang Tian Emperor's fingers had dug into his palms, with blood dripping. His eyes were bloodshot, and his face was grim, as he was trying to control himself.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui didn't dare to see it anymore. Tears rolled down their faces. They turned away; their shoulders shuddered while trying to control their crying.

At this moment, Cao Qiu Dao, Ling Ming, Li Zheng Rong, and Di Shan bent their bodies, their eyes full of pain and sadness.

"After this, I, Cao Qiu Dao, make a vow that I will follow Shi Yan for my whole life." Staying silent for a while, Cao Qiu Dao bent his body, speaking in a low tone, his face respectful.

Fan Xiang Yun and the other warriors standing behind him all heard his vow. They didn't say anything but kneeled down, bowing to Shi Yan as they were shouting their vows in their hearts.

Shi Yan had used all of his power to protect each of them. Everybody witnessing this event understood how meaningful it was. They all had great respect toward Shi Yan.

On the city wall in the outer region, Long Zhu and Long Ying were watching. Of course, they couldn't see the fierce Master Acceptance Ceremony in the center of the city. However, they could feel the tremendous change of the entire city. Thick energy flooded the area, as all barriers and formations had been activated. Torrential energy surged unceasingly.

"This is the oldest Master Acceptance Ceremony. If that kid is the real owner of this silver city... I'm afraid he is experiencing the most painful and terrible moment. He could vanish in any second." Long Zhu wore a complicated complexion, but his eyes showed his respect towards the young man. "He's too young to reach this stage. However, he nailed it. Such a brilliant genius."

"Is the Master Acceptance Ceremony that painful?" Long Ying was astounded.

"If his realm is high enough, it isn't so painful. However, he has only at the Peak of Spirit Realm! Usually, the more powerful the

formation is, the bigger the dangers and pain that the owner will receive during the oldest formation Master Acceptance Ceremony will be." Long Zhu explained. "I can see that this silver city can attack even the Third Sky of True God Realm warriors. This means... When the city conducts its Master Acceptance Ceremony, the counterforce the formation releases can be compared to the power of True God Realm warriors."

Long Ying discolored, shouting, "Does he want to die?"

Long Zhu contemplated for a while and then shook his head. "Who knows. Anyway, if he tries to get over it, his willpower and toughness will reach an unimaginable level. No Mara could harm him. This will facilitate his cultivation towards the King God Realm, as he could endure things normal people can't. When he enters the King God Realm, he won't be afraid of anything. He can keep his heart safe from fears or worries. He will be complete."

"Is he that excellent?" Long Ying was startled. "Grandpa, I have never seen you acknowledge anybody that much. Is he worth it?"

"His Realm isn't as high as Lin Meng's group, but his will, his mentality, and his brutal thought of having no fear of death has surpassed Lin Meng." Long Zhu kept complimenting. "I won't highly evaluate Lin Meng until she reaches the King God Realm. But, if this kid can get over today's challenge, and no one kills him, in this Grace Mainland, he will become the one amongst the Human Clan that has the highest possibility to reach the King God Realm."

"How about Xia Xin Yan of the Pure Land?" Long Ying's soft body shivered, her face disbelieving.

"That little girl... has a fortune that no one could compare with. However, the King God Realm doesn't require only a good fortune." Long Zhu shook his head. "This young man, as far as I am concerned, has a bigger chance to succeed than that little girl. If I have to predict who will succeed, I will bet on him. His heart is

incomparably strong."

"Grandpa, if he survives this calamity, when the seven ancient factions come to kill him, what would you do?" Long Ying thought for a while and then asked seriously.

"If he is still alive, I'll choose him," said Long Zhu resolutely.

Long Ying's soft body trembled. She covered her mouth, her face disbelieving.

# Chapter 655: No way back!

---

Shi Yan was hurt severely, as if he were skinned alive. Blood covered his body, and people could see even his bones. With his strangely vigorous body, a warrior at the same level couldn't cause him such damage even if he had used all of his power. However, this Master Acceptance Ceremony was different. This kind of backlash was so dangerous that it could be compared to full-power attacks of a True God Realm expert!

At this moment, the Essence Qi of his body, the negative power, and the soul power of his Soul Consciousness were all supplied to the Sky Destroyer divine sword, which troubled him, preventing him from countering the change of his body.

His power was decreasing, while the consumption demand was increasing. Such severe wounds and wisdom were inevitable.

Shi Jian, Li Zheng Rong, Di Shan, and the others surrounded him, a bloody body, to protect him.

Bing Qing and Han Cui were sobbing. Tears filled their faces like a shower.

Yang Tian Emperor came over to support Shi Yan. His body was still convulsing, as if his tendons and vessels were all broken.

If it were an ordinary people, even if his soul were immortal, vitality would be taken from him, leaving him with a shriveled body. Only someone with a highly tenacious body and the Immortal Martial Spirit like Shi Yan could survive.

People surrounding him all wore different facial expressions. Shi Yan was now a bloody body. Vitality in his body was just a flickering light in the moor. Tendons and vessels in his body started to move like snakes.

Gradually, his flesh started to grow back under some strange power. It grew little by little on the proportional skeleton, as his



body was formed again.

"Ah!" Li Zheng Rong discolored, screaming, pointing at an exposed bone of Shi Yan. "Gold skeleton!"

His cry had wakened up many people who were sinking in pain. They all scrutinized, and then found that Shi Yan's bones were like they were molded from liquid gold. Golden light shimmered strangely from them.

Di Shan and Cao Qiu Dao couldn't help but look at Yang Tian Emperor. "Yang-ge, can the Immortal Martial Spirit of the Yang family turn bones golden like that? I have never seen anything so strange!" asked Cao Qiu Dao.

Yang Tian Emperor shook his head suspiciously. "This isn't a feature of the Immortal Martial Spirit, but I'm not sure what it is... The only thing we can confirm is that these bones are too hard."

"Golden Skeleton... Golden Skeleton..." Strange glorious light sparkled in Li Zheng Rong's eyes as he sank into his thought. After a while, he was struck, shouting, "The Giant Clan! The Golden Giant! No, it doesn't seem right! He doesn't look like a giant, right?"

Everybody was frightened, and couldn't help but glare at him.

"As I know, when members of the Giant Clan reach the King God Realm, their skeletons would turn golden. We call them the Golden Giant." Li Zheng Rong explained, "Golden Skeleton is the special feature of the experts from the Giant Clan. Besides them, I don't actually know any other clans with a golden skeleton."

"So, you think he is like the Giant Clan?" Yang Tian Emperor didn't know whether he should cry or laugh, and just shook his head.

"Hm, he doesn't seem like one," Li Zheng Rong beamed a wry smile. "However, it should be related to the Giant Clan. I can feel a strange energy fluctuation in his bones. Only the Golden Giants

have this kind of power."

"Don't guess," Shi Yan spoke up with a hoarse voice. "When I was on the Cold Wind Island, I had visited a space crack. A Golden Giant was buried there. I got his Golden Marrow. After I refined my body, my bones turned golden."

Everybody was frightened.

"It's really good fortune that you can add the Golden Marrow to your body. You, you inhuman!" Li Zheng Rong forced a smile.

While they were talking, the Utmost Eight Purgatories City had restored its quietness. The entire silver city seemed to be quenched one more time. Each corner of the city now had the intimidating aura of a tremendous power.

The Immortal Blood in Shi Yan's body divided into five drops, suffusing a massive blood aura as he was using the Immortal Rebirth Secret to grow his shabby body once again.

All of a sudden, the triangle mark Bao Ao had left on his neck became so hot like burning fire, releasing an imposing energy.

He couldn't help but cry. Shi Yan frowned, using his Soul Consciousness to sense.

"Kid, how are you doing?" Bao Ao's voice came from the triangle mark. After a while, a scarlet halo expanded from the mark, creating a vague image.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened, looking the images being projected from his neck. His complexion became solemn.

It was the image of the allied army of the five clans, including the Demon Clan, the Dark Clan, the Corpse Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, and the Ghost Mark Clan. These five clans had gathered outside the Perpetual Night Forest with dozens of thousands of warriors. A heavy pressure like a massive mountain slapped Shi Yan's face from the image. It had almost suffocated him.

Shi Yan watched the scene, and a helpless feeling swelled in his heart. He had thought of getting away from this place. His fighting will seemed to have vanished.

"They are the members of the five clans. Soon, we will enter the Perpetual Night Forest and visit that Ice and Fire Secret Domain. Hey boy, I heard that you couldn't stay with the Human Clan. So? Are you interested in joining our Ancient Bao family and becoming one of us?" Bao Ao smiled tenderly like a nice student. There was no evil energy surging from his body. At first glance, he appeared as a harmless man.

Shi Yan soothed his pounding heart, pulled himself together, and shook his head to deny the offer. "Sorry, I have stuff I need to do. I don't want to depend on anybody."

Bao Ao didn't get angry. He just nodded, "Okay, no need to hurry. I'll give you more time to consider. Yeah, you can see how strong the five clans here are."

The images changed continually according to Bao Ao's words. The leader of the Dark Spirit Clan, Comoros of the Ghost Mark Clan, Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea of the Corpse Clan, the three Yama Kings of the Dark Clan, and the dim halo they were protecting, all were visible.

As the images changed, Shi Yan felt his heart sink to the bottom, his face grim.

"You can continue to consider. The moment before you die, you still have the offer," Bao Ao chuckled, then cut the connection.

The triangular mark on his neck disappeared, and so did the images.

Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, Li Zheng Rong, and Di Shan were looking at him with strange expressions.

"Did you guys see that?" Shi Yan took a deep breath, asking with a solemn face.

"What?" asked Yang Tian Emperor.

"You guys didn't see it?" Shi Yan felt weird.

"We just saw a light shot out your neck, projecting some dim image in the sky. Then, we saw you mumble. Nothing else," Li Zheng Rong said.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan nodded.

Shi Yan changed his visage. "The five great alien tribes have started their massive scale invasion! Perhaps, they will come to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain shortly. And, they may pass by our base here."

Everybody discolored in fright.

"I saw the three Yama Kings, and so many warriors that could compare to human True God Realm warriors. It's impossible to resist this force." Shi Yan thought quickly to assess the situation. "I'll activate the Teleportation Formation to the Cold Wind Island in the Endless Sea right now. Warriors under Nirvana Realm can go there directly."

He had thought of returning to the Endless Sea. With the Teleportation Formation, it wasn't a difficult task.

However, he also knew that Hades, Abi, Hei Tian and the other experts of the Demon Clan wouldn't spare the Teleportation Formations in the Endless Sea. So, he didn't do that.

Besides the three Yama Kings, hotshots of the Ancient Jie family had also come to the Perpetual Night Forest. This meant the Endless Sea should be safe temporarily. That's why he decided to return.

However, when he stood in the Teleport Formation, after his Soul Consciousness connected, Shi Yan discolored in fear.

Everybody was bewildered, but they all had a bad premonition.

"They are destroyed," Shi Yan's eyes were dim and distressed.

"The two places that we can reach in the Endless Sea are destroyed. The space nodes are demolished."

"How about the Northern Gem Mountain?" Cao Qiu Dao asked hurriedly.

"The same."

Everybody else panicked.

"What should we do now?"

"Defend to the last moment! Besides that thing, we have no other option."

...

The entrance of the Ice and Fire Secret Domain.

Yan Ke and Wen Di's group of one hundred human warriors had reached their destination.

Yan Ke coughed. As she was about to notify the guards, she suddenly got something, waving her hands. "Scatter, quick!"

Right after that, warriors of the seven ancient factions stormed out of the entrance of the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, which was in a tree trunk.

The leaders of this group were the masters of the seven ancient factions, Lin Meng, Nie Ruo, Qin Gu Chuan, and Yun Hao. Dozens of True God Realm and Spirit Realm appeared abruptly, that scared Yan Ke and Wen Di's team.

"Old Yan! Master Wen!" Lin Meng was surprised, looking at the two seniors at the entrance. "Why are you two here?"

"The alien tribes want to eradicate Human Clan. They are gathering at the Perpetual Night Forest. As the members of the Human Clan, of course, we are here to contribute our part," Yan Ke said with serious countenance.

"You two had crossed thousands of miles to here. We all

appreciate your high notion of your duty. It's the good news for Human Clan." Lin Meng was grateful. "Compared to you, some rotten b\*stards have made people hate them to the bones. I regret I couldn't smash them into ashes immediately!"

"Rotten?" Wen Di was astounded. Then, he said solemnly, "Are they the ones that have joined the alien tribes?"

"Yes!" Qin Gu Chuan shouted indignantly. "Master Wen has met them?"

Wen Di nodded, his face grim. "On the way there, we found that they have built a city. Befriending with Monster Clan, such rotten traitors!"

"Where are you going?" asked Yan Ke.

"We're going to kill those traitors. We want to keep them from joining the alien tribes," Lin Meng shouted.

"Is it okay, as we know that the five alien tribes are gathering in the Perpetual Night Forest?" Yun Hao frowned.

"Then we should be hurried!" Qin Gu Chuan snorted, then smiled at the other two. "Old Yan, Master Wen, what do you think?"

"We have no objection," Yan Ke said faintly.

"That's good," Lin Meng's eyes brightened. She thought that even God wanted to help them, as Yan Ke and Wen Di were here.

## Chapter 656: Qi Tian Odie

---

From the city wall of the outer city, Long Zhu and Long Ying looked at the immense sky above the center of the city. They were watching lightning strikes forked in the sky like a bunch of worms, with serious facial expressions.

"Surprisingly, that kid has overcome it." Surprise filled Long Ying's small and cute face. "Grandpa, you said that if he could get over it, you would help him. Are you sure? How about the seven ancient factions?"

"We just try to solve the mess. If we can't do that, I think this kid has more abilities to preserve the flickering light of Human Clan," Long Zhu pondered, then said, "I think it's time to talk with the master of this place."

"Grandpa, the seven ancient factions force is superb. Lin Meng's group isn't made of nice people. They won't listen to others' advise. If you want to go with them, of course, Lin Meng will never agree." Long Ying's beautiful eyes sparkled as she was worried.

"Today, Human Clan is about to meet the most dangerous catastrophe. One wrong move can lead to the end of Human Clan. If Lin Meng's group doesn't want to wake up and want to carry out this war, I can only stay on the opposite side to them." Long Zhu sighed, not knowing how to express his idea. "I hope they would consider the whole picture. I think this city isn't simple. Even if the seven ancient factions attack it, they can't break this wall."

"Is this city as dangerous as you said?" Long Ying was scared.

"I have some knowledge of the ancient formations, but I can't understand the structure and operating mechanism of this city. The energy inside is really earth-shaking. I don't know how that kid could create this city. The only I can confirm is that if the True God Realm experts attack here, they will be hurt badly!" Long Zhu said in a low tone.

Long Ying kept quiet.

"The outer areas have the weakening and aging fields which oppress the spirit and deprive people's power. Even my realm is restrained. When Lin Meng's group gets here, I'm sure their realms will be decreased by one or more minor realms. Facing so many barriers and formations here, coming to the center of this city isn't easier than fighting with alien tribes." Long Zhu's face was heavy. "Perhaps this city will be the main fort of Human Clan in the future."

"But... they have befriended alien tribes?" Long Ying was suspicious.

"In the future... humans will never be the sole ruler of the Grace Mainland anymore. Multiracial development is the new trend. I'm not sure this kid could see this trend or just grasped up to this step. However, I acknowledge his wise move of putting aside racism and creating a good relationship with other races. This is the only way to survive. If we keep the prejudice of the past, Human Clan will go extinct!"

"So, the seven ancient factions force is going on a wrong way?"

"At least it's outdated. Different times require different changes of understanding. Dare to dream, dare to do! Or else, the other clans would expel you. I'm going to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain this time to persuade Lin Meng's group to give up the prejudice of the past and consider how to live in peace with the other races. But I know... this is really difficult. Lin Meng's group has conservative thoughts. I'm afraid it's hard to convince them. At this moment, if we have a pioneer better than them, naturally, I have to help him."

While Long Zhu was talking, his face stiffened as the energy surged from his body like a tornado, plunging directly into the center of the city.

Inside the city, many barriers and formations were triggered at once. Beautiful light shot out. Twisted evil fields appeared that



could weaken the power and age people's vitality. This made the city become a dazzling spot. Many areas were sparkling with blinding light.

Long Zhu looked like an ordinary old man, but when he released his aura, it could activate all the barriers of the city.

In the center of the city...

Shi Yan had recovered his body, but his Essence Qi and Soul Consciousness were still weak. Suddenly, he sensed something abnormal. His face changed, as he shot up from his seat.

Yang Tian Emperor, Li Zheng Rong, and Di Shan were frightened. They couldn't help but shout. "So strong!"

"Who is that?" Bing Qing Tong paled. Her voice trembled. "Such surging energy, even Lin Meng can't control this. Since when we have such an intimidating existence in our city?"

Shi Yan's face darkened. He squinted then used his soul to connect the Utmost Eight Purgatories City to detect the cause that stirred up his entire formation. "The old man in the outer city!"

Everybody discolored.

"Hey little buddy, can we talk a little bit?" A clear, generous voice echoed through the city, just like thunder reverberating everywhere.

"Not good!" Yang Tian Emperor pressed down the anger. "It's him! When that old man got in here, I had sensed him, but I couldn't find any strange features. I didn't expect that he could conceal that much!"

Yang Tian Emperor couldn't see his realm, which meant his realm was much higher than his, at least more than Second Sky of True God Realm. At this moment, the Utmost Eight Purgatories City could only resist the First Sky of True God Realm.

The mighty power of the old man had frightened everybody, as

they felt an incoming danger.

"At this moment, he doesn't have malicious intent," Shi Yan pondered and then said, "I'm going to meet him to see what he wants."

"Don't!"

Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong tried to stop him.

However, while Shi Yan was talking, a formation glittered under his feet. Immense light covered his entire body, and Shi Yan disappeared instantly.

Shortly, a halo expanded in the outer city where Long Zhu and Long Ying were standing. Shi Yan emerged in the light.

Long Zhu smiled, then nodded to Shi Yan. "It's you. I didn't think that you're the real master of this place. What's your name?"

"Shi Yan."

"Shi Yan... I have heard this name. Haha... You've been to the Dead Soul Mountain Range, and you've defeated Lie Feng. It's you. It's a surprise to me."

"And you are?"

Shi Yan's face was incomparably serious. He had prepared discreetly, and in case this old man had malicious thoughts, he would urge the barriers around him to kill him at any cost.

It was lucky that the Utmost Eight Purgatories City had been activated. Otherwise, he didn't dare to come close to this senior.

The aura of this old man made him irritatingly anxious. This feeling had appeared when he was facing Xuan Ming. Even his confidence was struck to somewhere far away. He didn't even have the intention to struggle.

Xuan Ming was the real owner of the Perpetual Night Forest, the greatest senior at the Peak of Level 9, of the Monster Clan. He had one foot entering the Level 10. It could be said that he was the

strongest existence Shi Yan knew.

He didn't expect that the old man Yang Tian Emperor had let into the city had reached such realm with formidable power.

"I am Long Zhu. I didn't deceive you guys," the old man smiled. "However, not many people know my real name in the Divine Great Land. They call me by the other name. Perhaps, you've heard about me before."

"I wish to know," Shi Yan talked with a serious countenance.

"Qi Tian Oldie," Long Zhu smiled.

Shi Yan was struck. Light shot out from his eyes, his face astounded.

'It's him!'

He was the most mysterious recluse in the Divine Great Land. It'd been several hundred years, and nobody had ever seen him operating in this continent. His position was higher than Lin Meng, Yun Hao, and Qin Gu Chuan. His age could be compared to the Monster Clan. The legend about him was always told in the Divine Great Land. Even the leaders of the seven ancient factions had to show respect mentioning him.

"Haha, seems you've heard my name," Long Zhu smiled, but his face was nonchalant. "I don't have bad intentions towards you guys. Quite the contrary, I have a presumptuous request. I wonder if you are interested in it or not?"

"Precursor, please do tell. If I can do it, I won't deny," Shi Yan said cautiously.

"Uh, your city doesn't look bad. I want to be part of it." Long Zhu stroked the dragon cane in his hand, smiling strangely. "The alien tribes are about to invade us, and I have no place to go. I want to find a shelter, and this city looks good to me."

Shi Yan was surprised, looking at him deep into the eyes. He kept

silent for a while and then asked, "The Ice and Fire Secret Domain is supposed to be safer. Why you don't want to go there?"

"If I didn't visit this place of yours, I'm afraid I would go to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. But now, I want to stay here more. The Ice and Fire Secret Domain's the narrow space outside the Grace Mainland. It's not my homeland. I feel staying here is better." Long Zhu smiled and explained. "That's why I told you my identity. I don't want you to misunderstand me, thinking that I have some wild plans or something. Haha, I wonder if you will grant me my wish or not?"

Shi Yan frowned as thoughts seethed in his heart. Long afterward, he cracked a smile. "Precursor, you are in the city already."

"Yeah, I'm in the city, but you guys haven't trusted me yet. I'm just afraid that you will be distracted by me at the critical moments." Long Zhu continued neither fast nor slow. "Of course, I understand your worries. At this moment, I'm not going to the city center. After this wave's over, if the city isn't broken yet, I think you will understand me more."

"Why do you need to be that cautious? My grandpa thinks that you guys aren't bad. That's why he wants to help you. You do think that we're going to harm you, don't you?" Long Ying snorted indignantly.

"No, I think he doesn't bear bad intentions," Shi Yan could finally relax. He knew that a little girl like Long Ying could never have a cunning heart. From her attitude, he could confirm that Long Zhu didn't have malicious thoughts towards them. Finally, he could relax his tense nerves.

"I just want to make it clear about my identity. So later on, when you figure it out completely, you won't think that I have bad intentions towards you guys. Besides, I will prove my attitude." Long Zhu waved his hand indifferently. "Little buddy, I know

you're busy. I won't trouble you for more. The seven ancient factions will arrive around six hours later, I assume. You should be prepared."

"What would you do when the seven ancient factions attack this place?" Shi Yan was startled. Then, he asked with a sharp look.

"I will help you defend the city. However, I won't kill people of the seven ancient factions," said Long Zhu.

"What if I kill people of the seven ancient factions?"

"Perhaps I might not see it."

"Thank you."

Shi Yan made a deep bow to him and thanked gratefully. Then, he turned around, his figure flashing before he disappeared completely.

Although he didn't know why this most mysterious recluse of the Divine Great Land wanted to help him, he finally could put this worry aside, exhaling in relief.

"This guy is a careful person," Long Ying pouted. "I thought he would take us to the center of the city."

"Quite the contrary. If he did that, I wouldn't appreciate him more," Long Zhu smiled. "His relatives and friends stay in the city center. If he carelessly let us in and if I did have evil plans, it would create a bloody disaster. He has to worry about it. Yeah, his deed shows that he's a careful and meticulous person even though he's still young. It's a good virtue, especially at this moment. He needs to be careful taking each step. It would help them survive longer."

# Chapter 657: Inextricable!

---

Lin Meng, Yan Ke, Wen Di, and more than eight hundred warriors of the seven ancient factions had arrived in front of the silver city. This time, seven ancient factions had sent almost all of their hotshots. This force was stronger than any clan.

The moment they saw the city in the forest, they were all startled. Although they had prepared, this shining city appeared gloriously under the light of the sun, moon, and stars, which made them stunned for a while.

"That kid still has many tricks. He has tried to build a whole city!" Nie Rou couldn't help but compliment.

"Beasts have helped him. When we passed by this place, we saw the Monster Clan leaving the city." Wen Di snorted. "They don't even understand the difference between races. Such ignorant brats. They stay with Monster Clan. They should apologize to our fellows who died by the alien tribes."

Lin Meng and Qin Gu Chuan nodded.

"Should we notify them first?" Yu Wan Jiang frowned. "It's not reasonable if we start the battle right away. It's too brutal."

"Hegemon Yu, we don't need your Fighting Union to join this operation. You don't need to care about it," sneered Qin Gu Chuan.

Yu Wang Jiang's face was cold. Anger flashed in his eyes as he snorted.

Behind Yu Wang Jiang were Bei Si and Bei Di of the Banner family, Bai Ge Sen of the Aoke family, Lao Li and Cai Yi, and Leng Dan Qing, Shuang Yu Zhu of the Ice Emperor City. All of them had complicated looks on their faces.

Bei Di and Bei Si sighed, shaking their heads, as they didn't know what to do to save the situation.

Lao Li wanted to say something, but he got his mouth shut because Bei Si had thrown him a glare. As people here were all strong warriors of the seven ancient factions, their realms and cultivation base weren't enough for them to voice up.

Cai Yi's face was as if she had clusters of dark clouds on it. Her mind was a mess of tangled threads. She wanted to say something to Shi Yan, but she knew it was useless at this moment.

"This is the path they have chosen. They can't blame the others. The pagans have slaughtered around the Divine Great Land. They know it already. They know their purpose is to eradicate Human Clan, but they still did that. They are getting themselves on the dead road," Bai Ge Sen said indignantly, his face dark and gloomy.

Cai Yi knew her position. She understood that she had no means to help Shi Yan; she could only let sadness nibble her.

In this crowd, Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Yu Zhu felt the most anxious. They had received the news from Lie Feng. Apparently, Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui were in this city. It was just a wall, but they were a whole world apart. They wanted to get in there, but they didn't dare. This feeling hurt them a lot.

Standing behind Yun Hao, Tang Yuan Nan, Ji Mu, and Yue Ying were discussing something in a low tone.

Zhu Yi, the city master of the Wonderful Stone City of Spirit Treasure Sect, had come. His face was complicated. He was hesitant, as he was struggling to make up his mind.

Xia Qing Hou, the Head Master of the Xia family, stood next to Lin Meng. His face was cold, while his eyes sparkled with light. However, he didn't say anything.

Among the seven ancient factions, many people had a good relationship with Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor. Some didn't agree with Shi Yan's group, and the others wanted to settle the dispute, but they were helpless. They could only watch the change

in silence.

Standing behind Yan Ke, He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing had a dark countenance. They exchanged looks, since they didn't dare to talk about Shi Yan. They were afraid that people could take it as their weakness.

Inside the silver city, Shi Yan stood on the formation eye. He looked tired. "People who should come have come. We shall go."

Yang Tian Emperor nodded with a serious face. They all knew that this fight would determine their death or life. Once they started it, they would have to do their best.

"Little Yan, can your body endure this?" Yang Tian Emperor was worried. "Once they attack us, you have to operate this city. With your current situation, do you think you can do it?"

To make this Utmost Eight Purgatories City accept its master, Shi Yan had consumed a lot of his Essence Qi and Soul Consciousness. Although he had pellets to help him recover, he couldn't fully restore himself shortly.

At this moment, the Essence Qi in his body wasn't half his peak strength. And, his Soul Consciousness remained not more than one-third.

Once they engaged in the battle, he had to focus on using his Soul Consciousness to control the entire city, and he had to spend a large amount of Essence Qi to stimulate the formations and barriers. If his energy weren't enough, the power of the city would be reduced.

If he put forth everything to resist, he would drain his Essence Qi. His body would shatter, and his soul power would be consumed completely.

If it accelerated to that point, he would die before the city got broken.

"No problem," Shi Yan cracked an odd smile. "Once the war



happens, people will die. It's easy for me."

If he hadn't had the mysterious martial spirit, he would never have had this confidence or mentioned that he could resist to the end.

The existence of his mysterious martial spirit could help him solve the biggest problem easily!

When people died, he could always take in their Essence Qi. Once he could resist the first stage, waiting until the mysterious martial spirit filtered the energy and send it to his Essence Qi halo, everything would be solved easily.

For his consumed Soul Consciousness, he could use the Soul Gathering Pearl to supply the purest soul power.

"That Qi Tian Oldie... Do we need to keep an eye on him?" Di Shan asked. He contemplated for a while and then said, "Li-ge and I can stop him for a while. Do we need to prevent him?"

"No need," Shi Yan shook his head. "Don't know why, but I feel that this oldie will be on our side. Haha. I have no evidence, but I believe in my assumption."

Until this moment, Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and the others had still kept an eye on Qi Tian Oldie. His name in the Divine Great Land was too resounding. Any warrior on this continent had heard about how intimidating and mysterious he was.

No one could guess his intentions. So, when Shi Yan said the old man would help them, they didn't believe him.

"Guys!"

However, a head-splitting voice reverberated from the outer city. Long Zhu's sound was like the drumbeat that could shake people's hearts. His voice came to every corner.

Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor were discussing the important matters in the center of the city. They were all struck. Lin Meng

and Yan Ke's group outside the city was frightened, looking at the imposing city walls.

Long Zhu's slender figure appeared in the corner of the city. He held a dragon cane. His face was wrinkled, outlining a pair of muddy eyes. He looked senile, as if he had one foot in the grave already.

"Qi Tian Oldie!"

"Qi Tian Oldie!"

"Old Long!"

"That's Old Long!"

"Why is he in the city?"

Instantly, many surprised screams and shouts arose from the formation of the seven ancient factions. Many people exclaimed when they recognized Long Zhu. However, they were all suspicious.

Lin Meng, Nie Rou, Yan Ke, and Wen Di, the True God Realm warriors, became tense. They all took one step forward. From a distance of a thousand meters away, they bent their body to show their respect.

In the Divine Great Land, calamities had happened many times. Sometimes, the seven ancient factions had their hands tied. They had to ask for Long Zhu's advice to overcome the tough times.

Long Zhu had an important position in the Human Clan. He was the true warrior that everybody respected.

A long time ago, when big troubles had happened on the Dead Soul Mountain Range, at that time, Lin Meng, Yun Hao, and Nie Rou weren't as strong as today. Long Zhu had helped them to control the dead souls' evil lair.

Several events like that had happened. Long Zhu had done his best to save the Human Clan.

Although Lin Meng, Qin Gu Chuan, and Nie Rou were people with noble positions, they had to conduct the etiquette of the juniors to their seniors in front of him.

People who didn't know Long Zhu got his identity right when they heard the others shouting. They couldn't help but discuss with each other quietly. They were all startled.

Yun Hao was struck. As he thought that they could have a chance to overturn the situation, he hastened to scream out, "Old Long, why are you in that city? I know Old Long always has a broad vision. Do you have any new instructions for us?"

"I don't dare to give you guys instructions," Long Zhu said with a merciful countenance, his tone soft. "The alien tribes are gathering outside the Perpetual Night Forest. They are about to march here. Every minute you get out of the secret domain is the minute you may counter danger. Once the alien tribes come, without the special defensive features of the secret domain, everybody will face fatal risks. I know the resentment between you and the owner of this place. However, they are members of our Human Clan. In such special times, I do not expect you to waste our clan power in a civil war."

After he said that, everybody from the seven ancient factions started to bustle. Many people, who were racist, screamed to show their anger. They said that Long Zhu was wrong this time.

The number of warriors who agreed with Long Zhu was just one-tenth.

People who had a good relationship with Shi Yan had recognized the meanings behind Long Zhu's words, which was to consider the whole picture. They agreed with him, but their voices were sunk in the angry shouting of the others.

Looking at them from the city wall, Long Zhu couldn't help but feel his heart heavy. He knew it was impossible to make it work.

Although Lin Meng, Nie Rou, and Yan Ke respected him, they weren't his subordinates. If his opinions tilted to Lin Meng's side, perhaps they would treat him with greater respect. But if he went against their wishes, this respect wouldn't be like it should be.

He was just an old man without a big force as his background. Although his realm was mysteriously tremendous, he was just one level stronger than Lin Meng's team. Without a stronger force to subdue them, Lin Meng's team would never stop.

Indeed, after Lin Meng, Nie Rou, and Qin Gu Chuan discussed with each other for a while, Lin Meng replied to Long Zhu. Her voice showed her respect, but she wasn't so tender. "Old Long, how could you talk like that? They are joining the pagans. They've killed many people of Human Clan, including members of the Heaven Temple. Even a True God Realm expert! They showed us that they have an agreement with the alien tribes. They want to destroy our remaining Human Bloodline!"

"We have to punish them!"

"Traitors should be executed!"

"Kill them! Take revenge for our follows!"

Many enthusiastic members of the Heaven Palace, the Pure Land, and the Martial Spirit Palace were shouting. Their face reddened with rage, as if Shi Yan had killed their fathers.

Although no one knew who had killed Ning Du Quan and Qin Gu Chuan hadn't discovered who did that, he had poured this pot of sh\*t on Shi Yan's head, who seemed to be a suitable man for the job.

But, Shi Yan had done that indeed.

# Chapter 658: Then we fight!

---

Long Zhu knew that he alone wasn't enough, his face regretful.

He knew the racial discrimination on this continent would never change, even if tens of thousands of years had passed. Also, Lin Meng, Nie Rou, Guan Hu, Nie Rou, and Lu Miao were stubborn.

Even Yan Ke and Wen Di, the two recluses, couldn't see the whole picture. How many people could do that? Moreover, it was true that the pagans had slaughtered humans everywhere, leaving the Divine Great Land in miseries.

Only Long Zhu alone wasn't enough to settle the racist matters.

This is why he chose to go the same way as Shi Yan. He thought Shi Yan's way was the main trend of future, the only way for humans to survive.

As he couldn't make them think the other way around, Long Zhu wouldn't waste his effort anymore, shaking his head in regret. He stood on the city wall, and didn't say anything.

"Sorry, Old Long. For the peace of Human Clan, for our fellows who had fallen, we have to do what we have to do," Lin Meng bent to him, but her eyes were determined.

The crowd behind her was stirred up. They were about to take action. They shifted, as if they couldn't control their bloodthirsty desire anymore.

Right at this moment, Shi Yan appeared on the city wall, looking at the seven ancient factions on the opposite side. He smiled, his face tired. "You guys came."

His look shifted between Tang Yuan Nan, Xia Qing Hou, Bai Gen Seng, Ji Mu, Bei Si, and Bei Di. He felt so bitter.

"Shi Yan boss," Lao Li and his brother mouthed in the crowd. They were upset. Their voice sank into the sea of angry shouting

and screaming.

Zhu Yi and Tan Yuan Nan's group wore heavy visage. They shook their heads begrudgingly under his look.

Some other people like Bai Ge Seng couldn't hold their snorts with malicious complexion.

When Shi Yan looked at Xia Qing Hou, he was like a wooden log, not having any emotion on his face. Shi Yan couldn't see his real feelings.

From a formation next to him, Yang Tian Emperor emerged. Frowning at the force, including Shen Lin's group, who used to belong to the Yang family, and Xia Qing Hou's group, the ones Yang Tian Emperor had brought to the Divine Great Land, he laughed oddly. "Good. I know many people here. Haha. I have never expected to see them as enemies. But now they are! It's true that no one can see through the others."

Under his gaze, Shen Lin, Dong Jin, and the other traitors of the Yang family stooped their heads, as if they didn't hear or see anything.

A beam of shame flashed Xia Qing Hou's dull face. He sighed, looking at Yang Tian Emperor from a far distance. "Yang-ge, if you return now, everything will be alright."

Yang Tian Emperor revealed a pathetic sadness, smiling. "Return? What wrong deeds I've done to return? Should you or I return? Have you ever thought about that?"

Xia Qing Hou shook his head, his face dark. He didn't talk more.

Their dozens of years of friendship in the Endless Sea vanished after this small exchange.

"I, Yang Tian Emperor, pledge that who have ever received my favors, if they join the battle today, I will burn their bones into ashes at any cost!" said Yang Ti Emperor coldly.

"A Head Master of a small family in the wild place dares to talk arrogantly here. This is the funniest joke I've ever heard!" Qin Gu Chuan sneered. "You don't have a tomorrow. After today, everybody in that city will no longer have their names utter in this world!"

Yang Tian Emperor cracked a smile, his face ferocious. "Well, I'm not sure about that."

"Today, who wants to attack us, stay here. Who remembers our favor and doesn't want to engage in this fight, please step back for three miles. This is for me to know who are my enemies, and who are... my friends." Shi Yan's face was cold and still as water. He looked at them coldly, his voice calm.

"We will retreat three miles. I've said before, I just came here to watch. We are not going to join this operation," Yun Hao laughed frankly, waving his hands.

The disciples of the Radiant God Cult behind him, including Tang Yuan Nan, Ji Mu, Yue Ying, and the others, followed his words to separate themselves from the crowd.

Right at the beginning, Yun Hao didn't want to join this fight. He took around ten warriors of the Radiant God Cult with him to this place.

Yu Wan Jiang frowned, throwing a glare at his people. "Our Fighting Union is different from the other forces. Although I'm your Hegemon, I won't force you. If you want to fight, stay. If you don't, you can leave."

Pausing for a while, Yu Wan Jiang waved his hand. "Warriors of the Celestial Emperor come with me. We'll leave this place."

The Fighting Union consisted of seven cities, including the Celestial Emperor City, Fighting Emperor City, Flame Emperor City, Thunder Emperor City, Wind Emperor City, White Emperor City, and Ice Emperor City. The matters of the Union would be

discussed and settled by the committee of the seven City Masters.

That's why he couldn't direct the Fighting Union's way like Yun Hao did to his cult.

The Celestial Emperor's warriors retreated three miles as Yu Wan Jiang had ordered. Shuang Yu Zhu and Leng Dan Qing of the Ice Emperor City took their mild girls with them to withdraw.

Bei Si and Bei Di of the Banner family from the White Emperor City considered and then announced their retreat. They didn't really stand on the opposite side to Shi Yan.

However, Bai Gen Seng, who used to favor Shi Yan a lot, chose to say. He talked to Cai Yi, "That kid saved you. You can leave."

Cai Yi felt upset, leaving with Lao Li for three miles away from the site.

"Shi Yan has favored me, so I won't join this." Zhu Yi of the Wonderful Stone City notified Lu Miao of the Spirit Treasure Sect, then brought Lin Zhi and Luo Meng's team to three miles away.

Shen Lin, Dong Jin and the others, the former members of the Yangs and now the members of the seven ancient factions, stood still with their heads lowered.

Xia Qing Hou kept an indifferent face, as if he didn't hear what Shi Yan said. He stood still.

From the city wall, Shi Yan felt warm. He smiled as he was watching the others moving. He didn't expect that some people still remembered their friendship and didn't stay on the opposite side even at this moment.

About Xia Qing Hou, Bai Gen Seng, and Shen Lin, he had prepared himself already, so he didn't feel despondent. However, he now had a new recognition of people's hearts. At the critical moments, one could see who one's friend was.

Lin Meng and Nie Rou didn't say anything. Their faces were ugly



as they were trying to press down their anger. They thought that after this operation, they would solve those people.

They also wanted to see the uncertain factors in their organization, which would tilt to the other side. Later on, they could find the right guys to kill.

After the seven ancient factions' team divided into two sides, Lin Meng coldly glared at her team. "Who wants to leave with them?"

"People who believe in me, please retreat for three miles as well." At this moment, Qi Tian Oldie also rose his voice after a long time of silence.

Beyond his expectation, a small group, who wasn't afraid of Lin Meng's and Nie Rou's force, detached.

Most of them didn't belong to the seven ancient factions. They were from some other smaller forces of the Divine Great Land. To survive, they had come to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain and stayed with the seven ancient factions.

Many of them had received favor from Long Zhu, while the others had a blind belief in him. They thought that Long Zhu was the only sage of this land, and that they would believe him unconditionally.

This group wasn't smaller than the team that had divided after Shi Yan's words, which was beyond everybody's expectation.

Shi Yan was startled, looking at those people with a surprised face.

At this moment, he finally knew how great Long Zhu's influence was in the Divine Great Land! Long Zhu made the others forget their fear for the seven ancient factions' revenge. They resolutely decided to believe in him.

Lin Meng and Nie Rou's group put on grim countenances. They had underestimated Long Zhu. Eventually, they recognized his tremendous influence, which had reached a frightening level.

Lin Meng's team felt a little bit regretful. They regretted giving Shi Yan that much time. They shouldn't have let him talk this much and just attacked right away when they had just arrived. This could have prevented many unexpected events.

"Good!"

Shi Yan shouted furiously, his voice sounding brutal. Crazy light sparkled in his eyes. "I ask you one more time. Do you want to exterminate us this time?"

"No doubt!" Lin Meng beamed a faint smile.

Nie Rou, Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Lu Miao, Yan Ke, and Wen Di nodded with solemn countenances.

"Then we fight," Shi Yan curled his lips. His voice became calm like never before. Many people couldn't stand that.

Suddenly, strange formations started to appear on the city walls under his feet. Furious explosions reverberated everywhere!

At this moment, the silver city acted as if it had turned into an ancient ferocious beast which had been awakened from the bloodiest, hardest battlefield, opening its blood mouth towards everybody.

Lights intertwined on the formations, shooting out with the rumbling noise of formidable energy.

Seven light columns bigger than the ancient trees shot out like dragons soaring aloft from the lake, bringing an intimidating piercing power.

The light columns were like dragons entering the earth, lunging into the formation of the seven ancient factions, leaving hundred-meters-large holes in the ground. Warriors who let the light touch them vanished instantly, leaving nothing. It looked like they had been pushed into the ground, buried there forever.

Everybody discolored in fright.

No one had ever thought that Shi Yan could be that resolute and cold-hearted. He had attacked first without any hesitation.

The extremely mournful and painful screeching and screaming arose from the seven ancient factions all of a sudden. Warriors who had just lost their friends and relatives were enraged. Flame of anger was burning in their hearts.

People who had retreated three miles could also feel the tremor from the ground. They shivered, their faces ashen. Instinctively, they wanted to urge their power to withstand.

At this moment, they all felt lucky that they had made the right decision not to stay in that muddy puddle. Even Lin Meng and Nie Rou were astounded, as if someone had kicked their a\*s.

No matter how hard they had imagined, they couldn't predict this formidable power of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. The energy the seven massive light columns carrying made these True God Realm feel that even their lives were threatened.

"So malignant!"

Long Ying covered her mouth and shouted. Her small, cute face paled in fear. Her beautiful eyes were distressed.

# Chapter 659: Headshot!

---

If he confirmed they were his mortal enemy, Shi Yan would never show them mercy. Once he launched his attacks, they would be the full-force ones!

After the seven light columns shot out, he didn't hesitate to connect his Soul Consciousness with the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. The second attack surged immediately.

Clusters of clouds that looked like they were made of crystals shone gloriously. Each cluster was as big as a door, rumbling like thunderclaps, crossing the city walls to attack the seven ancient factions' people.

Lin Meng and Qin Gu Chuan's team were woken up. They put aside the astonishment and started to counter.

Her small hands exposed from the sleeves, waving. Pieces of willow leaves fluttered in the air. Green light flooded the entire sky, as beautiful as emerald, releasing a mesmerizing halo.

It was the Sacred Level treasure of the Pure Land, Leafiness Ode, made of nine thousand leaves of the ten-thousand-year-old willow, and other hundreds of precious materials.

The willow leaves expanded into a magical array. Its vitality surged like a vast area of green leaves, covering their heads. It was so thick that even sunlight couldn't pierce through.

Light of thunderclaps shot out from the city walls, bombarding the green layer. Dazzling sparks scattered everywhere like the most blazing fireworks.

Ni Ruo, Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao wore an angry face. As they were enraged, the storage rings on their fingers sparkled, releasing their secret treasures.

A tenacious large gray cluster of cotton appeared above Ni Ruo's head. Threads shivered, creating a magical array to dissolve the

thunderclap in the sky.

It was Ni Ruo's treasure, condensed from the murderous aura of the thirty-six Exterminating Caves. Murderous aura arose from the cotton threads, enlarging the cluster, covering the area.

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao took out a jade pan pipe, a beating drum, and a bronze bell, turning into three different light beams above their heads. All then darted toward Shi Yan on the city wall.

The three True God Realm warriors joined hands in an attempt to kill Shi Yan with one strike.

In their heads, Shi Yan had become the most dangerous character. They thought that when Shi Yan died, this city wouldn't be able to perform its defensive functions. At that time, they could break it easily.

Each city, which was established from formations, barriers, and restrains, always had a control center controlled by Soul Consciousness.

Apparently, Shi Yan was the control center of the silver city. Once he fell, Yang Tian Emperor's group could never have the power to promote the best power of the silver city.

That time would be the time of doom of the Yang family. Lin Meng's team could see it.

Their strategy was correct, indeed. However, they had underestimated Shi Yan's power and the silver city's intimidation.

The jade panpipe was unpleasant to the ears. The sound was so sharp that it could pierce through people's souls. Under the urge of a True God Realm warrior like Qin Gu Chuan, its power was enhanced, which had strengthened its ability to snatch people's souls.

Raging drumbeat rumbled. Each beat entered Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness directly. If an ordinary True God Realm warrior got

hit with such a strike, his Sea of Consciousness would explode, his Soul Consciousness would scatter, and his soul would perish on the spot.

The bell tolls rippled in the dazzling light, expanding like rising tides. It brought the torrential power of the vast sea. This kind of pressing power could smash a warrior's body.

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao were the True God Realm experts. When they accumulated their power for an instant-kill attack, even the True God Realm warriors like Di Shan and Li Zheng Rong could perish.

But, Shi Yan wasn't afraid of them.

The attack wave of the jade pan pipe and the drumbeat had pierced through people's Sea of Consciousness. They were the soul class secret treasures. To other people, this kind of attack was much stronger than physical attacks.

However, using soul attacks to deal with Shi Yan was the worst strategy.

Shi Yan was calm, gathering his energy. His soul was firm, and his still body was like a massive rock bearing the two attacks.

His host soul wiggled, stirring his Sea of Consciousness a little bit. Flames of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame were released, cleaning all the soul attacks entering his body.

The only thing he was afraid was the bronze bell of Lu Miao. Waiting until the light ripples of the bronze bell dashed towards him, he became more solemn, extending his hand to touch the wall on his left.

A formation shaped like a lotus was triggered. From the center of the lotus, translucent lotuses which looked to be made of glass radiated dazzlingly with a furious pulling force.

The lotus was like a mouth that suddenly opened. From the city wall, it dashed forward, swallowing each ripple of the bronze bell.

However, after the lotuses took in the energy of the bronze bell, they exploded one by one. During their explosions, the attack ripples of the bell were dissolved.

The ground of the silver city shook several times, but it was nothing significant. Everything was normal.

Shi Yan didn't sneer or mock. While he was trying to dissolve the attack of the three True God Realm warriors, he released the Soul Gathering Pearl. Many threads extended, rolling the Soul Gathering Pearl, making a circle above people's heads.

The soul power of many warriors who were struck dead by the seven light columns was pulled into the Soul Gathering Pearl like a whale drinking water.

Seizing the chance, Shi Yan urged his mysterious martial spirit. Within three seconds, he had taken in a large amount of Essence Qi. He was shaken, and his acupuncture points swelled immediately.

At this moment, Shi Yan cracked a big smile. "If you want to break this city, you should try harder. With that sort of attack, I advise you not to waste your time. Get back to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, don't let the pagans kill you and end up dying in vain here."

Then, his body sank into the city wall, as if he had melted into a puddle, disappearing into the wall.

The Utmost Eight Purgatories City kept its quietness. No more brutal surging force or tremendous attacks shot out from everywhere.

Lin Meng and Nie Ruo were still controlling their secret treasures, creating the light defense to prevent the next wave of attacks.

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao felt as if they had been slapped. Their faces were grimaced, and their eyes were sinister.

In front of everybody, leaders of the five forces had joined hands, but they couldn't kill Shi Yan or leave a hole in the silver wall. They had let Shi Yan retreat easily... This dispirited them!

"Too arrogant! If this kid isn't killed, he will be the biggest danger to the Human Clan!" Qin Gu Chuan was like an enraged hound. He rubbed his hands brutally, panting as he was talking through his gritted teeth. "We must attack them harder!"

Lin Meng, Ni Ruo, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao nodded. Flames of anger burned in their hearts, arousing their ruthless intentions.

From three miles away, Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang couldn't conceal their fright. They looked at the silver city, which looked to be made it out of iron and steel, and didn't say anything for quite a long time.

Before they had gotten here, no one had thought that this silver city was that tough. They couldn't imagine Shi Yan's strange and evil tricks. The silver city could easily dissolve a powerful attack of the three True God Realm warriors.

They didn't know that Shi Yan could dissolve most of the soul attacks. They thought that Shi Yan's mighty power had depended on the Utmost Eight Purgatories City.

"Master Yun, you said... Shi Yan's considered the people of the Radiant God Cult. And, he has cultivated the Star Execution of the Radiant God Cult. I assume the method to construct this city is also from your sect, eh?" Yu Wan Jiang contemplated for a while and then asked him in a low tone.

Yun Hao wore an odd face. He shook his head with a forced smile. "He does cultivate the Star Execution. However, it is just a part of his power. He has many tricks... Even I can't understand him."

Yu Wan Jiang pondered. Later on, he beamed a smile. "I think our decision was right, then. I think, if they want to break the city,



they will have to shed quite some blood."

Yun Hao said with a stiff countenance. "Never underestimate Lin Meng's group! When they get stirred up, they could burst out with tremendous power. Moreover, they have divine secret treasures they haven't used yet. All of them are holding back their real power."

Yu Wan Jiang's face was heavy. He sighed, "Yeah, right. If Lin Meng and the others are enraged and use the divine treasures, I'm afraid this city will be broken quickly."

From behind Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang, Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Zhu Yu had cheerful faces. They watched everything with admiration, as strange lights sparkled in their beautiful eyes.

After they had arrived, these two were still worried that Shi Yan wouldn't have any power to defend, and that Lin Meng's team of the seven ancient factions would break the city right away and destroy his soul.

In the Divine Great Land, Lin Meng's team of the seven ancient factions represented the invincible power.

Although Shi Yan was strong, he was still young. He was at one realm lower than the others. Such a gap had the two women worrying about him. When the battle began, they didn't dare to watch.

However, it was beyond their imagination, that once Shi Yan took action, it was as reverberating as thunder. He had caused Lin Meng's group a big loss.

However, the women were more astounded that Shi Yan could stand still under the joined attacks of Qin Gu Chuan and the other two. Moreover, he had dissolved the attacks easily and retreated into the silver city.

These changes were like a pellet given to them, making them relaxed.

Zhu Yi, Bei Si, Bei Di, and the others were astounded. Light sparkled in their eyes as they felt complicated.

The power Shi Yan had brought out had shocked them deeply. At this moment, they recognized that deciding not to join this battle was the best decision they had made in the whole life.

"Qi Tian Oldie has a wide vision. It's lucky that we listened to him. Otherwise, we would be dead bodies now."

The small forces that retreated because of Long Zhu all felt frightened. They also felt lucky that they hadn't mingled with Lin Meng's group.

The intimidation the silver city showed them spared them no more hesitation. Now, they just wished to stay as far away from the trouble as possible.

# Chapter 660: Offer sacrifices to the divine weapon!

---

Perpetual Night Forest's peripheral zone...

A magic lozenge mirror was hung above the five great clans. It was projecting the fight between Shi Yan's team and the seven ancient factions.

Many hotshots of the alien tribes were watching the scene with serious faces and strange complexion.

Bao Ao was smiling under the magic mirror while playing with his fingers, which were shooting beams of black light, pouring into the center of the magic mirror. With the triangular mark on Shi Yan's neck, he could project the entire scene there without missing any details.

"Whichever era it be, Human Clan could never change their bad behaviors. They always have civil wars. What a strange race!" As Comoros saw the fight cease in the magic mirror, he laughed evilly, his face dark as usual.

Many members of the Ghost Mark Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, and the Demon Clan were sneering, as they thought it was such an interesting play.

Humankind was about to be cleared. However, at this most critical moment, the two big forces of this race couldn't join hands but tried to kill each other.

In their eyes, nothing was more interesting than this scene.

In every clan, maintaining the tribe was the most important matter. All the resentments would be put aside at the time they needed to cooperate to deal with the external enemy.

Every clan's survival was related closely to their union. Only unity could bring them the chance to survive.

Whoever dared to provoke a civil war would be the enemy of the entire race!

Quite the contrary, humanity was about to be extinguished, but they were fighting against each other. From the alien tribes' point of views, it was unimaginable.

"Everybody shouldn't rush. We just need to wait here," Bao Ao smiled warmly. "Wait until the result is clear, then we will march there and slaughter them all. This will be the most accurate decision."

Leaders of the alien tribes grinned, as they all approved of Bao Ao's decision.

"... That guy, yeah, that young man called Shi Yan...", Bao Ao smiled, "I want to keep him alive. He's related to our Demon Clan. So, you can't kill him."

Jie Ji of the Ancient Jie family, an antiquity family of Demon Clan, had his eyes brightened. He revealed a brutal smile and then said, "Bao Ao, are you sure? Is that kid from our Demon Clan?"

"He has the mark of the oldest family of Demon Clan on his forehead. I don't even know the profile of that family. You can see how old it is. Anyway, he hasn't received the family's inheritance yet. Otherwise, he wouldn't stand with the Human Clan," Bao Ao explained with a smile.

Jie Ji was so excited that he couldn't hold his laughter. "Our Demon Clan does have plenty of outstanding warriors. He's just a young man, but he can make the Human Clan pay a bloody price. Not bad, I like this kid. After we clear the humankind, I have to drink with him."

"Jie Ji, I've chosen him first. You want to snatch him from me?" Bao Ao's eyes became malignant. The smile on his lips was as sharp as a saber.

"So what? Do you think I'm scared of you?" Jie Ji didn't show

that he was weaker. "If that kid receives the inheritance of the oldest family, do you think he will listen to you? Bao Ao, don't be so arrogant. When that kid receives the inheritance, he will thrive. I'm not sure he would be weaker than us at that time."

Bao Ao was surprised. He contemplated for a while and then smiled. "Oh, it's true though. So, before he grows, I will make him accept me."

"I think everybody will have his chance at that time. I want to see if you can offer him something better than me," Jie Ji laughed contentedly.

On one side, Shi Yan was having the most strenuous battle with Lin Meng's group. But on this side, the Head Masters of the two strongest families of the Demon Clan were planning to steal the young man to their side.

"Master, he's our friend. We won't attack him." In the Corpse Clan formation, Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea kept silent for a while and then talked to Corpse Chief in the big coffin.

Corpse Chief's strange voice arose. "The two great chiefs of the Demon Clan want to protect him. Do you think he will die here?"

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea were surprised. They kept silent again.

"No!" Comoros shouted, "That kid must die. He's the mortal enemy of our Ghost Mark Clan. I have to kill him!"

"That brat must die!" Yama King Abi shouted from the Dark Clan.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji became grim. The two leaders of the Demon Clan raked their vicious eyes over everyone else, as a bloodthirsty aura started to diffuse.

"Before we destroy the Human clan, if someone dares touch my Demon Clan's men, we shouldn't talk about anything else. The battle with Human Clan, you should think about whether we would want to join it or not." Jie Ji grinned fiendishly like a

bloodthirsty beast showing its sharp fangs. He wanted to start a fight here first.

Bao Ao nodded.

Demon Clan was a clan that always covered their members' shortcomings. At the same time, they did appreciate the new powerful generation of their clan. Experts of the previous generations should prepare the cultivating path for their next generations. It was the rule that they had always kept in mind. If they hadn't confirmed Shi Yan's identity yet, they would never give him even a glance.

However, as they had found that Shi Yan had the bloodline of the oldest family, they immediately considered him the new blood of the new generation. And, they instinctively wanted to protect him.

The reason why the Demon Clan could maintain their mighty force until today was because all of their experts had followed this rule. Whenever a new generation of the Demon Clan was born, they would be nurtured to slowly progress until they become the new leaders of the clan. This rule kept the Demon Clan strong from the past until present.

As Bao Ao and Jie Ji had shown their attitude, the Ghost Mark Clan and the Dark Clan didn't dare to talk more.

The Demon Clan force was mighty among the five great clans. Under Bao Ao and Jie Ji, there were countless evils and beasts. At least, none of the other four forces dared to counter the Demon Clan face to face.

No matter which era it was, Demon Clan was one of the strongest forces. They covered their members' shortcomings; they were always hostile and ready to take revenge, and they had a crazily strong power. If they didn't have to do it, no clan dared to provoke the Demon Clan.

Thus, although Comoros was hostile, when Bao Ao and Jie Ji

expressed that they would protect Shi Yan, his clan had to weigh pros and cons. They stopped their verbal attack immediately.

"What if he isn't a member of the Demon Clan?" The leader of the Dark Spirit Clan snorted coldly.

"Whatever you want to do with him, we don't care," Bao Ao laughed.

"Alright then, we should capture him first. Then, we will certify his identity. We just need to test once and for all," the man said.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji nodded, showing that they had no objection.

The premise to protect Shi Yan was that he must have the Demon Clan's bloodline, which would make the other two leaders take care of him. But, if they could prove that Shi Yan wasn't one of them, of course they wouldn't care about his life anymore. And, they would kill him first.

A young man full of potential, if he wasn't their family, he must die!

— This was also one of the rules of the Demon Clan.

...

Outside the silver city...

Lin Meng, Nie Ruo, and Qin Gu Chuan wore a grim face. They discussed something and then decided that they would use a tremendous force to break the city.

"We shouldn't show any mercy. We don't have much time. Guys, we need to finish these traitors fast, so that we can retreat to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain before the pagans come," Yan Ke suggested.

Everybody agreed with her tactfully.

Lin Meng started first. The Original Universe Returning Cauldron, which used to appear in the meeting hall in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, emerged from Lin Meng's small hand.

The Original Universe Returning Cauldron was the divine weapon of the Pure Land. Although this treasure was powerful, Lin Meng had never used it carelessly.

As Original Universe Returning Cauldron appeared, energy immediately seethed like the immense ocean, overflowing from the cauldron like a mighty energy river.

This fall of energy torrentially rolled into forty-nine flows of red light, which looked like forty-nine giant dragons, meandering towards the silver city.

Each flow of this red light could kill a warrior at the First Sky of True God Realm effortlessly! They swarmed and attacked the silver city together.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Barriers, restrains, and formations on the city walls glowed. They furiously took in the energy from the top-grade Essence Crystals and precious mineral jades in the foundation of the city, to create hundreds of defending layers to resist the rumbling attack of the Original Universe Returning Cauldron.

Countless dazzling waves of light rippled from the city, while the imposing silver city suddenly trembled like a tipsy man. It looked like it was about to collapse.

Inside the city...

Shi Yan, Yang Tian Emperor, and the others changed their visage as they could feel the city getting unstable. They couldn't hide their heavy feeling.

The power of a divine weapon was intimidating indeed. It was urged by Lin Meng, a warrior at the Second Sky of True God Realm. Only this kind of antiquity formation like the Utmost Eight Purgatories City could resist such an energy attack.

If it were the city like the Ice Emperor City or the Wonderful Stone City, it would have collapsed with only one strike like that.



"Be careful. People who don't have a responsibility, retreat to the center of the city. The defensive force of the outer city is limited. It's built to neutralize the attack energy of the divine weapons. It doesn't matter if they can break the outer city. Once they dare step in, what awaits them is more perilous." Shi Yan ordered quickly. He was calm and solemn while continually releasing the Soul Consciousness to supplement the consumed part of the formations.

Hearing him, many warriors staying in the outer city retreated into the center of the city using the safe passage he had created.

"Let me boost more power," Nie Ruo said after pondering for a while from outside the city.

Nie Ruo had a three-meter-long bone sword stabbed in his waist. While talking, he lifted his tunic and grabbed the sword.

When his hand touched the sword, a malicious, murderous aura diffused immensely into thirty-six flows of dark smoke, which could disorder people's Soul Consciousness.

The Ghostly Spirit Sword used the Ghostly Spirits of the thirty-six Exterminating Caves as the body. After taking in murderous aura for ten thousand years, the sword was quenched. Ghostly Spirit Sword was the halidom of the thirty-six Exterminating caves, a divine weapon.

Nie Ruo's soul had fused with the ghostly spirits. He had used his blood to feed them. He had to keep the sword on his body so that it could drink his blood to grow stronger.

When he took out the Ghostly Spirit Sword, screaming and screeching of the ghostly spirits arose from his body, as if they were bloodthirsty demons who could smell blood, which made them want to wolf down everything.

# Chapter 661: The perpetual light that never extinguishes!

---

Eventually, the Ghostly Spirit Sword was taken out of Nie Ruo's body. During this process, Nie Ruo had to endure the pain like someone was tearing his intestines. His face was distorted so much that it didn't look like a human face anymore.

Every time he took out the Ghostly Spirit Sword, he had to pay with his blood and flesh. If it weren't the critical time, Nie Ruo would never use the sword. This divine sword harmed his body brutally.

The Ghostly Spirit Sword flew out while screeching. Thirty-six ghostly spirits with hazy gray wings and tails dragged along the sword. Thirty-six objects tore the sky, thrusting towards the silver city.

The ghostly spirits ceased in the air, releasing their powers altogether. Thirty-six different murderous flows struck on Ghostly Spirit Sword.

The Ghostly Spirit Sword was like a light stabbing directly into the silver city. All barriers, restraints, and formation were pierced.

Puff!

The city wall that was as rigid as hard stone was jabbed. The sword appeared in the outer region of the city.

Different from the Original Universe Returning Cauldron, which attacked the entire city, the Ghostly Spirit Sword had aimed at only one location. The power gathered at the sword tip could easily pierce through the hardest defense.

Lin Meng's group was shaken.

Nie Ruo screeched in extreme pain, his face paled.

Thirty-six ghostly spirits got through the hole created by the

sword, screaming and howling, entering the outer region of the city.

Thirty-six gray shadows, each longer than one hundred meters, carried the Yin Ghost, Blood Ghost, and Evil Ghost. They started to wreck the formations and barriers in the outer region of the silver city with their intimidating powers.

Shi Yan's face changed dramatically.

In his Sea of Consciousness, the Inner World Five Devils roared and shot out, turning into five tangible Demogorgons attacking the thirty-six ghostly spirits.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The hollow ghostly spirits and the Five Demogorgons entangled. Shortly, the Inner World Five Devils got hurt badly, as they couldn't endure the attacks by the spirits.

Shi Yan felt hurt. He hastened to call the Inner World Five Devils back to his Sea of Consciousness.

The thirty-six ghostly spirits were the condensed murderous aura from thirty-six Exterminating Caves of the Devil Valley. They were the evilest existences in the world. They had been developed for more than ten thousand years, which were something the Five Devils, the phantoms Shi Yan had created not so long ago, couldn't resist.

The ghostly spirits cried with the high notes that could stab people's souls. They flew around the outer city, wrecking many barriers and restraints.

Thirty-six ghostly spirits were like thirty-six horses pulling the Ghostly Spirit Sword everywhere.

Ghostly spirits couldn't break the formations and barriers, but they could pour their powers into the divine sword, using the sword to wreak havoc everywhere.

The Ghostly Spirit Sword taken out from Nie Ruo body had brought out a destructive power that nothing could withstand. Shi Yan was battered with it.

"Retrieve!"

The Storage Ring on Shi Yan's finger glowed gloriously. The Soul Gathering Pearl shot out, releasing its mighty soul suction force towards the thirty-six ghostly spirits.

All souls without an entity would be included in the Soul Gathering Pearl's attack range. Shi Yan wanted to take the ghostly spirits that way since it always worked.

However, he was wrong this time.

The Soul Gathering Pearl had released a might suction force that could affect any kind of spirit. However, these thirty-six hallow ghostly spirits had become one with the Ghostly Spirit Sword.

Each time the soul suction force of the Soul Gathering Pearl could pull the ghostly spirits towards it, the Ghostly Spirit Sword would pull them back. The ghostly spirit that the bead attacked would be pushed away, out of the bead's attack range.

The thirty-six ghostly spirits didn't have a body, but the Ghostly Spirit Sword was a real object. They were combined into one solid union to make up each other's shortcomings, as if the user had calculated this situation before. They had minimized the effects of the Soul Gathering Pearl.

The Soul Gathering Pearl couldn't do anything. It could affect the spirits, but it couldn't work because of the Ghostly Spirit Sword.

The thirty-six ghostly spirits continued to break the barriers and formations inside the city. At this speed, they would destroy all barriers and formations on the city wall shortly.

Without the support of the barriers and formations, as long as Lin Meng used the Original Universe Returning Cauldron to attack one more time, the outer city would be smashed.

At this moment, Shi Yan finally realized that the seven ancient factions weren't easy to deal with. Their profound assets weren't something a young man with a few years of cultivation could predict. Shi Yan didn't assume the signs of defeat would come that quick. He had lost his first layer of defense.

At this moment, some low-realm warriors were still in the outer city. If the walls were broken, they would be exposed. The others could kill them easily.

Li Feng Er's group was still there.

Shi Yan was worried.

However, at this moment, Long Zhu frowned from the outer city.

The dragon cane in his hand was stirring. A three-hundred-meters-long cedar red light column shot out from the dragon cane, towards the thirty-six ghostly spirits.

Long Zhu pulled the cane, and the light fastened the gray wings and tails that connected thirty-six ghostly spirits and the divine sword. He forcefully pulled, and the dragon cane pounded heavily on the ground under his feet, cracking a hole with a loud explosion.

The cedar red light column was pulled down by an invisible hand.

Thirty-six ghostly spirits and the sword were pulled down altogether with the light column, as if someone were pulling them with great resentment.

Shi Yan could relax his tense nerves.

Long Zhu's attack was stronger than he had expected. He had stopped the evil divine weapon Ghostly Spirit Sword.

The cedar-red light he had shot out from the dragon cane tied and squeezed thirty-six ghostly spirits and the Ghostly Spirit Sword with an incomparable power. The sword couldn't move or

break anything else.

The most mysterious oldie of the Divine Great Land had really lived up to his reputation. He was unimaginably strong!

"What are you waiting for? Get your men out of here!" Long Zhu shouted.

Shi Yan was struck. He hastened to urge his people. "Warriors under Spirit Realm, retreat to the city center, quick!"

While he was talking, dazzling passages appeared, extending to the deeper place in the silver city.

Low-realm warriors like Li Feng Er didn't hesitate. They flew fast towards the city center.

"Thank you!" Seeing his people retreating safely, Shi Yan bent down to show his sincere appreciation.

"No need to say thanks, little buddy. Can my granddaughter get into the city now?" Long Zhu smiled nonchalantly. "I think I've proven I'm trustful."

Shi Yan didn't say anything, continually nodding his head.

"Little Ying, you go to the city center. It's dangerous here. I'll go find you later." Long Zhu stroked Long Ying's hair and said tenderly.

"Grandpa, be careful. Lin Meng's team won't treat you with respect anymore. They will attack you with their best," said Long Ying worriedly.

"Don't worry. I understand. I know that if I join this side, we can never get along again," Long Zhu smiled. Of course, he wasn't afraid of that situation.

...

Outside the city...

Nie Ruo seemed to be hit hard. He spurt out blood, his face

grimaced. He shouted hoarsely. "Old Long! You helped them! You did help them!"

The Ghostly Spirit Sword and he had a soul connection. Each ghostly spirit was like his eyes and ears. He could see what Long Zhu had done, so he knew who had attacked him harshly.

The leaders of the seven ancient factions had the same resentment at this moment. They couldn't help but shout at Long Zhu on the city wall, their faces filled with rage.

"Old Long, you want to destroy the flame of our Human Clan! You will be the sinner of the Human Clan for thousands of generations!" Yan Ke hissed. Her wrinkled face convulsed like a viper having someone step on its tail.

"From now on, Long Zhu will no longer be the sage of the Human Clan. He's the common enemy of the entire Clan!" Lin Meng shouted indignantly, her face grim.

"If the flame of Human Clan extinguishes, you have to bear this responsibility!" Wen Di cried.

Long Zhu's countenance was indifferent. He looked to the far horizon from the city wall. "The light of hope of Human Clan isn't on your side only. In my eyes, this city represents our future. And you, you are the outdated tide that would be discarded. Your thoughts and point of views are so old-fashioned. You don't want to recognize the trend. You will be the energy supplied for our Human Clan's flame of hope."

Long Zhu was enraged by Lin Meng and Qing Gu Chuan's team.

"You coarse old man, you and I are mortal enemies!" Nie Ruo scolded, giving Long Zhu no respect. "I pledge that I will burn your bones to ashes."

"If you have the competence to do that, come here." Long Zhu smiled faintly. He stepped away from the city wall, talking to Shi Yan. "Are you well-prepared? Once Lin Meng's group starts the

attack, this wave will be more powerful. How long can your city resist?"

"Not really long," Shi Yan smiled. He looked exhausted.

At this moment, his acupuncture points were filtering the energy. His Essence Qi had been consumed a lot. If he couldn't supply the Essence Qi shortly, let alone the outer city, he couldn't even control the city center to perform its best.

"The outer city is the first layer of defense. The fight will actually take place when they get into the city," Shi Yan contemplated for a while. "I need time. Give me one hour. After that, I'm confident to defend this city."

"I will try to save one hour for you," Long Zhu pondered. "Anyway, you have to ensure that, as long as you are alive, you have to treat my granddaughter well."

Shi Yan was struck. His face became complicated and heavy. "Old Long, you...?"

If Long Zhu were alright, with his cultivation base, who could hurt Long Ying? If he said so, it meant he wasn't so sure about this battle.

"Although I'm one level stronger than them, they are a group of seven. They have at least three divine weapons they haven't used yet," Long Zhu finally showed a forced smile, shaking his head. "But, I will try my best to seize one hour for you!"

Shi Yan bent in front of him with deep respect.

"Remember, the flame of Human Clan can't be extinguished. No matter how you will be in the future, you have to leave the inheritance for the Human Clan," shouted Long Zhu all of a sudden.

Shi Yan shivered, then nodded heavily. "Old Long, please don't worry. As long as I'm alive, the Human Clan won't be over!"



"Okay, you should go."

Long Zhu waved his hand, signaling Shi Yan to leave. Afterward, he appeared again on the city wall, facing the seven True God Realm warriors alone. His face was merciful, but the energy fluctuating from him was wild and ruthless.

# Chapter 662: Five Elements Primitive Realm

---

The Perpetual Night Forest's edge...

Bao Ao was watching the battle in the silver city projected on the giant magic mirror. His face was solemn, while respect rose in his heart.

With Long Zhu's participation, they could resist Lin Meng's and Nie Rou's attack temporarily. Long Zhu had failed to settle the dispute between two sides. However, the five great alien tribes had witnessed his effort.

"Human Clan still has some sages. Long Zhu's worth a wise oldie who has lived for so long. Not only he has an intimidating competence, but he could also see the whole picture. It's not easy to do that." Jie Ji also nodded. "We shouldn't hurry. Long Zhu's cultivation base and real competence aren't less than any one of us. If he wants to kill himself together with us, one of us will have to bear that fatal danger."

Clansmen of the Dark Devil Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan, the Dark Clan, and the Corpse Clan kept silent.

Long Zhu's power had surprised them. Even the attacks of Lin Meng and Nie Rou had a tremendous impact. The alien tribes recognized that it wasn't really as easy to uproot Human Clan as they had thought.

"This city's tough to break. Human Clan still has some geniuses indeed. If this clan unites, we will find it strenuous to eradicate them." Comoros slammed his brows together. "We should wait until their fight comes to the most drastic time. We will go there to clean the mess."

"He's worth the bloodline of our Demon Tribe. I have found that I like him more and more."

Jie Ji laughed strangely. He rubbed his chin as he was

considering what he should offer Shi Yan later to make him become the member of his Ancient Jie family, the freshest flow of power for the new generation of this ancient family.

...

Inside the silver city...

Shi Yan sat neatly, closing his eyes. He was checking his body, feeling the changes in every acupuncture points. The Essence Qi he took from outside of the city was being filtered massively. However, his Essence Qi halo had been consumed to a great extent as well.

His soul consciousness scattered in the Sea of Consciousness like countless invisible threads, connecting to each barrier, formation, and restraint in the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. He was consuming energy each second.

When his Sea of Consciousness dried, without the energy of soul consciousness to support, he would have to use his own soul power. The soul power was the power of his life. If he spent it all, it also meant that his flame of life would be extinguished, and his life would come to an end.

The Inner World Five Devils got hurt, so they were now dormant in his Sea of Consciousness. They couldn't provide him energy to resist further.

Nie Rou's Ghostly Spirit Sword was really terrifying. It was worth the name of the evilest divine weapon in the entire region. If Long Zhu hadn't helped him at that critical moment, Shi Yan would have had to spend more power.

While contemplating, Shi Yan waved his hand to pull the Soul Gathering Pearl.

Shi Yan sent a beam of soul consciousness into the pearl and took some beams of pure soul power to his Sea of Consciousness in order to generate more power for his soul consciousness.

The Soul Gathering Pearl had purified a big amount of soul energy, but Shi Yan had used them for the Creator's Divine Pond. That pond required the constant supply of purest soul energy to operate its magical effects.

Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, Bing Qing Tong, and Han Cui could break through successfully thanks to the crystal clear soul power of the Soul Gathering Pearl, which made the pond work normally.

Before the fight, the Soul Gathering Pearl didn't store much of soul power. It couldn't provide soul energy sufficiently to him.

Thus, he needed to seize the time.

And, Long Zhu had given him a rare chance.

...

Qi Tian Oldie stood alone atop the city wall, in front of the furious gazes of Lin Meng's team. Holding the dragon cane, his hands were moving, making magical symbols and hand seals.

Each hand seal was dazzling. The large ones were as big as a mountain range, while the small ones were like a door. They all carried pure energy, arraying neatly like natural wills. They formed a thin, visual layer around the outer city.

This thin layer was shining with many colors, as if it were created by dozens of rainbows. Although they were beautifully glorious, people would be sunk into them if they looked at it for a while.

When Long Zhu made the hand seals, the aura on his body was fierce and stubborn, with an abundant murderous intent.

Countless ancient-styled patterns appeared on the thin, dazzling layer. People could see green foliage grow here and there, generating more mysterious lights. Those lights then tangled with each other, portraying a diagram of flying birds and swimming fishes. Gradually, a background of mountains and rivers was formed.

That thin layer was like an imaginary world, with Five Elements power moving, mountains, lakes and rivers, flying birds and swimming fishes, luxuriant green foliage, and giant trees.

"Five Element Primitive Realm!" Yan Ke cried with a solemn countenance. She slightly discolored. "This is one of his divine weapons! He got it from the foreign land. Originally, it had no power. He has put the Five Elements power into it from the Five Elements Space. This old man has wandered to many strange places in the continent, and he's collected many magical items, which helped him form this Five Elements Primitive Realm."

Wen Di's mood became heavy. "You shouldn't enter it no matter what. Inside the Five Elements Primitive Realm, he's the sole God! He can control anybody who is dependent on an element. In that place, he can affect many types of heaven and earth powers. The power we possess will lose its effect!"

Yan Ke and Wen Di were like Long Zhu; they were all recluses living in the Divine Great Land. They used to talk with Long Zhu, so they knew his Five Elements Primitive Realm.

"How to deal with it?" Lin Meng took a deep breath, trying to press down the anger in her heart.

She had always considered herself the genuine leader of the Human Clan in the Divine Great Land, a representative for the future of humanity. She deemed that when Long Zhu arrived at this place, he would contribute to support her in dealing with the tough challenge of the alien invasion.

However, everything had gone beyond her estimation. Long Zhu, the support she had assumed, had stood on the opposite side of her, supporting her enemy.

This big contrary had enraged her. She had thrown the respect she had for Long Zhu to hell. Right now, she just wanted to kill him to prove that her decision wasn't wrong.

"To break a realm, we need to dissolve its energy source," Yan Ke contemplated and then said, "To deal with the Five Elements Primitive Realm, there's only one way – neutralizing the power of the Five Elements. Without the energy supply, even if he knows many power Upanishads he won't be able to use them. At that time, this realm will vanish."

"Alright!" Nie Rou shouted with a malicious face. "When you attack that realm, I will try my best to control the Ghostly Spirit Sword to trouble that old dog. Don't worry; I will disturb him so much he can't totally concentrate on the realm. You guys should seize the chance and break that realm."

Long Zhu had hurt him badly, which had inflamed the rage in his heart. He didn't want to remember any favors the old man had given him anymore. His murderous aura started to surge.

Lin Meng nodded, throwing her glance at Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao, "Shall we?"

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lin Meng nodded.

"Elements move!"

Lin Meng extended her hand, pointing to the void. Five flows of radiant red light shot out from her fingers, hitting the Original Universe Returning Cauldron.

The massive cauldron pressed down rumblingly. A pressure of a thousand-meters-high mountain came from the cauldron. People then saw many clusters of cloud drifting over, just like a fairy scattering flower petals.

Different kinds of heaven and earth energies turned into countless beams in the sky. The clouds absorbed them all, making each cluster of cloud as heavy as a mountain. They fell like collapsing mountain, falling on the Five Elements Primitive Realm.

Dozens of rivers on the layer Long Zhu had condensed suddenly became alive. Torrential seething sound arose. The rivers became

real, surging violently, crossing and merging with each other to create an immense sea.

Rumbling explosions echoed from the heavy clouds, pressing the massive pressure on the silver city, hitting the thin layer brutally. The vast sea on the layer seemed to turn into a giant mouth that would never be satisfied, swallowing the clouds.

At this moment, the Ghostly Spirit Sword struggled to escape the restraint of Long Zhu's cedar red light column. It burst out with the tremendous murderous aura. Evil energy shot out everywhere, while fire sparks were fluttering.

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao exchanged looks. They were no more hesitant, and started to attack immediately.

Guan Hu touched his forehead. A magical sparkling small tree grew from his glabella. This tree seemed to be made of five-colored crystals, as it shone with a dazzling light.

This tree wasn't big, just around one meters tall. It had many longan-sized fruits. Each fruit bore a kind of power Upanishad, with distinctive surging waves of energy.

This was the Martial Spirit Fruit Tree, the divine treasure of the Martial Spirit Palace. Rumors said that it had grown from the seed of the Life Fruit Tree of the Martial Spirit Palace in Antiquity Time.

At that time, the Life Fruit Tree was a famous divine weapon, which could bear the magical life power. It could even magically revive a dead person.

However, the Martial Spirit Fruit Tree didn't have that miraculous effect. The Life Fruit Tree's seed could grow into the Martial Spirit Fruit Tree. When a warrior who didn't understand a power Upanishad ate a fruit of the Martial Spirit Fruit Tree, he could receive a martial spirit. He just needed to cultivate to grow his new martial spirit.

Anyway, martial spirits granted from the Martial Spirit Fruit Tree weren't really outstanding most of the time.

However, during the recent ten thousand years, this tree had born some special seeds, the Tired Soul Martial Spirit fruit for instance. These fruits would be soon absorbed by the young elites of the Martial Spirit Palace.

Guan Hu took out the Martial Spirit Fruit Tree, using his thought to manipulate the ten fruits to make their energies seethe, turning the essence power Upanishads and dashing forward.

The energy of heaven and earth disordered, and even the Five Elements Primitive Realm of Long Zhu was affected. Its energy seemed to be oppressed, unable to be promoted to the max.

Lu Miao's sleeves flashed. A dark gold boat flew out, bobbing and then entering the Five Elements Primitive Realm, falling into the vast sea.

Water in the sea started to drain away right after the small boat touched it. The small boat seemed to be able to absorb all kinds of water, no matter it was real or illusory. As long as it had the water power, the boat could affect them all.

The pressure Long Zhu had to bear doubled instantly.



# Chapter 663: Leave the rest to me

---

Guan Hu's Martial Spirit Fruit Tree, Lu Miao's Gold Battleship, and Lin Meng's Original Universe Returning Cauldron were activated at once. Long Zhu's Five Elements Primitive Realm seemed to struggle under this combined force.

At this moment, Nie Ruo was continually urging his Ghostly Spirit Sword, manipulating the sword to attack here and there. Long Zhu felt tired of trying to fend them off.

Long Zhu was solemn. He was making many hand seals to gather the Five Elements power to supplement the consumed and damaged areas and balance the realm again.

His Five Elements Primitive Realm had the Five Elements power as the energy supply. Once this power lost its balance, this realm would generate some dangers he couldn't estimate beforehand.

When he had reached the Peak of True God Realm, he had continually used the Essence Qi in a special simulation to convert the Five Elements power, pouring it massively into the Five Elements Primitive Realm to maintain the balance of this realm.

Shi Yan hadn't recognized the pressure from the outer world. After he took in an amount of crystal clear soul power, new Soul Consciousness energy flooded the Sea of Consciousness. His soul was supplemented, increasing his control power of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City.

However, the loss in his Essence Qi halo hadn't recovered yet. He was still waiting for the mysterious martial spirit to filter the Essence Qi. At this critical point in time, he still maintained a clear and firm state of mind, as he didn't dare to distract.

If he let the negative feelings affect his mind, he would never be able to strengthen the Utmost Eight Purgatories City again.

What surprised him a lot was that this time, the Essence Qi

filtering process didn't generate many negative feelings.

This was thanks to the time he had spent to madly refine the beast's bodies. Every time he did the refining work, his mind and spirit were always calm, and his soul sublimated. It brought him an indescribable benefit.

He suddenly felt lucky that he didn't rush to use the Creator's Divine Pond to enter the True God Realm when he had reached the Third Sky of Spirit Realm.

Stabilizing the realm was the task a warrior had to take care of very carefully. Otherwise, Mara would appear, making himself his own enemy.

The conscience was the biggest enemy of a warrior. If he couldn't get over the challenge in his heart, the danger it generated would be tremendous. If it weren't serious, it would be just a matter of time for bedevilment to happen. If it were serious, his soul would shatter directly.

His right deeds had helped him keep his mind during this filtering process. This was the big advantage from his mad forging of treasures.

Without that tranquil time when he had refined his soul, at this moment, he couldn't have been able to stay still to wait for a long while without making his soul disorderly.

Outside the silver city, Lin Meng, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao had put forth everything using the divine secret treasures to deal with Long Zhu, which affected the balance of the Five Elements Primitive Realm. They wanted to break this magical realm.

Long Zhu was indeed inexplicably intimidating. Under the siege of the True God Realm warriors, he didn't show that he was in a disadvantaged situation. Although his Five Elements Primitive Realm was distorted a little bit, it stood firm, covering the front of the silver city.

Yan Ke and Wen Di hadn't taken action yet.

The relationship between them and Long Zhu wasn't shallow. Although they took different ways, they couldn't use fatal strikes to attack each other. Thus, they didn't join the team to break the Five Elements Primitive Realm That's why Long Zhu could still resist. His realm hadn't been destroyed yet.

"Qin Gu Chuan!"

Lin Meng, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao looked at the master of the Heaven Temple with cold faces.

"I don't have any divine weapon. Sigh, if I use them, I don't have anything else. Currently, I have only two pieces. I want to keep them to deal with the pagan tribes," Qin Gu Chuan beamed a forced smile, hauling the Extinguishing Divine Mine from his Storage Ring.

The divine mine was fist-sized, with many pores. As soon as it appeared, the divine mine thumped like a heart.

This was a dangerous weapon of the Heaven Temple. The Extinguishing Divine Mine was created from seven types of strong wind, with almost one thousand different kinds of auxiliary materials, and had an intimidating power.

Heaven Temple consisted of seven families. Each family guarded a subterranean cave from where strong winds rushed out constantly. They had collected the strong wind from seven caves to refine the Extinguishing Divine Mine. It took one thousand years to collect the wind and refine the materials to produce one piece of Extinguishing Divine Mine.

Different from the others' divine treasures, the Extinguishing Divine Mine was a consumable item. If they used one piece, they couldn't restore it.

However, the power of this divine mine was extremely intimidating. It could explode a city like the Wonderful Stone City,

slaughtering every creature!

Qin Gu Chuan had only two pieces of Extinguishing Divine Mine. Normally, when the Heaven Temple was in an extremely perilous situation, they could use one to kill all the enemies instantly.

He didn't want to attack, in order to save the divine mine to have better support later.

Heaven Temple didn't have a divine weapon, so this Extinguishing Divine Mine was the lifebuoy for them at the very last moment. If it weren't so strenuous, he wouldn't want to use it.

Under the scolding of the other three, Qin Gu Chuan had to take out one Extinguishing Divine Mine begrudgingly.

"Extinguishing Divine Mine!" Yun Hao, who stayed three miles away from the site, discolored. He shouted immediately. "Everybody retreat for three miles more. We need to stay as far as possible from this silver city!"

Wan Jiang discolored, shouting, "Retreat! Quick!"

They all knew the dangerous feature of the Extinguishing Divine Mine. It was the best representative of the divine exploding class. Once it was used, everything would be destroyed.

Anybody who had heard about the reputation of the Extinguishing Divine Mine didn't to wait for a further explanation. They madly ran away as if they had seen ghosts.

Qin Gu Chuan swung his hand, shooting the Extinguishing Divine Mine towards the Five Elements Primitive Realm.

Long Zhu's face became grim. It was the first time he was enraged. He used his soul to control the Five Elements Primitive Realm, crazily urging Five Elements power. He rose his voice. "Qin Gu Chuan! You dare use the Extinguishing Divine Mine! I won't care about you guys anymore. I'm not going to defend only from now on!"

He used the Five Elements Primitive Realm to defend only, protecting the silver city and giving Shi Yan more time.

Before the battle, he had told Shi Yan that he would only help him to resist, and he wouldn't kill the members of the seven ancient factions.

Even when Lin Meng, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao started to use the divine weapons, he didn't change his rule, as he actually didn't want to turn his back to the seven ancient factions.

No matter what, in his heart, the seven ancient factions were the members of Human Clan. He wanted to use his best to keep the light of humanity. He didn't want to see people at the dead end.

However, when Qin Gu Chuan took out the divine mine, he was enraged.

The appearance of the Extinguishing Divine Mine meant the seven ancient factions had determined to play the game to the end. Not only killing him, they also wanted to kill everybody else in the silver city.

They didn't give him the way back!

Long Zhu couldn't press his anger anymore.

His shout made Qin Gu Chuan hesitant. The Extinguishing Divine Mine was trembling in the air, flying around the Five Elements Primitive Realm. It hadn't fallen into the realm yet.

"Qin Gu Chuan, what are you doing? You were the most ominous person before we come here. It's the critical time. Are you about to quit?" Nie Ruo was so angry that his face turned purple. He thundered indignantly. "That oldie isn't any good. We are trying to restrain him. He can't hurt you. He is just trying to scare you!"

Lin Meng coldly glared at him. "Qin Gu Chuan, if Shi Yan doesn't die this time, you will have no chance later. Don't worry, when you use the Extinguishing Divine Mine, we will attack with full force. The alien tribes are still out there. Do you think you still

have time or another choice?"

Qin Gu Chuan's pupils shrank. He finally made up his mind, pitching his voice. "Old Long, don't blame me. You've chosen your way. If you don't want to take care of this relationship, we won't care about you anymore."

Then, the Extinguishing Divine Mine fell rumblingly, disappearing into the Five Elements Primitive Realm.

Seeing the Extinguishing Divine Mine falling into the realm, Lin Meng, Lu Miao, and Guan Hu had retrieved the divine weapons they had released. They stayed far away from the Five Elements Primitive Realm, as they were afraid of getting involved in the attack range.

Although it was the divine weapon, on getting hit by the Extinguishing Divine Mine, it would be damaged. That's why these three people had tried to avoid this impact.

No sound was made. No earth-shaking explosion, no strange phenomenon in the sky...

However, Long Zhu standing atop the city wall spat out blood. He paled instantly, as if someone was squeezing his heart violently. He crouched, convulsing in pain.

The Five Elements Primitive Realm was connected with his soul. Under people's attentive looks, it shattered like a torn sheet of fabric.

An energy shockwave expanded in people's heart. Many low-realm warriors fell, blood trickling from the seven holes on their faces.

The Five Elements Primitive Realm was ripped into pieces. Light glowed, as small light dots were sparkling and shaking, releasing the aura of formidable energy.

Long Zhu was shaken, falling on the ground, his face grimaced.

The rigid outer wall of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City turned into stone chips when the light dots touched it. The wind blew them away immediately.

The entire massive outer city with barriers, restraints, and formations, all made by many people's effort, turned into dust instantly.

While the dust was scattering with the wind, earth-shaking explosions reverberated, hitting people's souls.

A strong earthquake happened right where Lin Meng and Yun Hao were standing. The firm ground cracked, as if someone were trying to tear it apart.

Long Zhu tried using the last beam of his energy in an attempt to build the Five Elements Primitive Realm one more time.

At this moment, Lin Meng, Lu Miao, and Guan Hu had manipulated their divine weapons the second time, to prevent the Five Element power from gathering with each other.

At this moment, the most mysterious oldie of the Divine Great Land was covered in blood, as if his face was destroyed. He looked pathetically feeble, and his soul got damaged badly.

"Why does he need to do that, sigh." Yan Ke signed deeply, her face begrudging. She felt sad because of Long Zhu's situation. She knew that even if Long Zhu didn't die, it would take him a lot of effort to recover.

"MOVE! NOW!"

As the city wall was destroyed, many passages appeared in the direction of the city center. Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan's group disappeared into the passages immediately, as fast as lightning.

Shi Yan supported Long Zhu's himself with a respectful expression. He pulled the old man into the city center.

"Little buddy, I couldn't get you an hour. I'm sorry." Long Zhu was covered in blood, talking mournfully on his shoulder.

"Enough. You've contributed enough," Shi Yan said with a calm voice. "Leave the rest to me."



## Chapter 664: Change the structure!

---

Shi Yan covered Long Zhu while running as fast as if he were flying. He reached the city center shortly.

Many warriors of the Yang family, the Dark Devil Clan, the Winged Clan and Human Clan were still busy adding materials into the formations and barriers inside the city. They all looked solemn.

Long Ying, Li Feng Er, Yang Xue, Yang Meng, the four little girls were chatting boisterously, as though they didn't know about the heated battle out there.

When Shi Yan put Long Zhu down, Long Ying glided to them while crying in fear. "Grandpa, what happened to you?"

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong stepped over, bowing respectfully to Long Zhu to show their appreciation. Without Long Zhu, the city wall would have been broken earlier, and many people would have been killed already, leaving Shi Yan no time to prepare.

"I'm okay. After eight years or ten years, I'll be recovered." Long Zhu said calmly, but only he knew how serious his wound was. Warriors at his level wouldn't get hurt easily. But once they got hurt, it wasn't easy to recover fully.

As Long Ying heard him say that he needed eight or ten years to convalesce, she immediately understood that her grandpa was hurt badly. She couldn't control her tears, sobbing.

"What Old Long's done for us, we will keep it in our minds forever. We will follow his words to preserve the human bloodline." Shi Yan's face was serious, standing in front of the others as if he just needed to raise his hand and pledge.

"Who did that? Lin Meng's team, right?" Long Ying gritted her white teeth, her cute face indignant. "Sooner or later, I'm going to

ask them to pay a bloody price."

"No need for sooner or later, they will know what they have messed with shortly." Shi Yan looked at her, "Don't worry. I won't let Old Long get hurt for nothing. I know who did that. I will absolutely not let them live comfortably."

Long Ying nodded heavily.

"Shi Yan, are you prepared? Did we... make it?" Long Zhu said in a feeble voice, his face solemn. It was what he couldn't put aside.

"Enough. You've given me enough time. If the seven ancient factions want to break the city center, I will make them lose half of their team!" Shi Yan's voice was calm, but the corners of his mouth show his icy cold intents.

...

Boom Boom!

The vast outer city walls collapsed under the bombardment from so many treasures. All of the barriers, restraints, and formations were destroyed.

Lin Meng's group was shaken.

From their location, under the immense, hazy gray sky, the city center stood alone, as if it was within reach, and they could ruin it at any minute.

From the beginning until now, Lin Meng, Nie Ruo, and the others had consumed a lot of energy. They thought that once the city wall was down, Shi Yan's people would be exposed. At that time, they could kill his men effortlessly.

However, seeing the power of the outer city, even if they had already broken it, no one dared to be the pioneer to attack the city center.

Nie Ruo's eyes were as sharp as the cold sword. Murderous aura wound around his sleeves, guiding the Ghostly Spirit Sword to

sense that strange area.

Ghostly Spirit Sword intruded the place under the hazy gray sky, circling one round. Suddenly, it made a buzzing but ear-splitting sound that could irritate people on hearing it.

Nie Ruo changed his visage, shouting in fright. "That place's perilous. It has so many invisible barriers and formations... The number of barriers is several times bigger than the outer city."

After that, Lin Meng, Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao grimaced.

"Damn it!" Qin Gu Chuan's mouth distorted a little bit, talking with an enraged voice. "What kind of f\*cking formation has that kid built? Why is it so hard to break? If I had known it earlier, I would have come here before they finished that damn city. We should have killed them earlier."

Everybody stayed quiet, as resentment surged vehemently in their hearts.

Before they came here, none of them had thought that this group of traitors could be so hard to deal with. In their eyes, Yang Tian Emperor and Shi Yan were just two clowns, and it would be a piece of cake to eradicate their streaks of existence from this world.

However, after they started the operation, they found the reality was beyond their estimation. It was just the outer city wall, but it had cost them a lot.

"As it's accelerated to this point, we must kill them. The seed of resentment is planted. If they can grow stronger in the future, we, the ones who are present here today, can't avoid their malicious revenge," stressed Lin Meng.

Shi Yan had given her so many unwanted experiences. Originally, she didn't care much about Shi Yan, but now, she regretted it.

Everybody knew how touchy Shi Yan was. They finally saw his

potential. At this moment, no one dared to look down on him anymore. From now on, he had become their most dangerous enemy.

"We must break the city! We must clean them up!" Nie Ruo pondered for three seconds and then pointed at Feng Xiao all of a sudden. "You go and check first. If you find something, come back and report to us immediately. We need to know what is inside."

Feng Xiao, aka Madman, didn't hesitate. He laughed crazily and shot towards the city center like a rainbow.

...

Ten miles away from the battle site...

Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang, and Bei Si brothers were scared. They all looked grim.

"It's unbelievable that Old Long stands on Shi Yan's side. I thought he was there to only solve the dispute between the two sides."

Yu Wan Jiang's face was odd. He shook his head as he thought that he had misunderstood Shi Yan. "That kid, is he worth Old Long's protection? I can't see what good sides he has to receive Old Long's favor. In fact, I didn't agree to clean them up, but I don't want to see Lin Meng's team bearing losses. They will be the main force to counter the alien tribes soon indeed."

Yun Hao arched his brows. "I think Old Long has bet on Shi Yan. Although I don't know why, I... I believe in Old Long's wise vision."

Pausing for a while, Yun Hao gave Yu Wan Jiang a deep look and muttered. "It's been so many years. Have you ever seen Old Long make mistakes? Especially when it's time to consider the... future of Human Clan?"

Yu Wan Jiang was struck. Divine light shot out from his eyes as he pondered.

He was the Hegemon of the Fighting Union, and he had experienced many things over the years. Every time Long Zhu appeared, he would lead people to get over the calamity. Sometimes, they couldn't explain his operation. However, eventually, the reality proved that he was correct.

This time... would it be the same?

Yu Wan Jiang's mind was as tangled as a messy bundle of cotton threads. He didn't dare to dig further.

"It's unbelievable that Shi Yan boss is so cool! Haha... I know that whoever dares to underestimate him will bear big losses eventually." Lao Li laughed contentedly. "When we were in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, Shi Yan boss' realm wasn't high. But, he had surprised the ones who were much stronger than him. And, in the end, all of them had to face a miserable ending."

"Anyhow... they are the leaders of the seven ancient factions in the Divine Great Land this time, kid." Bei Si glared at him, scratching his head as he wasn't so sure about anything.

"So what?" Lao Lun pitched his voice, shouting, "Shi Yan boss is stronger! He was at the early stage of the Sky Realm that year, and today, he has reached the Peak of Spirit Realm. I long to see the day he enters the True God Realm. I always have a feeling that when he reaches the True God Realm, he will change the structure of the Divine Great Land!"

"Change the structure?" Bei Di seemed like he was hit by a big rock. He shuddered, asking instinctively. "What structure?"

"Perhaps... the seven ancient factions won't rule anymore. In the future, Shi Yan's force will be the strongest force of the Divine Great Land. I know my assumption has no proof. However, Shi Yan's operations always fill with unimaginable things. I believe in him!"

Bei Si and Bei Di changed their countenance. Zhu Yi and Tang

Yuan Nan didn't say anything; they were all frightened. Lao Lun had wiped away the thick mist in their minds, as they seemed to see future at that moment.

"Tang-ge, what do you think?" Ji Mu of the Radiant God Cult looked at Tang Yuan Nan. "You are more familiar with Shi Yan. Do you think he... has that ability?"

Tang Yuan Nan contemplated for a while, as if he were considering his words. "I don't dare to make any guesses. However, that year when he was in the Endless Sea, at the Sky Realm, he had troubled many Spirit Realm experts. Eventually, he had depended only on himself to make the Yang family the overlord of the entire sea. The history will repeat, perhaps. Haha, who knows?"

Ji Mu, Yue Ying, Bei Si, and Bei Di changed their visage on hearing him.

"Haha, I think we should consider our future seriously," Bei Si said with a concealed meaning in his words.

Bei Di nodded in agreement.

"We need to wait for the result. As long as they can overcome the challenge of the seven ancient factions, they will have a future to talk about. At this moment, it's a little bit early, I suppose," smiled Zhu Yi.

Although they said positive things, in their minds, they only had a vague hope for Shi Yan to win this battle.

They were waiting for a miracle.

...

Lin Meng, Nie Ruo, Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Yan Ke, and Wen Di were watching the immense gray sky ahead of them carefully, waiting for Feng Xiao to come back with his report.

It had been fifteen minutes since Feng Xiao had broken in the city. They had no information sent from him. Right when he

entered the city, he seemed to vanish into thin air. Even Lin Meng and Guan Hu, the ones with powerful souls, couldn't feel his soul aura.

Gradually, they couldn't help but feel their hearts sinking. They could see the city within their reach, but it was like a viper waiting in the dark to attack anyone who dared to trespass its territory.

"We can't wait for too long!" Lin Meng suddenly shouted.

The others nodded. They understood that the alien tribes were watching them. They didn't have much time to waste like this.

"We should attack now!" suggested Qin Gu Chuan.

"I agree!" Nie Ruo answered.

They rubbed their fists, taking out the divine treasures again. They started to accumulate energy, preparing for the most furious attack wave.

But suddenly, a light dot appeared in that hazy sky. That light dot wasn't dazzling, but everybody could see it clear enough.

The object projecting that halo was Feng Xiao's head without the body.

His ashen face still wore the most frustrated despair and fear, as if someone had skinned him alive, and he had experienced extreme tortures when he was alive.

Everybody felt their hair raising.

# Chapter 665: Naked provocation!

---

Feng Xiao's head trembled, and a light glowed slowly. People could see it clearer now.

At this moment, not only Lin Meng and Nie Ruo could see the head, but also could the warriors at Sky Realm and Nirvana realm.

It seemed when Feng Xiao was still alive, he had borne an extreme pain. His face was still filled with a deep fear, as if he had seen the most frightening thing in the world. It was so harsh he couldn't forget even if he were dead already.

People who saw the head felt an extreme fear swell in their hearts, as shivers ran down their spines. The raging thought of launching an attack ceased, as if someone had poured a bucket of cold water on it. Their enthusiasm vanished.

From ten miles away, True God Realm experts like Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang also saw the head, their faces becoming odd.

Under people's gaze, Feng Xiao's face suddenly twitched, cracking an eccentric smile.

Boom!

His head exploded. Blood splashed as if someone was using a brush, dipping it into the blood to write two big bloody words in the air.

COME HERE!

This was provocation!

Naked provocation!

Even if it were a stupid warrior, seeing these two bloody words, he could understand the malignant intention of the people in the city!

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang couldn't say anything, dropping their jaws in awe.



At this moment, shouldn't the people inside that city be frightened? Shouldn't they be anxious? Shouldn't they be desperate?

Why? Why didn't they seem to be afraid of anything or anyone?

Lin Meng, Nie Ruo, and Qin Gu Chuan seemed as if someone had slapped them furiously, stomping on their faces. They grimaced. This was the biggest humiliation they had ever received!

They dared to provoke them like that?

They had provoked the several-thousand-years old rulers of the Divine Great Land – the masters of the seven ancient factions!

"I can't help it!" Nie Ruo acted as he burst out with madness. He leaped up, grabbed the Ghostly Spirit Sword, and stormed forward, disappearing into that immense, hazy gray area.

Lin Meng, Qin Gu Chuan, and the others put on a gloomy and evil visage. They were hesitant. But afterward, they screeched and thundered strangely, taking out their divine weapons and jumping into that area.

They didn't care about being careful, making a strategy, or the whole picture. Everything was washed away from their heads.

Their blood was boiling. Their pride and reputation were stomped over, and they couldn't bear this. They forgot they should survey more carefully, swarming over the city like the barbarians with the only thought of killing.

"Too arrogant! Too arrogant! If they don't die, we will be enraged to death!" Wen Di's face reddened, thundering. "What the heck has Old Long chosen? Haughty! I've been in the Divine Great Land for so many years, but I haven't met any arrogant kid like him. Insane! A madman!"

"No wonder why Lin Meng couldn't stand them. They're too arrogant!" Yan Ke gritted her teeth. Her facial wrinkled twitched in rage, as a murderous intention rose in her heart.

The five True God Realm experts were so angry, as if someone had raided their ancestors' tombs. They weren't afraid of anything now, just jumping into the city to extend their slaughtering.

...

City center...

Shi Yan beamed a faint smile, his face freezing cold. "They come indeed. Turns out the so-called leaders of the seven ancient factions can get frenzied if someone stabs their sore spots."

"Well done!" Long Ying applauded, as she felt better now. "Although you look like a beggar, once you take action, you have a different charisma! I like it! Manly enough! Arrogant enough!"

"Little Ying, ah, your grandpa isn't dead yet. The most important thing in your life should be waiting for my permission. Don't let him charm you. He... is a crazy man! I'm not going to allow you to have a relationship with him!" Long Zhu's beard convulsed as he tried to nag his granddaughter with a dry cough.

However, smiling intention was sparkling in his eyes. He felt good, apparently.

Lin Meng and Nie Ruo had joined hands to hurt him. Everybody should be enraged in these circumstances. Although Long Zhu was a noble and self-control person, he was still a human. And, a human should take his revenge at the convenient time.

Seeing Lin Meng's group act like a snake that got stomped on its tail, getting agitated indignantly, he felt pretty comfortable, and he could spit on them too.

Might be because of his good mood, his pale face glowed a little bit. When he looked at Shi Yan, he felt that he was started to like this young man more and more.

Not long before, Long Zhu was still a wild, enthusiastic, young warrior. He used to stand prominently on the Divine Great Land, giving a headache to so many hotshots.

He seemed to return to those years, seeing the arrogant Long Zhu of that time.

In the Divine Great Land, during his youth, Long Zhu was titled the 'Devil Incarnate.' When he got older, he became concealed, and started to know how to consider the whole picture. He stopped messing around.

Looking at Shi Yan today, he felt he could see himself from his youth, having a marvelous feeling.

"I like him that way!" Long Ying chinned up, smiling until her eyes narrowed. She threw a punch into the air, talking cheerily. "Compared to him, Luo Yue and Yu Le are too weak!"

Stars twinkled in her beautiful eyes as she looked at Shi Yan. "Yan gege, you aren't married, are you? What do you think about me?"

Hearing her, Bing Qing Tong, Han Cui, and Li Feng Er became quite uncomfortable.

Shi Yan slightly shivered, but it wasn't because Long Ying had startled him. Shi Yan suddenly felt the mysterious energy rolling into his body. This was the second wave of power filtered by the mysterious martial spirit.

He had guided the first wave of mysterious energy to the Essence Qi halo to supplement it. The second wave was stronger. But at this moment, his Essence Qi was abundant; he didn't need to absorb more.

The silver city had attacked and killed many warriors of the seven ancient factions. The Essence Qi released from their dead bodies was massive, much more than his expectation. However, at this moment, he didn't want to use the strange energy to refine his body – he didn't have much time.

Thus, he considered, and then his eyes brightened. He extended both arms, holding Long Zhu in his embrace.

Long Zhu's senile body shivered, as a strange light shot out from his eyes.

"Ah!" Long Ying covered her mouth, let out a low scream. "Yan gege, you... What are you doing? Even if my grandpa doesn't approve of the marriage between you and me, you don't need to do that!"

Yang Tian Emperor's group was also surprised. They didn't know why he acted like that. However, they didn't react.

Only Long Ying was shouting, as she didn't understand anything. She thought that Shi Yan wanted to make Long Zhu agree with him or something. A strange feeling filled her maiden's heart and slowly enlarged.

"Phew phew!"

Long Zhu panted. His pale face started to glow, as a strange vitality was surging in his shriveled body.

Everybody was struck.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui reddened. They seemed to recall some romantic memories. They blushed, their eyes watery.

"This... This is the vigorous vitality!"

Li Zheng Rong was astounded on looking at Long Zhu. He suddenly shouted in a hoarse voice. "Old Long has recovered!"

Long Ying's soft body shivered. She couldn't hide her happiness. "How come? How could it be?"

Shi Yan put the old man down, while his eyes still sparkled smilingly. "Old Long has given us a lot. I just offered him a little as a small compensation."

Long Zhu was glowing healthily. He turned his head, looking at Shi Yan disbelievingly. He didn't say anything, but he understood.

Long Zhu knew Shi Yan had a big secret! The mysterious energy from Shi Yan had healed one-fifth of his damaged areas. His

tendons and vessels had received a new vitality.

"Old Long, if we can continue... if we have enough time, I can help you recover as before," Shi Yan cracked a smile.

Long Zhu was struck. His senile face was filled with joy and astonishment as he gazed at Shi Yan. "I was not wrong! Haha, I chose the correct path. I suddenly could confirm resolutely that we will be alright this time! We all will be safe and sound!"

Shi Yan just smiled, and didn't say anything.

Rumble Rumble!

However, explosions reverberated from outside the city center. Lin Meng and Nie Ruo gradually appeared. They were furiously attacking the city with the divine treasures.

Everybody still sank in the big fear. They discolored, but the fighting will arose in their eyes.

"Never underestimate them. Shi Yan, you must be careful. Yan Ke and Wen Di aren't easy to deal with. Be careful," Long Zhu advised.

"Okay, I know how mighty they are. I'm not too stupid to fight face to face with them. I will wear out their power. Wait until they are weakened and tired out, then I will give them a big surprise!"

...

The edge of the Perpetual Night Forest...

Bao Ao looked at the magic mirror floating in the sky, beaming a faint smile. "They've started. They do want to kill each other."

"Excellent!"

Leaders of other alien tribes grinned fiendishly.

"We can start now. Wait until we arrive, it's time to clean up everything." Bao Ao nodded, then signaled the Demon Clan's hotshots. "Move!"

"Wait a second!" At this moment, Comoros suddenly shouted. "Should we greet the owner of the Perpetual Night Forest first?"

Bao Ao and Jie Jie halted.

"Xuan Ming's the owner of this forest, the sage of the Monster Clan. If we trespass this place without telling him, the others won't notice, but it's Xuan Ming... I suppose we should pay him a visit." Comoros explained, his face grim. "Monster Clan's one of us. Although Xuan Ming rarely shows himself, I think he still pays attention. At least, we need to know his attitude... That old man isn't easy to talk with."

"Alright," Bao Ao nodded. "Xuan Ming's reputation has spread far enough. I also admire him. We should visit him then."

Leaders of the other four clans also agreed. They discussed a little bit and then changed the direction, heading towards Xuan Ming's Black Pool.

# Chapter 666: The Utmost Eight

---

Bao Ao, Jie Ji, and the four other leaders came to the Black Pool. They frowned, looking at the murmuring black water in the pool. The thick black smoke hovering year-round above the Black Pool was drawn away.

The pool was quiet. They didn't see any spiritual Qi moving or anything strange. However, right in the middle of the pool hovered a line: Do not damage wantonly!

Apparently, Xuan Ming wasn't here. He just left them a thought, as if he had known beforehand these people would visit him.

Comoros's face was as cold as water. He pointed his left index finger. A light circle rippled, entering the center of the pool and touching the line.

Shortly, a flow of soul energy twirled around his soul like a snake, trying to drag his soul into the pool. That soul energy carried an intent domain of 'Forbidding,' which could enter deep into people's soul and restrain it.

Comoros was good at using soul techniques, but his soul was still restrained. He suddenly felt chilled, as if many snowflakes were covering his body. His consciousness became hazy.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji, the leaders of the two ancient families of the Demon Clan, could see the fear in the others' eyes.

The Monster Clan wasn't good at using soul techniques; everybody knew it. According to common sense, even if Xuan Ming had supernatural abilities, he could never restrain Comoros.

Moreover, it wasn't he attacking himself; it was just a soul intent domain he had left. Comoros's soul was subdued so much that he couldn't wiggle even a bit.

From deep inside the eyes of the Dark Spirit Clan's leader, which reflected no emotions, a rainbow-like light sparkled, shooting

towards the Black Pool.

However, when the light touched the words, it was scattered, as if a thunderbolt had smashed it down.

The eyes of Kante, the leader of the Dark Spirit Clan, were disordered. Gray fine curves appeared on his body, tangling with each other. They formed a connection with the shattered light dots, pulling them back to his soul.

Corpse Chief of the Corpse Clan was still staying in his big coffin. However, he diffused a thick corpse Qi, expanding and covering the Black Pool.

Long afterward, the big coffin suddenly shook. Cracking sounds echoed from inside, as if someone was biting the bones. It was horrifying.

His corpse Qi dispersed, and couldn't be gathered again.

Three Yama Kings Abi, Hei Tian, and Hades stood still to protect the dim halo, inside which, an illusory image floated. It seemed to sense the movement of the Black Pool.

After a while, a trembling soul flow that only the three Yama Kings could feel was sent out from that dim halo.

Yama King Abi discolored in fright. He shouted. "Xuan Ming has taken one step into level 10. He understands how to use the Divine Domain. His intent domain can generate thought and send back to his body, even if he's ten thousand miles away."

Hearing him, Comoros and Kante of the Dark Spirit Clan shivered. Later on, their countenance restored to the normal state. The intent domain that had affected them scattered quietly.

The Black Pool was still quiet as usual.

The leaders of the five clans weren't so comfortable. Only Bao Ao and Jie Ji could pull themselves together shortly. Their eyes were calm and dark.



"I have never expected to see such invincible expert of the Monster Clan in this continent." Bao Ao pondered for a while and then spoke up again in a low tone. "No wonder! It's been so many years that we'd been sealed in the space cracks in the foreign land. The situations there were so harsh. Our realm and power couldn't progress, but degraded. Besides the Human Clan, the Monster Clan is one of the races that stayed in the Divine Great Land. They've had the chance to take the energy of this rich land."

Everybody nodded.

"Seems like we have to pay more attention to the Monster Clan. Xuan Ming had left a thought to warn us. He didn't want to stop our operation. This means he's moderate." Jie Ji rubbed his chin and then smiled. "Good though. We actually don't need the Monster Clan to join us. They've been with the Human Clan for so many years. As they didn't experience the pain we had to endure, they don't have a big resentment against Human Clan."

"Be careful. Don't damage this forest too much. This place... is the Monster Clan's territory anyway," said Bao Ao.

Leaders of the other four clans couldn't help but nod. Xuan Ming's intent domain had shown them the dangerous features of the land of the four Sage Beasts. They should be more cautious.

No matter what era it was, the Monster Clan was always one of the strongest clans.

During Antiquity Time, many races had been distinct through brutal wars. Even the most intimidating clan had to hide into the foreign land to preserve their bloodline. However, Monster Clan could stay unharmed in the Divine Great Land.

From this point, the intimidation of the Monster Clan wasn't just vain. Xuan Ming's mighty power had left a big impression on these people.

...

Inside the city...

The sky was immense and hazy. Countless barriers, formations, and restraints that naked eyes couldn't see were set up everywhere thickly.

Deep underground, tens of thousands of materials were piled up, releasing an impressive light. Streams of energy moved through the special channels to supply the barriers and formations, which made the Utmost Eight Purgatories City stand firm like a mountain.

When the True God Realm experts Lin Meng and Nie Ruo got into this place, they were dragged into a strange world. There were no sun, moon, or stars. They saw no mountains or rivers, but a tranquil, boundless area.

So many invisible restraints and barriers were operating silently. Lin Meng's team felt like they were sunk into a mud puddle. Invisible tentacles stimulated their meridians and nerves, making them irritated.

They all had the cultivation base of True God Realm, with a tremendous power. The energy in their bodies was like the erupting volcano. A tremendous energy fluctuated from them from time to time. They could even resonate their energy with that of heaven and earth to trigger that kind of power and creating unimaginable supernatural abilities.

However, when they entered this area, their senses and connection with the heaven and earth were forcefully cut off.

Their recognition seemed to fall into the endless darkness. The surroundings were pitch black; they couldn't see any object or any strange phenomenon.

Their soul energy was drained, and their Essence Qi was weakened. The vitality of their flesh body was subdued by some invisible principles. Gradually, they couldn't control their blood

and aura anymore.

Aging, weakening, and reducing, were the functions of the barriers and intent domain in this area. They could change the rules of Nature, making its energy turbulent.

Vaguely, the power of the barriers, restraints, and formations at eight different corners created eight doors that naked eyes couldn't see. However, souls could touch them.

These eight doors stood at six directions, including the East, West, South, North, Up, Down, while the other two constantly changed their locations. They formed the Utmost Eight Purgatories City, which was the mysterious feature of this city.

Lin Meng's group could feel this abnormality. They used their Soul Consciousness to survey the area, reaching the eight doors to find the way in.

They were holding sparkling divine weapons. Flows of vigorous energy surged around their bodies, creating some special shields to protect them.

...

Lin Meng came to the door in the West.

She was startled, her face grim. The Original Universe Returning Cauldron in her hands buzzed, as if it had spotted something strange.

A woman who looked identical to her appeared. She wore the same clothes, and had the same appearance and bearing. She even held the same Original Universe Returning Cauldron in her hands.

Lin Meng looked at the woman, her face coldly arrogant, as if she were the master of the Divine Great Land, and everybody had to submit to her. The aura of the other Lin Meng was totally similar to the original one. Even the Original Universe Returning Cauldron was magically similar.

At this moment, she was frightened. She frowned, as she thought that she was standing in front of a mirror.

Was the West Gate the mirror that could reflect her soul and her true colors?

Lin Meng beamed a faint smile and snorted, her eyes chilly.

In front of her eyes, the other Lin Meng laughed. Her laughter was clear. She rose her hand, flinging the Original Universe Returning Cauldron towards her.

Lin Meng discolored in fright. Her soft body shook, as an intense anxiety swelled in her heart.

When the other Lin Meng attacked, she was scared. The energy in her body started to drain quickly. Even the Original Universe Returning Cauldron felt strange to her.

However, the power that Lin Meng was using seemed to come from her body!

How should she fight in this case?

No matter she countered or not, she was already defeated.

The other Lin Meng was using her energy. If she countered her, her energy would drain faster. This meant that her power would be consumed by double. Moreover, she was facing someone who was as strong as her. She would have no chance to win.

Lin Meng's heart sank.

...

In a dark place out of the city center...

Nie Ruo brought the Ghostly Spirit Sword, going South as his soul sensed. He was startled. At the South Gate was the entrance of the thirty-six Exterminating Caves he was familiar with. The dark caves seemed to have many dark spirits.

Nie Ruo was surprised for a while. Suddenly, he found that he

had turned back to the time he was still a young man. At that time, to get the recognition, he had made up his mind and gone to the thirty-six Exterminating Caves.

In that year, he was just a kid who no one had favored in the Devil Valley. He just had the Nascent Realm cultivation base. His teacher was killed, and he had to survive alone in the Devil Valley. The girl he loved had left him, telling him he was trash. No one wanted him.

He knew he had no chance to grow. Eventually, he made up his mind. He should become outstanding or die anonymously.

Also, at that time, he had experienced many deadly situations in the thirty-six Exterminating Caves. However, he was so lucky to find the Ghostly Spirit Sword, which had been lost for so many years. It was the foundation for him to become the master of the Devil Valley and receive the others' acknowledgment.

He finally had the chance to overturn his fate. He always knew that if he couldn't get over that challenge, he would have perished already.

And today, he stood here, when a hand seemed to stir up time again. He was about to experience the pain he had carved into his heart that year for the second time.

# Chapter 667: Purgatory of heart

---

Qin Gu Chuan walked to the South Gate.

In his eyes, the South Gate was a small city. Silver Firmament City, the city he would never forget.

His wife and son stayed in this city. His son was just an innocent infant, and he loved him much more than his life.

However, at this moment, he came here to slaughter the civilians in this city

His superiority had assigned him to not let anyone in this city stay alive, including animals! Besides his wife and son, in this city, his wife's father was the traitor of the Heaven Temple.

His purpose was to kill all the living things in this city, including his wife, his son, and his wife's father!

It was a nightmare that never ended in his life!

It had been so many years, but he couldn't forget the vision of that year. He had a never-ending regret. He had dreamed about his wife and son getting killed countless of times.

It was his Mara, which had tortured him for the rest of his life. He had asked himself so many times whether or not he would kill them if he had another chance?

Today, his nightmare came true. He came to that city again.

Qin Gu Chuan stood in front of the city, blood trickling from his eyes in place of his tears. He was crying in silence. Looking at the city, his heart convulsed painfully. Mara was like a sharp saber cutting his body, giving him so many wounds.

The fight hadn't begun, but he got hurt severely.

...

Guan Hu came to the North Gate.

There was only one old man in a blood puddle. He had white hair outlining the face covered in blood. Deep sadness flashed in his eyes.

He would never forget this old man!

He was an orphan. Before he met this old man, he was just a little beggar. Every day, he had to struggle for food. He used to fight with dogs to save his steamed bun.

That old man had changed his life!

He taught him, and brought him to the Martial Spirit Palace so he could explore his potential. His teacher had decided to teach him, making him a successful warrior.

"Teacher!" Tears lingered in Guan Hu's eyes. He pulled his hair sorrowfully.

The old man looked at him. On the senile face, which had been worn out by the wind and fog of life, laid the deep despair. "Little Hu, do it. You come here to kill me, right? The poison you gave me still nibbles me from the inside. For the master position of the Martial Spirit Palace, you really want to do that? All because I didn't choose you?"

Tears rolled down on Guan Hu's face as he bit his lip until blood dripped. Looking at the old man, he clenched his fists. His fingernails dug deep into his palms, but he didn't notice it.

"Kill me. If you have the Martial Spirit Fruit Tree, the elders will recognize you. Isn't it what you want? Kill me. You will be the master of the Martial Spirit Palace."

The old man shivered continually like a flickering oil lamp that almost ran out of oil. "But, do you remember how pathetic you were that year? Do you remember who gave you all of this? The pledge you made when you bowed to me as your teacher... is it still in your head or you forgot it long time ago? Do you remember the joy when you followed me? You... are you sure you want to do

that?"

Guan Hu cried silently. Looking at that old man, he couldn't lift his hands.

...

Shi Yan, Yang Tian Emperor, and Li Zheng Rong stood in the city center, frowning, looking at the situation outside the city center. They saw the seven True God Realm experts Lin Meng, Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Nie Ruo, Lu Miao, Yan Ke, and Wen Di standing with bewildered countenances.

"This formation... is so evil," Yang Tian Emperor took a deep breath. He was frightened.

"The Utmost Eight Purgatories are the purgatories of the heart. Each of them will have to face the most painful choice of their life. Whether or not they can get over it, the result will still be sorrowful." Shi Yan said coldly. "To some persons, although they made a decision that year, they will still regret it for the rest of their life. If they can choose the second time, it's hard to say if they can get over that challenge. Sometimes, one could make up his mind for a painful choice in the past, but if he were given another chance to choose again, it isn't sure he could do that."

"... Purgatories are always purgatories," Li Zheng Rong exclaimed and then shook his head. "If it were me, I could never get over it."

Everybody would have times to make such painful choices in life. Nobody could avoid this. Some choices resulted in nothing. There was no 'correct' or 'wrong' there. No matter what they chose, they still had to bear the pain for the rest of their life.

But, they had to choose. Right or wrong, they had to decide anyway. No matter what the reason was, or whether one knew it was right or wrong, one had to opt something.

In the Utmost Eight Purgatories, what Lin Meng's team was encountering was the most painful option they had made in their



life.

Either destroying themselves or the true love they had, they were the choices that had given them a deep pain for the rest of their lives. They always wanted the time to return so they could have another chance to make it up. Lin Meng's team was struggling sorrowfully, doubting the choice they had made that year.

What they were facing was their own heart.

...

Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang, and the others stood ten miles away from them, their visages complicated.

Among this group, Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Yu Zhu felt uneasy the most. Seeing Lin Meng's group, the group of True God Realm experts, entering the city, they worried about how long Shi Yan could resist.

When Shi Yan determinedly left the Ice Emperor City, Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Yu Zhu always saw a figure occupying their hearts in their dreams, that they could never wash away.

Shi Yan was in the city. He was just ten miles far from them, but they felt he was somewhere on the horizon where they could never touch him.

They wanted to enter the city. However, they understood that once they went there, the seven ancient factions' warriors would gather to kill them all. They would never show them any mercy.

The reality was always cruel. They could see, but they couldn't touch what they wanted. This would leave people an ache in their hearts.

"Perhaps, we should have left with him that year. We've wasted so much time for nothing. The glorious time of a woman does not last long. We should have given up everything earlier." Leng Dan Qing pondered for a long time and then muttered.

Shuang Yu Zhu nodded. "If we can meet him again, I will never let him go. Even if he has to die, I want to be with him, whether he wants to take me with him or not."

Leng Dan Qing nodded heavily.

...

The group of seven ancient factions.

He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing had their minds as tangles as a bundle of threads. After Yan Ke had left, they always tried to press down their surging thoughts.

Their fortune wasn't bad. When the Endless Sea fell into chaos, these two had jumped into the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. After so many perilous events, they met Yan Ke and became her disciples. At this moment, their realms were all increased.

They were grateful to Yan Ke.

However, after Yan Ke and Shi Yan stood on the two opposite sides, they suddenly hated Yan Ke. Thinking about the other tedious events they had experienced, they felt more resentful.

However, they didn't dare to mention the friendship with Shi Yan. They didn't dare to expose their thoughts in front of Yan Ke.

They understood their teachers. They knew what she hated, what she liked. They didn't have any hope in her.

That year, when they decided to come to the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist, they knew someone had been famous in this land already. That man used to throw a big stone into the lake of their hearts, which they couldn't move no matter how hard they tried.

That was why they came here.

...

"Little Yan, are you sure?" Yang Tian Emperor frowned, his voice uncertain.

"Those people are all brutal and heartless. They could even kill their wives and children! I think the Utmost Eight Purgatories can't kill them. At most, it could hurt them." Shi Yan was calm. "But it's enough. Inside the Utmost Eight Purgatories, we won't be weakened. However, their realms will be oppressed. If they get hurt, they would be weaker."

Yang Tian Emperor nodded and smiled. "Seems like we need to battle at least once."

"Don't worry. After they break the Mara in their hearts, they will be weakened. Their realms could even reduce by two realms. The gap between our realms would be erased." Shi Yan beamed a faint smile.

Yang Tian Emperor nodded.

...

Boom!

A red light overflowed from the Original Universe Returning Cauldron. Lin Meng paled. She was weak, but she looked like a banshee killing herself, forcefully making a way.

Apparently, she was hurt severely. Her hair were disheveled, making her elegant figure of the past disappear. At this moment, she was more of a vixen than the rudest and unreasonable vixen. A divine light disordered in her eyes, and it seemed that her God Soul had also gotten hurt.

Killing oneself would be the most horrible experience to anybody. Even the owner of the Pure Land couldn't avoid this challenge.

Lin Meng had used her energy. Although she won, it wasn't an easy battle. She had consumed at least 70% of her power. Finally, she had to hurt her host soul to get rid of the purgatory.

At this moment, Lin Meng had only the power of a First Sky of True God Realm warrior.

However, Shi Yan's group didn't dare to underestimate her, because she still had a divine weapon. Lin Meng's realm wouldn't be degraded. Her understanding of heaven and earth had been quenched through many brutal battles. So, this purgatory couldn't weaken her real realm.

That was the advantage of hers Shi Yan's group was afraid of the most.

"Move!" Shi Yan observed for a while and then suddenly urged. Negative energy swelled in his acupuncture points. He took the lead, dashing towards Lin Meng. "Follow me. Don't leave the trail. Only staying on the trail saves you from the effects of the barriers and formations."

Yang Tian Emperor's group flew out immediately. They didn't dare to linger.

...

In a corner of the Perpetual Night Forest...

Yan Long, Xue Lie, Glacial Armor Giant Alligator, Silver-winged Sky Wolf, and Nine-headed Bird were walking back and forth worriedly. Many other beasts stayed near them. They all had a massive aura. Many of them had been refined by Shi Yan. Visible energy moved on their armors like small streams.

The five great experts of the Monster Clan were watching a small Black-ink Jade, waiting for the order which the jade would transmit.

"I'm sure Shi Yan is scolding us for not being brave and grateful. This is his most struggling time, and we are hiding here without giving him assistance. No! It's not acceptable! We are the Monster Clan, and we aren't the cunning humans. Repaying favors is the rule we always keep. He helped us, so we have to help him!" Yan Long shouted. Flame shot out from his body, making Xue Lie and Glacial Armor Giant Alligator stay away from him.

"Xuan Ming Big Boss doesn't say anything. So, I don't dare to mess... But, I want to go there and help him too," The Nine-headed Bird said with a begrudging complexion.

"Wait for him. Xuan Ming Big Boss asked us to wait for him. If he doesn't say anything, we can't act rashly." The Silver-winged Sky Wolf was calm. "Don't worry. I think Shi Yan won't die that easily. That brat is cleverer than anybody else. He has many tricks. I can feel it."

As the five leaders of the Monster Clan were discussing boisterously, the Black-ink Jade glowed.

The five people stepped forward. Just with a glance, they started to shout and yell at their soldiers. They were about to take action.

The Black-in Jade showed two words written in the Monster Clan's old language. "Get lost!"

# Chapter 668: Hit until she vomits the pellets!

---

Lin Meng had defeated herself. Although both her soul and body were hurt, her realm and experience wouldn't be damaged. And, she still had a divine treasure.

People who could defeat the challenge in their hearts were the ones who had dedicated their lives to practicing martial techniques. They had offered their will and their souls to the martial path. These people always had a will that helped them to not be afraid of anything. As they had something to hold on, they had to get their purpose by any means.

Lin Meng crossed the gate, but she was affected by the barriers and restraints, which had reduced her power massively.

This gave Shi Yan's team an opportunity. Otherwise, Lin Meng alone was enough to knock all of them down.

Lin Meng couldn't enter the city center just yet. The place was shining in front of her eyes, but if she wanted to get there, she had to get through several thousand small barriers and formations. She had to use her body to neutralize their powers.

As Lin Meng just got hurt badly, she didn't dare to trespass the area. Instead, she took out the magical pellets of the Pure Land and swallowed them to restore her power first. It would help her prepare for the next formidable attack.

At this moment, Shi Yan, Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, Bing Qing Tong, and Han Cui had reached her. They didn't say useless words, just attacking her right away.

In just a blink of an eye, many secret treasures flew out from the passages. Their halo was as radiant as the sunlight. Different types of energy impacted, exploding like earthquakes, bombarding towards Lin Meng.

Boom Boom Boom!

Lin Meng was like a rubber ball, falling and crossing through dozens of barriers after being hit by the energies and the secret treasures.

Each triggered formation blasted, releasing the seething purgatory energy from underground, pouring on her body.

An orange-red gauze cloak sparkled on her body all of a sudden. Small trees started to grow on this cloak, exposing their vibrant vitality with thick leaves and branches. Each blazing red leaf seemed to carry a kind of mysterious energy.

Countless beams of energy hit on the gauze cloak, but the small trees were still growing. They could see that the trees were using their branches to twine those beams of energy.

Lin Meng gripped the Original Universe Returning Cauldron. She snorted with a cold face, then gently shook the three legs of the cauldron.

The massive cauldron turned upside down, just like a big upside down bowl. Extremely furious gusts of wind came out from the mouth of the cauldron. They were like one thousand wind blades that could slash any kind of flesh body.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui were new in the True God Realm. Seeing the gusts coming, they felt their souls were tied and squeezed. A head-splitting headache attacked them.

The wind seized the chance and chased after the two women, as if it wanted to mince their bodies.

"Traitors!" Lin Meng shouted coldly. Energy surged from her soft body, pouring into the big cauldron.

The wind from the cauldron became fiercer.

"Watch out!" Li Zheng Rong's face changed dramatically. A Storage Ring glowed in his finger, as an ash-gray earth card flew out from the ring.

When the earth card appeared, the entire land gushed out with the rhythmic beats of the earth. The card gradually expanded into a thick earth-yellow wall, shielding in front of Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui.

At this moment, Shi Yan, Yang Tian Emperor, and the others were still urging their powers, releasing many seals and attacks, showering on the big cauldron. Under the fierce attack, the cauldron shook, causing the change of the astral wind's direction.

Crack Crack Crack!

The yellow earth wall created by Li Zheng Rong's card exploded at the locations where the astral wind cut through it.

The big part of the gust had deviated, but the remaining still crossed the defense of the earth wall, attacking Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui discolored in fright. They hastened to use the Ice Jade Technique, creating a clear ice layer covering their bodies in an attempt to defend the sharp gust.

"Go!"

When Shi Yan saw the dangerous situation, he sent a flow of his Soul Consciousness, and the Ice Cold Flame flew out, turning into a cold flame cluster that covered Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui.

As these two women hid in the passage, barriers and restraints didn't affect them. The Ice Cold Flame surpassed the astral winds, covering Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui.

With the extreme cold power of the Ice Cold Flame, Han Cui and Bing Qing Tong immediately turned into two thick ice sculptures, with a dozen meters thick ice layer.

Crack Crack Crack!

The wind blew the thick ice rock, causing chips of ice to be scattered.



Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui were solemn, urging their Ice Jade Technique to the max to defend.

The Ice Cold Flame assigned by Shi Yan was constantly releasing the icy energy. It recovered the damaged area, which kept the ice wall from being broken shortly.

At this moment, Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong were attacking the cauldron furiously. Storage Rings on Li Zheng Rong's fingers released several different colored lights. Spirit Grade secret treasures rumblingly shot toward the cauldron.

Di Shan's black wings moved slightly, as strange explosions echoed. His feathers darted out like arrows with black flames, coiling around Lin Meng's small hand, which was holding the Original Universe Returning Cauldron.

Yang Tian Emperor bit his lips. A ruby drop of Immortal Blood carrying a tremendous aura shot out, bringing the intent domain he had perceived in desperation. This power was intimidating!

As the three of them united and attacked her at the same time, Lin Meng couldn't endure. She had to use a part of her energy to defend against these three.

Shi Yan wasn't agitated; he was calm as usual. However, flames of anger appeared in his eyes. Negative energy rolled torrentially in his body. From each of his acupuncture points, strange tentacles jutted out. They were materialized from the negative energy.

When the tentacles appeared, his recognition of energies suddenly increased by one level.

Each active flow of energy moving around, and each different type of secret treasure with its energy had become pretty clear in his eyes. The energy's intensity and features had turned into numerous light dots that naked eyes couldn't observe, returning to this body through the tentacles. This helped Shi Yan not to miss any change around him.

Light dots shot out rapidly from his eyes that looked like a soul burning flame.

He didn't even blink, gazing at Lin Meng. Gradually, a red hue rose from the bottom of his eyes.

A subtle recognition ran to his host soul through the tentacle that was connected with his acupuncture point.

Shi Yan was struck with joy. His hands trembled, since he had received a heavy energy. He fiercely condensed the two extreme poles of energy.

Life and Death.

It was time!

Life Seal and Death Seal merged, piling in the air. A Death Will generated from the seals, pushing out rumblingly like a real mountain.

The Death and Life Seal flashed, then disappeared, as if it had crossed space. When it reappeared, it struck precisely on the center of the connection between Lin Meng and her Original Universe Returning Cauldron.

It was Lin Meng's left elbow, which had generated a feeble energy fluctuation. Each fluctuation connected to the big cauldron and manipulated the changing energy of the cauldron.

Shi Yan had caught it.

That fluctuation was the deep connection between Lin Meng and the cauldron. Once he hit it, Lin Meng would lose her connection with the Original Universe Returning Cauldron.

Crack!

The Death and Life Sea imprinted on the bone of Lin Meng's left elbow like a tattoo. A clear cracking sound echoed. Lin Meng's bone seemed as if it were broken by a steel weapon.

In the next moment, the Original Universe Returning Cauldron

that Lin Meng was holding suddenly flew around, as the control was lost. It hovered and circled above Lin Meng's head without a specific target.

The astral wind in the cauldron also lost its target. It blew and twirled everywhere else. Numerous wind blades cut through the barriers and formations, breaking some of them.

Crack Crack Crack!

The ice layer covering Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui was cracked. But, the cracking stopped at ten meters away from them.

Cold sweat soaked the two women, as fear appeared deep in their eyes. They hastened to step backward before urging their energy again to get rid of the ice defense.

"Hit!" Shi Yan shouted fiercely. However, his face was calm as usual.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong suddenly found the power in Lin Meng's body was disordered. The red-orange cloak seemed to have no energy anymore, becoming an ordinary garment.

Different kinds of energies from the secret treasures fell on her gauze cloak. It appeared as if many punches had hit on Lin Meng's petite body. Blood trickled from her mouth, while more than ten pellets that she hadn't digested yet were vomited out.

"They are all Sacred Great spiritual medicines! Shi Yan, take them!" Li Zheng Rong suddenly shouted.

Pellets Lin Meng spat out were as big as a broad bean, shimmering in a mesmerizing halo with vibrant vitality. They were floating in the barriers and formations like small pieces of stars.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He didn't say anything, and immediately urged a formation.

People then saw a pair of delicate small hands generated from energy taking the pellets and flying back to the city.

In the center of the city, Yang Zhuo, Ling Meng, Cao Qiu Dao, and Fan Xiang Yun were surrounding Long Zhu. They suddenly found some pellets falling from above their heads. These pellets had surging energy, which indicated that they were all the Sacred Grade pellets, the best things to recover wounds.

Pure Land was one of the strongest forces in the Divine Great Land. As they had been in the continent for several thousand years, no one could predict how rich they were. As the master of the Pure Land, the medicine Lin Meng had shouldn't be normal.

"Let Old Long eat them!" Shi Yan's cold voice sent to them from the exploding place outside the city.

Long Ying's eyes brightened. She collected the pellets as if she were collecting treasures. Smile filled her small face. "Shi Yan, well done! They're all Sacred Level Pellets! Haha, hit her. Hit her until she vomits all that she ate!"

# Chapter 669: Changes in earth and heaven !

---

Blood covered Lin Meng's face. She looked sad, as if she had lost her son. Slowly, an extreme hatred emerged in her pupils.

She had stashed those pellets for hundreds of years. If it weren't the critical moment, she would never waste them. However, she had spat out one-third of the pellets she swallowed. They were all Sacred Grade medicines she had collected for so many years. They were the treasures of the Pure Land.

She hadn't absorbed the energy from the pellets yet, and she was walloped enough to make her vomit them out. It was a slap on her face which struck dozens of times. It was so hard to press such pain and rage.

Lin Meng felt as if she wanted to burst out crazy.

However, what got on her nerves badly was the disconnection between her and the Original Universe Returning Cauldron.

At this moment, Shi Yan, Yang Tian Emperor, and the others were swarming towards her. They were about to risk their lives against her.

Without the Original Universe Returning Cauldron, she couldn't depend on her realm to perform the subtle attacks. Now, she could only depend on the remaining energy in her body.

However, she had just swallowed the pellets, and hadn't absorbed the energy from them yet. At this moment, her power was weakest!

Shi Yan's group had seized the chance. They didn't hesitate to attack her maliciously.

Different miraculous powers that looked like different halos covered Lin Meng's petite body shortly. She was like a leaf boat in

the seething ocean. Dangers were everywhere, and the seawater could devour her at any minute.

...

Nie Ruo had experienced the challenge of the thirty-six Exterminating Caves again. After he could finally get rid of the Mara, he was physically and mentally exhausted.

Just like that year, he was tired out like a panting dog. His vitality was worn out. He collapsed at the entrance of the caves.

Thirty-six ghostly spirits of the Ghostly Spirit sword were releasing their evil energy constantly to supplement his consumed energy.

Typically, he always supplied his blood and flesh to these thirty-six ghostly spirits. If this case happened, it was only in one situation – he had no Essence Qi anymore.

To break that mental challenge, he had to spend a bloody price.

When Lin Meng got rid of her challenge, she had consumed two-thirds of her energy, and her soul got hurt. In his case, he lost it all! The Essence Qi halo in his body disappeared completely, with nothing remaining. Even his soul was like a dried well. Seemed like his soul was about to vanish.

He was lucky that he had spent so many years to feed the thirty-six ghostly spirits with his blood and flesh. At the most critical moment, this divine weapon started to give him back part of power he had contributed to them.

Nie Ruo stood up, getting into the South Gate.

At first glance, he saw Lin Meng with blood covering her face. The Original Universe Returning Cauldron seemed to have turned into an unowned object. It was floating above her, but it couldn't help her with anything.

Nie Ruo's heart sank. He revealed his fright for the first time.

Shi Yan... Was he really that dangerous?

Lin Meng was the strongest among them. Looking at her distressed appearance, he understood that she had endured hardships. What was that kid's profile? How could he do that?"

Nie Ruo suddenly regretted. He regretted that he didn't put Lie Feng's reminder in mind, and was so stubborn with his idea.

Lie Feng was his disciple. However, Lie Feng's experience was totally different from his. That kid was an inborn genius of the Devil Valley. Lie Feng's natural endowment was several times better than his. His sensibility was somehow really precise. Also, he was lucky enough that he had met almost no obstacles on his cultivating way.

From deep in his heart, he was jealous of this disciple, because the way he had taken to become the master of the Devil Valley was full of dangers at each step.

More importantly, Lie Feng had a unique point of view towards a situation. Later on, the reality proved his assumptions were all correct.

This was different from Nie Ruo. It seemed each decision he made was correct. However, it often turned out badly with many troubles.

Lie Feng used to tell him that Shi Yan wasn't an easy opponent. In the future, this guy might become the overlord of a place in the Divine Great Land. He could surpass Lin Meng soon.

But, he didn't believe him.

Nie Ruo had always had troubles during his whole life. That was why he hated the innate talents, including Lie Feng, the disciple he favored the most!

However, the situation was going on the track his disciple had predicted. He figured out sorrowfully that he was wrong again.

He was grudging!

He wanted to overturn this mess!

He wanted to prove that growing through challenges for many years like he'd done was the experience the warrior should have. It should be the natural trend of the martial path.

That was why he stormed forward immediately. He wanted to help Lin Meng overturn the whole sky to prove himself, to prove that his efforts during his whole life were correct. He didn't believe in 'inborn talents.' He believed that Mother Nature was fair to everybody.

Seeing the situation going on the track of his thought, Shi Yan calmed down. However, Nie Ruo appearing here had broken his calm mind.

Shi Yan slightly changed his visage, shouting. "Nie Ruo comes! Take Lin Meng down for me!"

Yang Tian Emperor's group tried their best. They didn't dare to hesitate, nor were they afraid of getting hurt. Their attacks became more furious.

...

Outside the city...

Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang, and the others were watching the battle in the city center. They became grimmer as they felt something wrong.

According to common sense, if the pagans were gazing at them, he and Yu Wan Jiang should have sensed something.

But it wasn't like that.

He and Yu Wan Jiang had some surveying secret treasures. They always paid attention to any movement from a thousand miles away. However, up till now, they hadn't detected the alien tribes' direction of movement.



"Something's strange. Why can't we see the pagans coming? When Yan Ke and Wen Di got here, they told us that the alien tribes were marching towards the Perpetual Night Forest, didn't they?" Yu Wan Jiang couldn't help but frown.

Yun Hao had soon sensed something strange. Hearing him, he replied quickly, "Did you feel anything?"

"No," Yu Wan Jiang shook his head.

Although the pagans didn't come, they couldn't cheer up. Quite the contrary, their moods were much heavier than before.

This meant... something has gone beyond their control. Seeing a situation they couldn't control, everybody would feel tense and anxious.

Suddenly, a strident screech came out from Yu Wan Jiang's sleeve.

Yu Wan Jiang's face changed dramatically. He put the other hand into the sleeve, as if he were trying to listen to something.

His face suddenly became dark and gloomy.

"What's going on?" Yun Hao was frightened.

"They blocked the entrance to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain!" Yu Wan Jiang couldn't endure it. His voice trembled. "The hotshots of the alien tribes! They didn't try to break in, but they have sealed the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. We... can't go back!"

Yun Hao's face was ash-gray. He shouted, "How could it be? Only Human Clan knows the entrance to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. How could the pagans spot it out?"

Yu Wan Jiang suddenly thought of a possibility, then shuddered.

"Some of us have been with the pagans beforehand!" Yun Hao said ahead of him. His heart sank as he scratched his head in distress. "Damn it! Someone is so shameless. Didn't they know that it isn't different from massacring the entire humanity?"

"Fish mingles with dragons in our group. We have many types of people. Many have joined us from different corners of the Divine Great Land. When the pagans attacked them, in a situation where they couldn't avoid death, using their lives to entice them is possible," said Yu Wan Jiang miserably.

"Old Long!" Yun Hao suddenly shouted. "Old Long's right! He's right! Our Ice and Fire Secret Domain isn't safe enough. It can't ensure the everlasting flame of our Human Clan!"

Yu Wan Jiang was struck. He seemed to comprehend the whole picture shortly.

"They're still fighting! They're still fighting!" Yun Hao's mood was agitated to the acme. "Old Long was right! I know he's always right! We're wrong! It's us who made the wrong decision! Damn it! Lin Meng's team is still besotted. How could we continue this fight?"

"We should get into the city. If Shi Yan knows the situation, perhaps... he will accept us," said Yu Wan Jiang. "In the Perpetual Night Forest today, only this place can be considered a line of defense. The entrance of the Ice and Fire Secret Domain is blocked. If the traitors support the pagans, they will enter the domain shortly. People who stay there can only be dead or enslaved."

Yun Hao was dumbstruck.

...

"Damn! The alien tribes have blocked the entrance!" Xue Mu from the seven ancient factions shouted in fright. His face was distorted in distress.

While they were looking at the city center, many people of that crowd who wanted to kill Shi Yan had received the news. They faced the sky and yelled. Their hearts were all cold and desperate.

Everybody knew what it meant!

The Ice and Fire Secret Domain was the root of their survival. It

was the safest area in the Divine Great Land. Because of having this safe base, the Human Clan dared to resist the alien tribes, as they weren't afraid that the pagans could extinguish their flame of hope!

However, the entrance was occupied at this moment.

Only Human Clan's members knew where the entrance was. And, they had set up many barriers to prevent intruders. Unless it was one of them, other people would never find it.

They knew what this meant.

There were some traitors in their organization! Someone had submitted to the pagans, the spoiled humans who had joined the alien tribes to eradicate the Human Clan!

These people deserved more hatred than Shi Yan's group, as they wanted to uproot the base of humanity!

"What should we do?"

"What to do?"

"What should we do?"

Anxious voices bloomed among the big crowd. Everybody was scared. They felt the helpless and desperate feeling for the first time in this calamity.

At this moment, no one could stay calm. No one was completely fearless. No one was still confident.

Their families and friends still stayed in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. When the pagans intruded the domain, would they have the fighting will to counter?

Who dared to attack when his wife and children were hostages? How many people wouldn't care about their families?

Even if they could fight, would they win? Could they stay alive from the attack of the five great alien tribes? Deep despair appeared in their eyes. At this moment, they finally recognized

what kind of a sh\*tty decision they had made.

# Chapter 670: Engulf!

---

Lin Meng and Nie Ruo were fighting outside the city center. When these two joined hands, Shi Yan's team had their pressure doubled.

Fortunately, they had tired out Lin Meng's power a lot. At this moment, she was like a dying lamp, and the connection between her and the cauldron was cut off.

Nie Ruo wasn't in his peak state either. The price to break the challenge in his heart was much more than what Lin Meng had paid. At this moment, he had to depend on the energy returned to him from the Ghostly Spirit Sword, which wasn't enough to scare Shi Yan's team.

Cao Qiu Dao and the others had come out from the city to join the force to deal with Nie Ruo and Lin Meng.

Shi Yan's negative energy emitted terrifyingly. He now had a clear cognition of every change of energy in the surroundings, as if he had many invisible eyes. He could see every beam of energy, which could help him grab even the tiny weaknesses of Lin Meng and Nie Ruo.

The Star Execution was activated. Starlight twirled around him gloriously like the Milky Way. Using his soul to control it, Shi Yan manipulated the starlight streams to coil around Lin Meng and Nie Ruo.

Negative energy fiercely poured into the Death and Life Seal, carrying the Intent Domain of Death and Life. It turned into many heavy mountains, dashing towards the other two.

At the same time, he had accumulated his energy to create the Gravitational Field. As long as it was the energy he could use, he didn't hesitate to urge it at all.

Shi Yan had a sturdy build, and many different evil changing

energies. Moreover, he wasn't afraid of death. In the battle with Lin Meng and Nie Ruo, he wouldn't fall to the weak side.

However, his side still had Yang Tian Emperor, Li Zheng Rong, Di Shan, Bing Qing Tong, and Han Cui. They were using many types of energy and secret treasures, circling the area. Moreover, this place had many barriers, restrictions, and formations, that weakened them.

Shi Yan had soon entered the Third Sky of Rampage Realm.

Although his soul was clear and calm, his face was ferocious, with two bloodshot eyes. Each flow of his negative energy was like a beam of light, releasing the pressure to the environment.

"Seven Stars Brilliant World!"

Shi Yan shouted. The light twirling around his body suddenly gathered into seven fist-sized stars. Each star looked like a big, dazzling diamond.

Moving in the trajectory of the Big Dipper, the seven stars rotated, crossing through the chaotic energy field outside the city center. It seemed they had pulled the power of the stars in the sky to use. The everlasting star intent domain emitted from each star.

The seven stars had formed a magical formation which could connect and use the power of the galaxy. In a fraction of a second, star power from the starry sky descended.

Wonderful light exploded, mingling with the mysterious starlight. Nie Ruo and Lin Meng were trapped in the star sea. They felt like they were teleported to the outer space. They lost their direction, and couldn't gather the energy in their bodies.

"GO!"

Shi Yan pointed to the ground and shouted.

A beast made of top-grade Essence Crystals soared up from underground. This crystal beast was created following the Ghost

Hunter's true form. Scales covered its entire body, with many strange, sharp thorns. It looked brutal and giant.

As soon as this crystal beast emerged, it shot towards Lin Meng and Nie Ruo. Lin Meng didn't react timely, and the beast blew her away for a hundred meters. Her petite body rolled on the ground, and blood quickly covered her.

The thirty-six ghostly spirits flew out from Nie Ruo's hands like thirty-six gray chains attached to his body. Their aura was so frightening that it shook people's hearts and souls.

These thirty-six ghostly spirits were condensed in the Exterminating caves for several thousand years to gain intellect. They were the most unpredictable and vilest powerful creatures in this world.

Ghostly spirits shrieked, flying around Shi Yan's team. They seemed to want to feast on their flesh bodies.

"Six Sacred Armors!"

Li Zheng Rong shouted all of a sudden. A Storage Ring flew out from his finger. Six beast puppets appeared, protecting him from six different sides.

These six puppets were forged from many types of rigid metals. Although they weren't as intimidating as the War Devil, their aura was strong and frightening.

When these puppets appeared, they were ready to die for their master. The fire of Karma burned furiously from them as they shielded Li Zheng Rong. These flames were the human flame that Li Zheng Rong was innately gifted with. He had added the earth flame into these flames too. Although it wasn't as magical as the heaven flame, its energy wasn't too weak.

Li Zheng Rong was an alchemist. All outstanding alchemists had the human flame, which was fundamental to their career.

Six beast puppets shielded Li Zheng Rong, preventing the ghostly

spirits from attacking him. Afterward, Li Zheng Rong sent his order to them, asking them to attack Nie Ruo.

Shi Yan seized the chance. His seven stars sparkled, surrounding Nie Ruo together with the six puppets.

Shi Yan could see that Nie Ruo's state wasn't as strong as Lin Meng. Compared to killing Lin Meng, killing Nie Ruo was a better choice.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Bing Qing Tong, and Han Cui cooperated tactfully. They used many secret treasures and energies to attack Nie Ruo together.

Nie Ruo was dependent on the Ghostly Spirit Sword to maintain his energy. Shortly, he had to bear all the pressure for Lin Meng. Under the attack wave, he didn't dare to attack anymore, just wanting to pull the ghostly spirits back to him. He used the Ghostly Spirit Sword to defend the attack.

The ghostly spirits suddenly emitted a thick murderous aura. Thirty-six ghostly spirits lined up around him and looked like thirty-six Exterminating caves. They seemed to form some eccentric, evil formation.

Ghostly Spirit Sword was a divine weapon. It could attack and defend well. When it attacked, it was as sharp as a spear. And when it defended, it was tougher than a steel wall. Thirty-six Exterminating caves were the most mysterious area of the Devil Valley. They contained the evil energy of heaven and earth. Nie Ruo was using the thirty-six ghostly spirits to model the thirty-six Exterminating caves. It wasn't just for fun.

When the attacks fell into the thirty-six caves, they would move through all the caves. After traveling through each cave, their energy would reduce.

Moving through the caves for a while, the attack energy was drained.



Nie Ruo hid in the thirty-six Exterminating caves, and they couldn't see him anymore.

However, Shi Yan could use the formation of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City to locate Nie Ruo precisely. He knew that Nie Ruo was constantly changing his position. He never stopped at a cave for more than a minute.

It was a divine weapon indeed. Nie Ruo had his mind interlinked with the Ghostly Spirit Sword, and he had nurtured it with his own blood and flesh. At this critical moment, even if he were a dying flame, it was still hard enough to kill him.

Suddenly, Shi Yan's team didn't know where they should attack him.

From the other side, the crystal beast was still bombarding Lin Meng. That beast had a flow of Shi Yan's soul, so it could control the barriers and formations of this Utmost Eight Purgatories City. While fighting with Lin Meng, it often used the power of the barriers exquisitely. As Lin Meng had to struggle to resist the crystal beast, she couldn't create any threat to Shi Yan.

Divine weapon...

Shi Yan frowned, looking at the miracle of the Devil Valley. He found that he couldn't attack the thirty-six Exterminating caves or force Nie Ruo to show himself.

At this moment, Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao had reached the critical time. They could break the mental challenge to get out at any minute.

If they couldn't knock Nie Ruo and Lin Meng down shortly, once Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and Lu Miao got here, Shi Yan's team couldn't resist this force.

They didn't have much time.

Staying quiet for three seconds, Shi Yan gazed at the Blood Vein Ring, the ring that had brought him so many miracles at the most

critical times. He got this precious treasure right when he had just entered the Grace Mainland, a spiritual treasure that he couldn't understand.

"Help me break the Exterminating caves!" Shi Yan sent his thought to the Blood Vein Ring, then flung it towards the thirty-six Exterminating caves created by Nie Ruo.

He didn't consider much, since he knew the Blood Vein Ring contained a mysterious soul. It was the Ring Spirit, which had a life, and was actually a high-grade life. Although Shi Yan had never talked to that living being, he knew it existed. Moreover, it was super strong.

The Blood Vein Ring turned into a blood light falling into the Exterminating caves under Shi Yan's pushing power.

Suddenly, the connection between him and the Blood Vein Ring disappeared. He didn't know whether it was the effect of the Exterminating caves or the Blood Vein Ring had gathered all of its energy and temporarily cut the connection with him.

In short, although he was the master of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City, he couldn't locate the Blood Vein Ring.

However, Shi Yan still sensed Nie Ruo's location. He knew that Nie Ruo changed his location continually, as if he was trying to avoid something. Shi Yan could even feel that Nie Ruo had seen something really terrible.

"Ah!"

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Li Zheng Rong cried in astonishment.

Under their gaze, two of the thirty-six caves disappeared into thin air.

Shi Yan gawked. Divine light shot out from his eyes, gazing at the Exterminating caves.

The Exterminating caves in this place weren't the real ones. They were created by the energy of the ghostly spirits. A cave disappearing meant one ghostly spirit had vanished.

That's why Nie Ruo was frightened. He found that his ghostly spirits had perished.

Under their attentive looks, the thirty-six Exterminating caves disappeared one after another. After ten seconds, around ten caves had disappeared. What did that mean? That means something could kill or... swallow one ghostly spirit in each second!

Everybody suddenly recalled that Shi Yan had flung a ring into these caves.

The Ghostly Spirit Sword was a famous divine weapon in the Divine Great Land. Nie Ruo had used this sword to become the master of the Devil Valley that year. After he had fused with the Ghostly Spirit Sword, he could swagger in the area, and had almost no rival.

What grade that ring was at? How could it make the ghostly spirits disappear in each second?

Everybody was bewildered as they looked at Shi Yan instinctively. Suddenly, they felt this young man was too mysterious.

Eventually, Shi Yan could connect with the Blood Vein Ring again. He laughed because he knew Nie Ruo was done. That man had no support now.

# Chapter 671: Behead!

---

The Exterminating caves of the thirty-six ghostly spirits all disappeared.

Shi Yan finally reconnected with the Blood Vein Ring, and found thirty-six dim gray shadows in there. He knew they were the ghostly spirits.

The Blood Vein Ring had engulfed them all!

The Blood Vein Ring floated silently in the space of chaotic energy. A red light flashed, making it look like a strange eye, giving people an eccentric feeling.

Nie Ruo held the Ghostly Spirit Sword, standing there with a pale face. There was no divine light in his eyes anymore.

The Ghostly Spirit Sword had lost all the ghostly spirits. I was no longer a divine weapon anymore. Its power was reduced by 70%-80%. Now, it was just a sharp, longsword with no aura or magical effects.

Nie Ruo wanted to vomit blood. His throat felt irritated, which was a sign of extremely exhaustion. In the next moment, he would have no power.

Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan were startled. They maintained a distance with the Blood Vein Ring; they were afraid of that ring.

It was terrible!

The Ghostly Spirit Sword was a Divine Grade weapon. However, that ring had used around ten seconds to make the Exterminating caves disappear, washing away all the fluctuations of the evil energy.

They all saw what had happened, but they weren't so sure still. They knew it was because of the Blood Vein Ring, but they didn't know how it did that.

Shi Yan extended his hand and waved. The Blood Vein Ring returned like a bird returning to its nest, falling in his palm. Shi Yan put it on his finger.

The Inner World Five Devils dormant in his Sea of Consciousness suddenly woke up, as if they had smelled delicious food. They followed his arm to get into the Blood Vein Ring, then started to swallow the thirty-six ghostly spirits.

Lately, the Inner World Five Devils weren't the opponents of the thirty-six ghostly spirits. When they had just started the battle, the Five Devils had gotten hurt badly.

However, thirty-six spirits were subdued in the Blood Vein Ring. They couldn't even move. They could only shift in fear, not letting the Inner World Five Devils engulf them.

Shi Yan could feel clearly that his Inner World Five Devils, which had been created by negative energy, were quickly swallowing all thirty-six ghostly spirits. The soul energy of the ghostly spirits was drained rapidly.

The wounded Five Devils had restored themselves, and their aura and energy surged vehemently.

Nie Ruo's face turned ash-gray. He stood there motionlessly, as if he had lost his soul. Fear and despair swelled in his heart.

"Kill him!" Shi Yan smiled brightly, pointing at Nie Ruo.

Yang Tian Emperor's team screamed and swarmed over, surrounding Nie Ruo. Just like they were slaughtering a domestic animal, Nie Ruo was dismembered, being smashed into meat pulp.

Without the ghostly spirit, Nie Ruo's no longer had any bit of energy in his body, and the Ghostly Spirit Sword had become a normal sword. He couldn't be a threat to Shi Yan anymore.

Shi Yan quietly released the Soul Gathering Pearl, and a strange suction force emitted from the bead. Nie Ruo's soul at the Second Sky of True God Realm trembled in the air just like a tipsy man,

floating towards the Soul Gathering Pearl.

Swoosh!

After Nie Ruo's soul got into the dark bead, it then sparkled with a black light.

It was the indication of abundant soul energy contained in the bead.

Shi Yan was joyful. He smiled, as he knew that with Nie Ruo's soul, he could let four or five people use the Creator's Divine Pond break through again. Nie Ruo's soul alone was enough to support that magical formation for quite a long time.

At the same time, an enormous flow of Essence Qi in Nie Ruo's flesh body was gathering into streams of invisible energy, starting to roll into Shi Yan's body.

Acupuncture points all over his body swelled, as the negative energy hovered around him and didn't disperse. It looked like a white mist expanding for more than ten meters in just a blink. He was covered with that white mist, and the others could only see his figure vaguely.

Lin Meng's heart fell. Her soft body now bore many cuts, and blood splashed everywhere.

It was the work of the crystal beast. Since this beast was made of the top-grade Essence Crystals under this city, it could promote its power in the effective zone of the barriers and formations inside the city. These formations didn't hamper, but enhanced its power.

Although a crystal beast wasn't Lin Meng's opponent, her wound was too severe, and she couldn't control the Original Universe Returning Cauldron.

Lin Meng felt hurt and distressed. She could only dodge the attack, as she didn't even have any extra energy to counterattack.

At that point, she saw Nie Ruo falling!

She wanted to help him, but she had no means. At the moment when Nie Ruo's body exploded, Lin Meng felt a deep resentment rising in her heart.

Why did they have to mess with this brat?

This was the first time she felt regret.

"Let's welcome the master of the Pure Land, who never ages. Let her see our warm hospitality!" Shi Yan said calmly, but his eyes were cold.

However, Lin Meng seemed to have her heart hit, her face ashen.

It was just a crystal beast, but it was enough to make her struggle so much. How long could she endure when Yang Tian Emperor and Di Shan joined it?

Yang Tian Emperor's group, of course, wouldn't regard Lin Meng. Hearing Shi Yan, they immediately attacked her. Energies and secret treasures shot towards Lin Meng like a shower.

Lin Meng was trembling like a willow catkin. Her wounded body was like a flickering candle in the strong wind, that could get extinguished at any moment.

"Meteors chasing the Moon!"

Shi Yan gathered the power of the stars. Countless beams of starlight gathered in the void, creating a gorgeous flaming star tail. It made a beautiful curve in the air, carrying the intent domain of the eternal star, moving in the trajectory of the stars in the sky as it shot towards Lin Meng.

At the same moment, he squinted, accumulating three flows of pure thoughts.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Sounds of weapons tearing the air echoed, but they couldn't see the weapons. Three flows of cold and gloomy auras appeared. However, they weren't idle, and they could avoid the sensing of

Soul Consciousness.

Extreme anxiety arose in Lin Meng. She spat out a mouthful of blood, then started to urge her remaining power of the Third Sky of True God Realm one more time.

A cold, jade-like sparkling stone chamber appeared next to her. It was made of her energy with pure aura, a little bit humid air, and refreshing atmosphere. It gave people an intent domain of a beautiful and quiet place.

The attacks of Yang Tian Emperor's team were scattered when they touched the small jade chamber.

The roof of that chamber was decorated with many strange and exquisite crystals, as light rings rippled from it.

Boom!

The Meteor hit the chamber shortly, making it tremble. This tremor made many crystals fall off the roof.

Right after that, the three Bone Thorns which were as sharp as the fang of a Demogorgon furiously thrust at the small chamber.

Puff!

Three small holes appeared on the room. Lin Meng shivered inside the room, as blood trickled from the corners of her mouth, rolling on her chest.

After this strike, Lin Meng had used up her remaining energy. The energy of the three Bone Thorns had attacked her soul just like maggots entering her bones. She shivered in the chill. The pure thought she had struggled to condense vanished.

She failed to connect with the Original Universe Returning Cauldron again. She could see the cauldron not far from her, but she couldn't summon it.

Shi Yan's attack happened precisely. Whenever she wanted to connect with the Original Universe Returning Cauldron, the most



furious energy would forcefully tear her effort apart.

Lin Meng's tough will was on the edge of getting shattered after several strikes. She couldn't even gather the hope to live. Eventually, she had a desperate thought of failure.

When the warriors engaged in a battle, aura and will were the most important matters, much more than realms and powers. What Shi Yan had aimed at were these two features. He had pushed the master of the Pure Land to the edge, giving her a feeling of defeat.

When this feeling arose in her heart, Lin Meng's realm was affected. After several failed attempts, she seemed to be defeated.

"Lin Meng's over."

After Qi Tian Oldie Long Zhu had eaten more than ten pellets, his face glowed gradually. He sat upright in the city center, facing up to watch the battle over there. "Her realm's started to get disordered. The realm of a warrior is his root. It's connected to the host soul, and it shouldn't be shaken easily. Her aura, Qi, and soul energy are all exhausted. The formation has affected her. Her soul got damaged in that mental challenge. And now, as Shi Yan's bombarding her, her conscience is torn."

Yang Xue, Cao Zhi Lan, and Long Ying didn't understand it at all, but they were surprised.

Long Zhu beamed a smile and then explained. "Simply put, what Shi Yan has destroyed are her innermost feelings. A warrior with a strong inner world won't be affected by pressure during fighting. Once her inner world is broken, the others can subdue her. At that time, she can't perform her best magical attacks."

"Oh wow, that guy is so cruel!" Long Yin was happy.

Long Zhu glared at her and harrumphed, then said, "It's smart, girl. Only the smart ones can recreate a mental challenge from the opponent's inner world. Especially when he fights with someone

whose realm's higher than his, he has to defeat his opponent's mentality first in order to win."

Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang, Bei Si, Bei Di, and Zhu Yi had crossed the crowd of the seven ancient factions, who were still sinking in the fighting mood, to reach the outer area of the city center.

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang exchanged looks. They leaped up, heading to the city center and raising their voices.

Xia Qing Hou, Bai Gen Seng, and the others were outside the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. Their powers had been drained in the purgatories.

They couldn't get through the eight doors, but it didn't affect their vision.

They could see Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor's team were attacking Lin Meng furiously.

Lin Meng would be killed at any minute.

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang threw each other a glance and shouted. "Please show mercy!"

Shi Yan frowned from behind the gates of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City, then shook his head indifferently. "Cut."

A blood thread flashed on Yang Tian Emperor's left hand. It coiled Lin Meng's neck then tied it tightly

Puff!

Lin Meng's head fell off her white neck. From the flat cut, blood gushed out, shooting aloft.

## Chapter 672: We believe in Old Long!

---

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Lu Miao, Yan Ke, and Wen Di had broken their mental challenge. They finally reached Shi Yan's.

At the moment they arrived, they saw Lin Meng being beheaded. Blood was still gushing out from her neck.

Shi Yan waved his hand, releasing the Soul Gathering Pearl. When Lin Meng's head fell, he took in her soul.

Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang, and the others were dumbstruck on witnessing the scene...

Lin Meng was dead!

The owner of the Pure Land, the supreme master of the Pure Land in the Divine Great Land, was beheaded.

Everybody who had seen it got stunned. They stood motionless, not knowing what to do.

Lin Meng's death was like a punch pounding on their hearts. This strike was hard to imagine. But it had happened. They couldn't help but believe in their own eyes.

All of a sudden, everybody halted. The entire area, no matter it was outside or inside the city, was tranquil.

Shi Yan was calm, retrieving the Soul Gathering Pearl. He was happy, wearing a smile on his face.

He suddenly recalled the humiliation Lin Meng had given him in the Dead Soul Mountain Range. She said that he didn't deserve Xia Xin Yan and that he would never reach her.

It was all because Lin Meng was the big mountain standing in front of Shi Yan!

And today, Shi Yan had destroyed this big mountain brutally.

The others then saw the Ghostly Spirit Sword floating quietly. It

didn't have any spiritual Qi anymore, turning into an ordinary weapon. Its strange, evil aura had vanished.

Where was Nie Ruo?

Even Lin Meng was dead. Would he survive?

The masters of the Pure Land and the Devil Valley, the two great characters of the Divine Great Land, were both killed?

It was impossible to accept!

Seeing the black light sparkle from the Soul Gathering Pearl, Shi Yan couldn't hold his bright smile anymore. He laughed contentedly and said, "Fellows. If you don't have other business to do, I think you guys better go back to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain early. Otherwise, I'm afraid I will have to ask you all to stay here forever."

Yang Tian Emperor looked at Xia Qin Hou. He saw the deep regret and despair on the other's face.

After they had arrived in the Divine Great Land, Xia Qin Hou had joined the Pure Land, as he thought that the Pure Land would be the place he could lay his future in. He had served the Pure Land with his best. Even at the most critical moment when the Yang family had to face the biggest danger, he didn't even send them any news.

He was loyal indeed.

However, Lin Meng was dead. The Pure Land didn't have a master now. Would it still be the leader of the forces in the Divine Great Land?

Everyone knows it was impossible.

Without Lin Meng, the Pure Land had lost its soul. It was hard to reach the peak again. And Xia Qin Hou had lost his strong support.

Shi Yan had broken his support.

"Return to the Ice and Fire Secret Domain?" Yun Hao forced a

smile from a distance, shaking his head. "I've thought about it, but I'm afraid we can't go back now."

Shi Yan was bewildered. He waved his hand, signaling Yang Tian Emperor's team to not be hurried. His mind flickered, reducing the power of the formations and barriers. "What's going on?"

"The five alien tribes have controlled the domain. We... There are traitors among us. Perhaps they would open the domain. I'm afraid that our fellows who are staying in there can't survive," Yun Hao released a long sigh.

The ones who didn't know this news became frightened. They were all dumbstruck.

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Lu Miao, Yan Ke, and Wen Di had their faces ash-gray. They felt as if there was a bucket of icy cold water that had been poured on their heads. The heat of anger was replaced by fear immediately.

"So," Shi Yan felt funny, "...you deserve it!" He looked at Qin Gu Chuan's group. "Congratulations. Because you were stubborn, your families and friends have become the food for alien tribes. You guys are really awesome."

Qin Gu Chuan's group shivered. Their eyes were bloodshot, as if blood tears would roll down at any minute.

"It doesn't matter to me. I just want to protect my little place here. It's good that my people are safe."

Shi Yan's eyes raked through Yun Hao's group and stopped on Xia Qin Hou and Bai Gen Seng. The smile on his face became brighter. "Precursor Xia, precursor Bai, do you feel sorry now? You guys should have stayed in the city. However, you smashed your chance. Haha, interesting. Really interesting."

Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao felt incomparably pleased.

Xia Qin Hou and Bai Gen Seng couldn't utter a word. Their faces were glum and grim, as they thought that this was the biggest

humiliation in their lives.

"Shi Yan!" Yun Hao's visage was solemn. "Only your place's considered the Human Clan's fort in the Perpetual Night Forest. I hope you can consider the whole picture and let us in. Otherwise, we will have to stay in this forest and face the massacre of the alien tribes."

"Let you in?" Shi Yan stroked his chin, frowning as if he were considering something.

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang hastened to explain, wearing a solemn countenance, their hearts worried.

"Shi Yan!"

Qi Tian Oldie Long Zhu didn't care that the medicines he had taken hadn't been effective yet, flying out from the city center. He shouted even before he had reached Shi Yan. "You've agreed with me to preserve the flame of the Human Clan. The alien tribes have started their operation. For the future of Human Clan, you have to consider the whole picture."

Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong didn't say anything. They were waiting for Shi Yan's decision.

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Lin Meng, Yan Ke, and Wen Di were all panic-stricken, as they finally recognized that they were all wrong. Only Long Zhu had a wide vision. It seemed he had predicted the changes and development of the current situation.

"People who stepped back three miles and have the cultivation base under the True God Realm can come in. I'll try my best to protect you guys." Shi Yan pondered for a while then said, "Shuang Yu Zhu and Leng Dan Qing, and the people of the Ice Emperor City, Bei Si, Bei Di, and the people of the Banner family, Zhu Yi of the Wonderful Stone City, the Radiant God Cult, the Celestial Emperor City, and Fighting Union can get in now. The others who have believed in Old Long and retreated three miles, I

will open the passage for you. However, you have to be under the True God Realm."

Then, Shi Yan's thought flickered, as glowing passages were exposed. "The others who don't meet the requirement shouldn't get in. If you don't care about anything and trespass our place, hahahaha... don't blame me for being ruthless."

The ones who had their names called were cheered up. Leng Dan Qing and Shuang Yu Zhu were mentioned first. Their beautiful eyes reflected their ocean-deep affections. Their soft bodies slightly trembled, as they thought that their bitter persistence had been rewarded eventually.

Yang Tian Emperor, Li Zheng Rong, and Cao Qiu Dao stood at the passages. Thick energy fluctuated from their bodies.

"Oh right, Lie Feng!" Shi Yan patted his head as Bing Qing Tong had reminded him. He smiled, looking through the crowd of warriors to find a cold, arrogant figure. "Lie-ge, long time no see. How are you doing?"

Although Lie Feng was the master of the Devil Valley, his position wasn't high enough. He had to stand behind Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang. Some elders of the Devil Valley also stood in front of him. Of course, he couldn't step forward.

Lie Feng heard his name called, and was surprised, but he shook his head smilingly. "I should go with them. No matter what, I'm a member of the Devil Valley. You killed my teacher, so we are enemy. I can't receive your favor."

Shi Yan was stunned, looking at him. He nodded and then said, "I understand Lie-ge has your limit. Alright, I won't ask more."

Then, he extended his hand, pointing into the void. The Ghostly Spirit Sword floating next to him turned into a beam of light, shooting towards Lie Feng. "This Ghostly Spirit Sword has no more ghostly spirits. But, it's the Devil Valley's divine weapon

anyway. Because of Lie-ge, I'll return it to you. If you can refine the ghostly spirits one more time, this divine weapon can be revived."

Lie Feng grabbed the Ghostly Spirit Sword, his face complicated. He couldn't help but sigh.

"Shi Yan, how about us?" Yun Hao beamed a forced smile.

Yun Hao was in the True God Realm. Besides him, Yu Wan Jiang and the other masters of the small forces were all at the First Sky of True God Realm. Although they didn't go against Shi Yan, their realm was high, so they didn't meet the requirement.

The masters of the small forces looked at Shi Yan, waiting for his answer.

Shi Yan's face was solemn. He clasped his fist and then said, "Fellows, your realm is high enough. If I let you guy in, when something happens, it's hard to keep the city from shaking. If you want to get in, you have to help me with one thing to show that you don't have other thoughts."

"What's that?" Yu Wan Jiang yelled.

"Those people," Shi Yan pointed at Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Lu Miao, Yan Ke, and Wen Di, "...they are my enemies. As long as you attack them, you are my friends. I won't be worried about you standing on their side, or that you will let them enter the city later."

This was a malicious move!

When one sought refuge, one must show their loyalty!

Although Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang's group didn't get along well with Qin Gu Chuan's group, their relationship wouldn't be so bad that they would kill the others.

However, if Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang attacked them at this moment, this resentment wouldn't be solved easily later.

And only that way would make Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang stand



on the opposite side to the others. Then, Shi Yan wouldn't need to worry about them, as they wouldn't stop him in the name of saving the human bloodline.

Shi Yan wasn't afraid of warriors under True God Realm. Even if they wanted to betray him, he could kill them easily.

However, if he let the True God Realm experts like Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang enter the city, when they had other thoughts, even if he were the owner of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City, he couldn't pay attention to them all the time.

The city center was where he had set up the critical control formations, and the energy source for the barriers, formations, and restrictions. If they didn't prove themselves, Shi Yan would never let them in. He must be careful.

Yun Hao's group was startled.

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and the others were enraged. The flame of anger in their hearts was ignited instantly.

"Yun-ge, Yu-ge, you guys still have another option," Qin Gu Chuan gritted his teeth. "Join us. Kill Shi Yan and his people! Then, we will occupy the city and control it to counter the alien tribes. How about that? With you two, it's not tough to kill this kid!"

Yan Ke and Wen Di also advised them to believe in the seven ancient factions, since Yun Hao's group wasn't a small force. If he joined the seven ancient factions, Shi Yan's group would find it hard to withstand.

"Sorry, but we believe in Old Long." Yun Hao pondered for ten seconds. After a silent period that could almost suffocate people, he said all of a sudden.

Abruptly, Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang, and some other True God Realm warriors started to launch their attacks towards Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Lu Miao, Wen Di, and Yan Ke.

# Chapter 673: Hundreds of flowers blossom

---

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang were at the Second Sky of True God Realm, the same realm as Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, and the others. Four other masters of the small forces joined them, who were at the First Sky of True God Realm.

As soon as they moved, Qin Gu Chuan's team felt chilled, but the flame of anger was burning inside them. They felt betrayed.

Yun Hao had been with them all the time, even though he wouldn't help them. However, they had never thought that Yun Hao and the others dared to attack them.

Qin Gu Chuan and Guan Hu had broken that mental challenge. They came here from the gates of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. When they reached this area, all of them had been damaged badly. Their souls and Essence Qi was lost by a big part. Qin Gu Chuan had many visible wounds, which were as severe as Nie Ruo.

Normally, if Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang wanted to approach Qin Gu Chuan's group, they also had to break the mental challenge and go through the gates.

But it didn't happen the same way.

Shi Yan was the master of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. He could control everything in this place. When his Sea of Consciousness changed, the city would change accordingly.

When Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang took action, Shi Yan just cracked a smile. A flow of soul energy rolled, and a wide, safe passage appeared in front of Yun Hao's group.

As Yun Hao's group could skip the gates, they didn't need to struggle mentally. Eventually, they approached the five people of Qin Gu Chuan's group without a break.

Moreover, six people of Yun Hao's team were covered in the halo of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City's seal. This seal floated above

them, illuminating their bodies. This seal protected this group from the effects of the barriers and restrictions here.

In other words, their energy wouldn't be weakened, as the barriers and restrictions of the city wouldn't affect them. They could always urge their power to the acme.

Even the chaotic energy that Qin Gu Chuan's group had experienced had become normal under the light of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City's seal. Yun Hao's group didn't feel their Essence Qi stagnate in their bodies.

Six people of Yun Hao's group were stirred up, while the five of Qin Gu Chuan's group grimaced. Anxiety rose in their hearts.

If it were a normal battle, the six people of Yun Hao's team were no match for Qin Gu Chuan's team.

The five people of Qin Gu Chuan's group were at the Second Sky of True God Realm each, while the four masters of the small forces were only at the First Sky of True God Realm.

However, in the Utmost Eight Purgatories City, Yun Hao's team wasn't affected. Quite the contrary, the five experts of Qin Gu Chuan's team had been damaged a lot under many restrictions and barriers. Under these circumstances, their realm and power weren't equal to Yun Hao's team.

Yun Hao's team had the upper hand right at the beginning of this battle. When the light of treasures and different kinds of energies bloomed radiantly, Shi Yan felt calm, beaming a relaxed smile.

It was unknown when Qi Tian Oldie Long Zhu had come to him. Long Zhu's face was glowing healthily. His eyes could show his spirit, but his aura wasn't profound and torrential as it was before. Apparently, the old man hadn't recovered fully yet.

"Shi Yan, do you have to do this?" Long Zhu's countenance was complicated as he sighed. "Qin Gu Chuan's team's also human. You've asked Yun Hao to fight them, which isn't different from

wearing out the force of the Human Clan. The alien tribes... are still out there. I think it isn't good."

Yang Tian Emperor frowned, but he didn't say anything.

Li Zheng Rong, Di Shan, Bing Qing Tong, and Han Cui kept silent, looking at Shi Yan.

"Qin Gu Chuan's team wants to kill me. I'm not going to let them in. About Yun Hao... I just need them to be on the opposite side to Qin Gu Chuan's team. They don't need to risk their lives against them. In other words, I'm worried that they can't be determined at the critical time. If so, when we fight with the five alien tribes, I can't be more certain."

Shi Yan paused, kept silent for several seconds, then said, "Old Long, your wounds can't be healed that fast. Please come to the city center and watch over it for me. If something unexpected happens, please notify me early. As for this place... just let me handle it. I will arrange things properly."

Long Zhu beamed a forced smile and nodded. He knew the young man was determined, so he returned to the city center without talking more.

After he left, Shi Yan's thought changed constantly. Flows of pure soul energy turned into countless invisible beams of light, scattering everywhere.

Passages glowed radiantly just, like the doors of God, extending outside the city to make way for the other people.

Leng Dan Qing, Shuang Yu Zhu, Zhu Yi, and the others smiled cheerily, following each other, walking in the light passage. From different passages Shi Yan had created, they entered the city from the secret corners.

People who came here to act against Shi Yan like Xia Qing Hou, Bai Gen Seng, Feng Xiao, and Xue Mu had their face gloomy and agitated.

Some of those people hastened to get on the light passage to enter the city center.

However, when those people stepped on the light passage, it then divided into different sections. Their section would explode shortly, leaving them as a pulp of meat.

At this moment, Shi Yan smiled coldly, his mouth as sharp as a saber. His face gave people a deep fear, making them shiver.

"I told you. If you don't meet the requirements, you should wait outside. Otherwise, you'll die sooner!" His eyes raked through many people, falling on Xia Qing Hou, Shen Lin, Dong Jin, and the warriors who had betrayed the Yang family.

"Head Master! Please spare us!" Shen Lin and Dong Jin struggled from the crowd. Many warriors who used to belong to the Yang family kneeled down, begging.

"Master, please let us in. We were muddled. We are f\*cking a\*sholes. Please spare us!" A warrior pounded his head on the ground, crying pathetically. He was like a stray dog, as he kept begging for Yang Tian Emperor's mercy.

Shen Lin and Dong Jin screamed continually. "Head Master, we've been fighting for the Yangs for so many years. Even if we don't have merits, you've seen our efforts. We've made mistakes this time. We swear we won't repeat our mistakes!"

Everybody knew that the forest was no longer the same. Seeing Lin Meng and Nie Ruo being killed, they all were awakened.

Everybody understood that they had underestimated Shi Yan's team. When they found that the alien tribes had blocked the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, they knew it was a serious mistake they could never make up for.

They couldn't go back. In the Perpetual Night Forest, only this city was considered safe. If they could get there, they would be safe for now, and they could even dodge this calamity. People who

couldn't get in would be pitiful. The pagans would kill them shortly.

Everybody feared death. Even if they were hostile at first, when the time came, they would show their real colors.

Shen Lin and Dong Jin were the ones who had betrayed the Yang family. They had joined the alliance because they were afraid of death and the massacre of the alien tribes. But now, they wanted to return, begging for Yang Tian Emperor's mercy.

"You sons of b\*itches that never learn..." Yang Tian Emperor cracked a sharp smile, then shook his head and said, "I've said it earlier. If you leave, you should never come back. You know how I am. Don't waste my time. After this, if the alien tribes haven't killed you, I will do that."

His words were no doubt a death sentence for them.

Yang Tian Emperor was the hero of the Endless Sea, but he was also cruel. How could he be a merciful person?

Shen Lin, Dong Jin, and their people were ash-gray. Deep despair appeared on their faces, as they felt helpless and vulnerable.

Shi Yan's eyes scanned through those people. Suddenly, he was surprised, as his watchful eyes stopped at a spot.

Wei Zhai and a dozen of warriors of Yan Ke and Wen Di's team were bewildered as they thought that Shi Yan was looking at him. After a while, they recognized his target.

Wei Zhai and some young men turned away to look at the two beautiful girls behind them. They were stunned.

They were He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing!

It was unknown if they had intended to make themselves the most beautiful flowers among this group. The two girls from the Endless Sea had their beauty exposed, as if they were blessed with divine light, glowing gorgeously.

Although they were in this perilous place, there were many young men beside Wei Zhai who drooled while looking at the two girls.

He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing's beauty was shining gloriously. Strange light sparkled in their eyes as their hearts were filled with joy.

‘He... He saw me. Finally, he saw me!’

The two girls screamed in their hearts.

"You two come here," Shi Yan was surprised for a while, then nodded at them.

A light passage glided over Wei Zhai's team, extending towards He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing like the staircase to heaven.

Everybody was stunned with an odd countenance.

"He... turns out he likes this type!" Some people muttered in the crowd.

Many girls who deemed herself beautiful got cheered up. They hurried to expose their beautiful figures, waving at Shi Yan. "Let us in... We... We will repay with our bodies! As long as you let us in, you can do whatever you want!"

They were some innocent teenagers, young girls, and mature women. They waved their hands, throwing him seductive looks.

It seemed that if they got Shi Yan's eyes on them, it would be their biggest chance to get rid of this sorrowful area and gain the right to survive.

Shortly, flowers bloomed everywhere. Their charming voices echoed continually. The battlefield suddenly turned into the stage of a beauty contest. The ambiance became ridiculous.

# Chapter 674: I don't need them!

---

Everybody misunderstood Shi Yan.

People who knew Shi Yan had also heard about the ambiguous relationship between him and the four snow flowers of the Ice Emperor city. After this event, they thought that Shi Yan was lascivious.

Shortly, the beauties got excited. There were many girls with different styles, but they were all stunning. They started to show their appealing makings.

Some started to draw their eyebrows; the others loosened the belt that tied their ample bosoms. Some showed their cutest smiles, while the others started to take off layers of garments, exposing their mesmerizing bodies...

There were several hundred gorgeous ladies with different attractive traits showing their most prominent features, throwing flirty looks towards Shi Yan, as if they hated that Shi Yan hadn't waved at them.

"Pick me. Look at me. I'm the most beautiful woman in our city!"

"Me! Pick me! I'm a virgin! I'm all clean!"

"I know many techniques. I'm sure I can bring you the pleasure that will make you forget everything else!"

"Don't pick her. She's a damn sl\*t. She's slept with many men. Choose me, I'm virgin!"

"..."

Many female members of the Pure Land, Heaven Temple, Martial Spirit Palace, Spirit Treasure Sect, and the Devil Valley were screaming boisterously.

Both the sides became puzzled, their faces odd.

Many young and middle-aged men became grim, as if someone



had captured their wives or they were betrayed.

Their wives, their women, and their lovers were screaming in that crowd.

Many innocent, beautiful ladies in that group were the dreams of the other young men. However, they only dared to dream, and would never have the guts to show their admiration or love.

However, at this moment, their women suddenly became the cheapest sl\*ts. They tried to show their beauty to earn a chance to survive.

Many people got so indignant that they wanted to vomit blood or just faint from this humiliation. Nobody thought that Shi Yan's small move could stir up such a reaction. He made many women crazy.

They are compelled to do so.

When they knew that the alien tribes had blocked the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, and then they saw Lin Meng's death, despair had swollen in the bottom of their hearts, making them worried about their lives.

If it weren't the essential time, who would mistreat themselves like that?

The charming and seducing enticement of the women had pressed down the curses of the men. But those women didn't recognize it. Their beautiful eyes still gazed at Shi Yan, and they were trying to expose their most prominent sexy features. They hated the fact that they couldn't jump in his lap and lay him down on his back.

Those women understood that as long as they could get into the city center, they could survive.

To survive... sometimes people had to put aside their moral ethics and pride. To gain a chance to live, everything would be cheap.

"I can give you much pleasure. Please pick me, I'm begging you. I can do everything. Any position you want!"

"Pick me, please. My sister and I will serve you. We're still virgins. You men like that, right?"

"My daughter and I will serve you. As long as you nod, we will be your female servants. I'm just forty. See, I'm not old. My skin is smooth and white. Look at my body, good enough right?"

"..."

The crowd was still screaming and yelling. Many women were showing themselves and their bodies while trying to degrade the others.

People outside the city gawked, as they were scared by the heat of those women's enthusiasm.

Including Shi Yan.

Looking at those beauties, seeing them trying to show their bodies to gain his approval, Shi Yan had an awkward feeling.

People did hear that a king had around three thousand beauties in his palace. If Shi Yan wanted, he just needed to nod or wave his hand, and those extraordinary, sexy, women would come to him with great appreciation. He would never have to worry about his sex life for the rest of his life.

Those women were all charming. They had practiced martial arts, but their bodies were great, with strong stamina and smooth, white skin. They were the best of the best.

Those people would belong to him. As long as he nodded, they all would be his assets. He could enjoy a life of luxury, having everything just like a king.

Shi Yan was stunned, his face odd.

"Cough cough!" Yang Tian Emperor tried some dry coughs to get his attention. He grinned quietly and then pretended to be calm.

"Little Yan, I know you like them. You've done so many things for us. If you want, Great Grandpa will agree. Haha, young man, it's alright if you have good health, you know. I understand."

Swoosh!

Some enraged looks were thrown at him, making Yang Tian Emperor tense. The smile on his face became awkward.

They were from Bing Qing Tong, Han Cui, Cao Zhi Lan, and Li Feng Er in the city. They looked at him as if they wanted to kill him.

"You're old, yet you don't feel shame, right?" Han Cui cursed softly, her beautiful eyes icy cold.

"Shameless!" Bing Qing Tong shouted. She silently urged the Ice Jade Technique, as she wanted to attack Yang Tian Emperor.

Yang Tian Emperor was embarrassed, trying to change the topic. "Eh. I think it's too much. Although Shi Yan's strong, he couldn't call one hundred women shortly."

Bing Qing Tong's female group got a little bit better.

"I think... ten is okay. It will be exhausting if having more."

At that moment, he felt the two flows of cold aura flood the area next to him. His smile froze on his face.

"Shi Yan, if you like them, just choose some you want. Look, they are crazy and excited. If you nod, they will agree to do anything. Sisters, daughters, and mothers, etc. I have no idea if you want to take them." Usually, Cao Qiu Dao didn't talk much. His eyes scanned the crowd, but he didn't spot the different state of Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui. The old man turned around and suggested seriously to Shi Yan.

"Great-grandpa, if you want to have someone to take care of you before you die, please do not talk much!" Cao Zhi Lan said through her gritted teeth. She had murderous intention on her face.

Cao Qiu Dao was scared. He suddenly got something, so he shut his mouth and didn't dare to talk more.

Everybody was young once. Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao had a wild time when they were young. So, they thought Shi Yan would experience the same. Seeing many beauties offering themselves like that, they instinctively thought that he could accept them.

The city center wasn't small. If Shi Yan wanted, he could keep some women with different styles. In the old men's eyes, it wasn't a big deal. As long as he had the competence, it wasn't a problem if he were a little bit perverted.

"Cough cough!" Shi Yan was embarrassed. He kept beaming forced smiles as he had some thoughts reflected in his eyes.

Han Cui and Bing Qing Tong looked at him. Cold intention diffused from their beautiful eyes as they were eyeing him like resentful women.

Shi Yan shivered. Their looks scared him. He couldn't help but raise his hand. "I have no different thoughts."

"Seems like you know those two little girls. We can accept them. We won't allow you to mess around with the others though!" Han Cui whined in a low tone, her eyes gloomy. "The four of us have been with you. Aren't we enough for you? I won't allow you to be with the others. Otherwise, I'm sure you can't live well."

Bing Qing Tong blushed. With her watery eyes, she stooped shyly.

She could never utter what Han Cui had said... although she had the same ideas.

"I didn't mean it. Don't overthink. Damn it! Those two perverted old men made you guys think too much." Shi Yan was solemn, as his face seemed to pretend to be somehow sacred. "Women aren't my purpose. Having fun for a while is okay. But I'm not going to let

my heart be touched by true love."

"What did you say!" Bing Qing Tong suddenly lifted her face, her white teeth clenched, and eyes as sharp as swords. "Don't you dare repeat it again!"

"No no no! I didn't mean that. That does not include you guys. We've got through the calamity together. Of course, you guys are different." Shi Yan felt chilled as he cursed himself for not considering his words. He hastened to explain.

Bing Qing Tong and Han Cui felt satisfied. They felt sweet in their hearts, smiling tenderly at him with their deep affection.

"Let those women find their way. I don't need them," Shi Yan imposingly swung his arm. "Everybody, focus on bringing Qin Gu Chuan's team to heaven. Don't be careless."

While he was talking, the crystal beast had opened its wide mouth and grabbed the Original Universe Returning Cauldron with his mouth. It then soared up to the sky and halted in front of him.

He extended his hand, and the Original Universe Returning Cauldron flew out, falling into his palm. It flashed, disappearing into his Storage Ring.

Boom Boom Boom!

The Original Universe Returning Cauldron struggled grumblingly right after it got inside the Storage Ring. It was like a wild beast that wasn't imprisoned properly. It could escape in any minute.

A wave of shaking energy emitted from the Storage Ring. It shook Shi Yan's soul a little bit, making his Sea of Consciousness surge.

The Original Universe Returning Cauldron was the divine weapon of the Pure Land. Although it had lost its owner, this divine weapon had already gained intellect. The Storage Ring was

struggling to constrain it reluctantly.

Shi Yan's complexion changed. He took out the Original Universe Returning Cauldron and put it into the Blood Vein Ring.

The Original Universe Returning Cauldron was a divine tool with intellect, so it knew how to struggle. After it was put into the Blood Vein Ring, it had released the resisting power.

However, the Blood Vein Ring emitted many layer-like translucent membranes of chaotic energy, covering the cauldron.

The big cauldron became still. It seemed like it couldn't wiggle anymore.

Shi Yan was calm.

Indeed, only a mysterious and magical thing like the Blood Vein Ring could control the Pure Land's divine weapon and subdue it.

Roar Roar Roar!

At this moment, howling and screaming of beasts echoed from everywhere.

# Chapter 675: Marvelous law

---

Beasts followed each other, heading towards the city center from everywhere. Each of them was more than one hundred meters long, and had a tremendous aura. They were like moving clusters of dense energy, giving people a deep impression.

Many warriors of the seven ancient factions had a streak of deep fear in their eyes; they were petrified. They didn't dare to move, as they were afraid that the beasts would notice their movement and swallow them instantly.

The Perpetual Night Forest was the Monster Clan's territory. When Lin Meng and Nie Ruo had first entered this area, they had advised their men not to provoke the beasts. When the beasts burst out crazily, they would be more dangerous than the other races.

When these herds of beasts appeared one after another, warriors of the seven ancient factions were frightened. As they didn't know the purpose of those beasts, they assumed that this wave belonged to the alien tribes' official invasion.

Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang, and the others temporarily stopped attacked Qin Gu Chuan's team. They all frowned, looking at the movement above their heads.

Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Hu, Lu Miao, and the others were distressed. They had many wounds on their bodies, some reaching deep to their bones.

Their overall strength was stronger than Yun Hao's group of six. However, they got hurt getting through the mental challenge of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. In this area, they were suppressed by the formations and barriers, and they couldn't bring out their maximum power. Fighting with Yun Hao's team, who weren't affected by the magical city, they had fallen into the disadvantaged situation.

When the beasts appeared, they seized the chance and took a break. They adjusted their breathing and used the medicines to restore.

"Shi Yan, Shi Yan! Where are you?"

"We're here to help you."

"Don't say we're not loyal. It's Xuan Ming Boss. He didn't allow us to come. Blame him. It isn't related to us!"

"Tell us who to kill. Just point at them. We will kill them for you without any hesitation."

Yan Long, Xue Lie, Glacial Armor Giant Alligator, and the Nine-headed Bird were screaming and yelling boisterously. Their voices shook the sky. Their level eight subordinates roared and howled to increase their imposing aura.

Suddenly, the beasts' roars flooded the entire city, shaking many people. Some warriors even had their souls affected. The part of warriors who had already entered the city felt scared, and then happy when they heard the beasts roaring.

The Monster Clan had come to help Shi Yan!

This finding had them shaken. They suddenly felt that this city was the safest place in this world. As long as they could stay in here, no pagans could harm them.

The others who were left outside the city collapsed mentally, as despair rose higher in their hearts. They regretted that Shi Yan didn't favor them and invited them into his city.

Even the Monster Clan had a good relationship with him, so what else should he be afraid of?

They were the Monster Clan, the overlord of the Perpetual Night Forest. This force was always underestimated in the Divine Great Land. Why did they trust Shi Yan and come to help him?

Everybody was scared and indignant. They scolded Shi Yan for



being shameless, joining the alien tribes. However, they were jealous of him that he could establish the relationship with the Monster Clan, and have a strong support in critical moments.

At this moment, everybody recognized that Lin Meng and Nie Ruo's team, the leaders of the seven ancient factions, didn't have a functional competence. They didn't know that they should cooperate with the Monster Clan in the Perpetual Night Forest. Quite the contrary, they carried out the secret operation to hunt the beasts. They had created a grudge against the Monster Clan. Wasn't it finding a way to death?

"Ah, what are you here for?" Shi Yan faced up to look at them, his face bewildered. "The fight is going to end. You guys came here to watch the fun play?"

Yan Long, Xue Lie, and the other three were the five rulers of the Monster Clan. Hearing him, they started to observe the situation. The five leaders of the Monster Clan felt embarrassed immediately.

Apparently, Shi Yan wasn't the weak side today. He seemed to have gained the upper hand. The city center stood unharmed, and was a great support to Shi Yan's side.

All of them had joined the construction of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. They knew that this city, which was built in an empty space, was divided into two parts, the outer city and the city center. The defense of the outer city was much weaker than the city center.

In other words, Shi Yan hadn't used all of his tricks. He had some other forces he hadn't used yet.

The ones who came to trespass this city had divided into two sides, and they were struggling with each other. Apparently, they couldn't threaten the city center. Those signs indicated that Shi Yan's side had gained the upper hand.

"It..." Silver-winged Sky Wolf scratched his gray fur clumsily. He was so embarrassed that he burst out indignantly, rolling his eyes at Yan Long while thundering. "I told you. Shi Yan has a tummy full of wicked intentions. How could he not be able to resist? Didn't I tell you not to be worried about him that much? You hurry my a\*s! We couldn't help with anything. If you had listened to me and waited for a while, until the other races came here, he would have known our best competence. You fools, we came here at the wrong moment. He doesn't appreciate us."

Yan Long and Xue Lie got scolded. They were embarrassed and timid. They didn't dare to snap back, as they secretly regretted their actions, and pondered whether they had come too early or not.

The bystanders couldn't help but gawk.

Especially people of the seven ancient factions, they thought that they might get problems with their hearing ability.

Since when did the Monster Clan become such an easy partner?

Shouldn't those four-legged morons ignite the fight right when they arrived? Shouldn't they get enraged and roar furiously when someone provoked them?

Did they know how to joke or be embarrassed?

Could the Human Clan and Monster Clan live in harmony like that?

Even if they were stupid, from the conversation between Shi Yan and the rulers of the Monster Clan, they could see they had a really good friendship, so much so that they could even mock and tease each other.

Although the Monster Clan and Human Clan weren't like fire and water in the Divine Great Land, they still had a discrete and continual fight. Humans would take risks and trespass the Monster Clan's territory. They would gain a benefit from the beasts, or the

latter would swallow them.

The two clans had never sat down together and talked in harmony. They wouldn't treat the other equally.

But Shi Yan had accomplished this hard task. He had established a friendship with the Monster Clan, becoming their partner in a real sense. They didn't have any resentment, and they could even tease each other, which overturned many people's thoughts.

"He isn't an ordinary person indeed. Haha... He can mingle with the Monster Clan pretty well. I don't know how he could do that." Lie Feng of the Devil Valley grinned strangely, shaking his head. "He's really dangerous. No wonder why he could stay calm while the five forces were attacking him. He does have cunning tricks."

"Perhaps, his decision is correct. Old Long is right. The wind has changed. It's the trend of the development in the future. Other clans can live in harmony and survive in this land. It's the future."

"Old Long is the sage of our Human Clan indeed. We should have listened to him. Sigh, we were wrong."

"Yeah, Lin Meng's team was wrong. Times have changed greatly, but they were too conservative. As they don't want to change, they will be discarded soon."

Different voices arose in the group of the seven ancient factions. Seeing Shi Yan and the Monster Clan join hands without any obstacles, they all realized the changes in the whole situation. They were finally awakened.

In the city center, Cao Zhi Lan, Long Ying, He Qing Man, Tang Yuan Nan and the others faced the sky with astonishment. They admired and respected Shi Yan. Moreover, they felt proud of him.

Such an extraordinary genius!

It was almost himself alone dealing with the seven ancient factions in their civil war. He could even ask the Monster Clan to help him proactively. And, they even had time to tease each other.

All of this showed that he had controlled the entire situation. Nothing had escaped his plan.

Following a talented leader with a wide vision like that in the current chaotic situation was the biggest happiness they could gain.

"I told you. When he was in the Endless Sea, he could tease the stronger warriors like a toy in his hand. It was the same when he came to the Divine Great Land. This man always creates miracles. People can only act as he has planned. The others will play the minor roles in his script, or even be mere sacrifices."

Tang Yuan Nan smiled strangely, shaking his head while talking to Zhu Yi, Ji Mu, and Yue Ying.

Everybody nodded in agreement on hearing that. When miracles happened constantly, they weren't miracles anymore, as they just became the fact. Shi Yan seemed to prove that all this was no miracle. It could just be considered a thing related to the distinct aura of his.

"Alright, don't make noise. I'm just kidding. I'm glad that you guys came here, be it sooner or later." Seeing the five fools of the Monster Clan still quarreling with each other, Shi Yan shouted impatiently. "The fight hasn't ended yet. You came right on time. We can accelerate a little bit."

Yan Long and Xue Lie had their eyes brightened. They opened their red mouth and asked excitedly. "Fight whom?"

Shi Yan rose his arm, pointing at Qin Gu Chuan's group. "Them... Kill them. We need to prepare sooner. Thinking about the five alien tribes gives me a bigger headache."

"No problem. We're here. Haha... I was worried we won't have meat to eat. These five look delicious. I like them... Haha." Xue Lie faced up the sky and roared. A thick, brutal, murderous aura shot straight into the sky.

His flaming fur fluttered as he descended from the sky like a gold mountain, and attacked the five people of Qin Gu Chuan's group harshly.

Yan Long, Glacial Armor Giant Alligator, Silver-winged Sky Wolf, and Nine-headed Bird also swarmed over. They weren't affected by the formations and barriers in the city, using their real beast forms like a bulldozer to knock everything down. They were showing the savage face of the Monster Clan.

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang exchanged looks, then dodged instinctively, not daring to stay.

"Run!"

The sad look on Yan Ke's wrinkled face disappeared. She shouted hoarsely, turning into a gray light and trying to escape.

Wen Di paled on seeing her running away. He immediately used the Escape Technique to escape like a fish plunging into the pond. He disappeared shortly.

# Chapter 676: Destiny pronounces your sentence

---

Yan Ke and Master Wen ran away in front of so many people.

The two recluses came from two different regions, and wanted to maintain the eternal light of Human Clan. However, at the most critical time, they ran away.

People felt it hard to accept this fact. They didn't want to believe in what they'd just seen.

Also, at this moment, they finally realized who the real sage of the Divine Great Land was, who was able to foresee everything.

It was Qi Tian Oldie, Long Zhu.

When this oldie came, he had expressed himself clearly that he would stay on Shi Yan's side, which was the future of Human Clan.

He was right.

What happened had confirmed his prediction and vision.

After Yan Ke and Wen Di left, Yan Long and Xue Lie's attacks would fall on Guan Hu, Qin Gu Chuan, and Lin Meng. How could they endure it?

Still, they had Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang and a person that hadn't attacked anyone yet... Shi Yan.

How could they engage in this battle? How could they wish to win?

Win their a\*s!

Qin Gu Chuan, Lin Meng, and Guan Hu were like the flickering lamp that had run out of oil. Seeing Yan Ke and Wen Di escape, these three almost didn't think about anything but using the Escape Technique to run away as fast as possible.

Shi Yan hadn't had the time to react.

The Utmost Eight Purgatories City was simply a defensive formation. It didn't have a strong binding ability that was enough to prevent them from running away.

Shortly, there was no enemy or target to aim at in the chaotic energy field outside the city center.

Yan Long and Xue Lie screamed strangely. They were reluctant, walking back and forth restlessly. Their red eyes raked through the remaining people of the seven ancient factions, as if they were watching their prey. The targets of these gazes couldn't help but collapse under this ordeal.

"Hey... What should we do?" Even Yang Tian Emperor didn't know what to do next.

Seeing Yan Ke and Qin Gu Chuan leave, their people felt dispirited, as they had no will to fight anymore. They started to run away discreetly.

People who ran away all had a relatively high realm. Perhaps they were the elders or the main pillars of their sects. They used their power and escaped this place to save their lives.

Xia Qing Hou, Bai Gen Seng, and Shen Lin were in this group.

"Clean your sect. As for the others... you should arrange as you want," Shi Yan squinted, then frowned and said.

Yang Tian Emperor suddenly flew out.

Cao Qiu Dao hesitated for a while, then shot out, aiming at the traitors of the Yang family.

Shen Lin and Dong Jin were like wild dogs forced into a corner under the hunters' chase. They scattered, running for their lives in different directions. Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao stayed close to them. Cao Qiu Dao disappeared into thin air.

Shi Yan knew that the old man was using Shadowless Path. Shen Lin and Dong Jin would have no chance to escape or survive.

Yang Tian Emperor avoided Xia Qing Hou's way of retreat.

He was afraid that Shi Yan wouldn't feel easy to take action against Xia Qing Hou. Also, Xia Qing Hou wouldn't be killed that easily. If Shi Yan didn't want him to die, it wouldn't be easy to kill that old man.

Xia Qing Hou was Xia Xin Yan's grandfather. If he died, Shi Yan and the Xia family would have a great dispute, that would never be settled in peace.

Yang Tian Emperor understood this. He also remembered his old acquaintance, so he didn't chase the other to a dead end.

Shi Yan wore a cold and indifferent face. He didn't give any extra orders or chase after them.

In his eyes, those people who couldn't get in the city would become the prey for the alien tribes sooner or later. Was anyone from Bao Ao's group nice? Would they show mercy and spare their lives?

Leaving Xia Qing Hou and the others in Bao Ao's hands was the most appropriate ending for them, which also helped him save energy.

Many people didn't leave. The beautiful women were still screaming and crying, trying to show their most prominent features to catch his eyes. They hoped that Shi Yan would refer them and let them enter the city.

Besides, many low-realm warriors stayed. They were only in the Disaster Realm or the Sky Realm. They didn't leave because they knew they had to die if they left this city.

They understood their ability well. They knew that when people like Feng Xiao left, they would still have a chance to survive. But if they left this place, they would be finding death themselves.

Since their realm was low, their power wasn't sufficient. They couldn't even fly. In this immense forest, without the protection of



a strong leader, how could they survive?

Yan Ke and Qin Gu Chuan couldn't even protect themselves. When they knew they failed, they only thought about protecting their own lives. Should they give their lives in the hands of such leaders?

They made up their mind quickly.

No matter what cost it took, they have to stay!

No matter what they had to pay, they had to gain Shi Yan's approval to stay. As long as they could get into the city, they could survive. They just wanted a chance to survive.

Almost one thousand beauties and low-realm warriors were looking at him with longing eyes. They tried to smile, bending their bodies, and using the sincerest attitude in the hope of survival.

"You guys can get in. As for what I've said, please understand. I just want to protect the city center. It's my root. If something happens unexpectedly, I can't handle it." Shi Yan beamed a sincere smile and invited Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang. He was still a little bit ginger.

"We understand your worries. You're right." A leader of a small force at the First Sky of True God Realm bent to him, his face so friendly.

"You little brat, I can see that you used us to drain Guan Hu's energy and made them dispirited." Yun Hao snorted. However, he smiled brightly, waving his hands. "It's okay though. I'm glad that you've let the Radiant God Cult's disciples enter the city. It's okay if you want to assign my dry skeleton. I just consider I'm devoting to my disciples."

Yu Wan Jiang wasn't good at talking. He just smiled and said, "Seems like I've made the best decision. Haha... If I hadn't stayed three miles away, I'm afraid I would have to run away with Guan

Hu's team."

"Or, you would have been killed perhaps," Bing Qing Tong smiled, her beautiful eyes shining brightly.

Yu Wan Jiang was shaken. He recalled Lin Meng and Nie Ruo's consequences, and his heart chilled. He discreetly decided to be more careful in the relationship with Shi Yan. He shouldn't make any mistakes at any cost.

Bing Qing Tong had reminded them that even if he used to be a leader of a strong force in the Divine Great Land, under the current circumstances, he couldn't necessarily protect his life.

Yu Wan Jiang suddenly understood that this world had changed, completely changed. It was time for the previous generation to leave the stage.

He suddenly felt dispirited and begrudging, losing his enthusiasm. He felt that he had suddenly turned old.

"We are joining hands to resist a strong enemy. For the future of the Human Clan, I'm sincerely asking you to not have any extra thoughts. In the coming time, we will have to struggle even more. These are the times when we need to unite the most." Shi Yan was sensitive enough to catch Yu Wan Jiang's distressed mood. He put on a serious face, using an honest tone to talk to him.

"Brother, don't think much. If we can survive, we can do something for the Human Clan. If you have something that holds you down, you can't break through a new realm. Think about it, we've passed this challenge. Why should we let it hold us down?" Yun Hao patted his shoulder and comforted him.

Yu Wan Jiang nodded while smiling. "I understand. I just feel a little bit sad. Haha... Don't worry. People in our realm won't be taken down that easily."

Then, Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang walked shoulder by shoulder towards the city center. The imposing aura of valiant heroes

emitted from them once again.

People who were invited had all entered the city, while Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao were chasing after the traitors.

As Bing Qing Tong, Han Cui, and Di Shan had nothing to do here, they returned to the city center to adjust their aura.

They had consumed a lot of energy in killing Lin Meng and Nie Rou. Although they didn't have the threat of the seven ancient factions anymore, an even more dangerous force – the five alien tribes – were yet to arrive.

They didn't dare to relax. They had to recover faster to counter the next wave of attack.

At this moment, only Shi Yan and the people who hadn't left stayed outside the city center.

They were looking at him with longing eyes, begging him. Those beauties didn't twitter anymore, as they knew that Shi Yan would soon give them his decision.

His decision mattered for their lives. In this heavy moment, they quieted down, waiting for destiny to pronounce their sentence.

Shi Yan rubbed his chin. He was hesitant, his eyes complicated.

Those who were waiting didn't dare to breathe loudly. They were as silent as the dead. Some didn't even dare to look at Shi Yan, bowing in fright and despair.

"Shi Yan, you should leave a way out in every matter you decide." Long Zhu started to show his mercy from the city center, his face sorrowful. "Do me a small favor. Considering I have helped you, save them."

Qi Tian Oldie would always think about the Human Clan's future.

All he had done was to protect the bloodline of the Human Clan. He didn't have any selfish thoughts. For this purpose, he could stay

on the opposite side of Lin Meng, risking his life to save time for Shi Yan. He could even ignore his own life.

He knew that when he said this, Shi Yan would feel unhappy, and it would affect their relationship. However, he decided to say it still.

"I'll give Old Long face then." Shi Yan finally spoke up after an annoyingly quiet moment. His voice was calm and relaxed. "We can let them in. However, they have to pay the fee. Essence Crystals, materials, and secret treasures... They have to submit us everything. I want to select something useful. We need to prepare to counter the alien tribes."

"No problem!"

"Sure. We can give you everything!"

"No need to mention Essence Crystals or anything, even if you want my body, I can give you! Everything!"

They were cheered up. Those who had been waiting finally saw the light of hope. They screamed and shrieked, as they were elated on finding themselves protected.

"Don't babble. After you get in, you should give the materials proactively. Don't waste our time," Shi Yan said with a cold face. He waved his hands, using his thoughts to create the light passage. Then, he walked to the city center begrudgingly. He didn't want to care about the stuff out there anymore.

Managers like Yang Zhuo stood at the light passage with their pens and notes. They were ready to summarize the submission with radiant smiles.

# Chapter 677: Another entrance of the Secret Domain

---

Ice and Fire Secret Domain.

Inside the grand hall of the Pure Land, many warriors still stayed. They were anxious, as if a fire was burning them. They were the people of the seven ancient factions, including the Radiant God Cult, the Martial Spirit Palace, and the Spirit Treasure Sect. They were all gloomy and distressed.

"It's not good. The entrance has a big problem. Many warriors of the small forces have started to gather over there. I think... they want to rebel." An elder of the Pure Land slammed his brows together, as he was rubbing his hands constantly. He seemed to be very hurried.

Standing next to him were the people of the Devil Valley and the Martial Spirit Palace. They were all frightened.

Staying in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain were old people with low realms, far behind Lin Meng's team, who had left already. Those people were a blended group of many other smaller forces from everywhere. They wouldn't listen to the elders of the seven ancient factions.

The news of the blockade of the Ice and Fire Secret Domain had spread to the other side, which was like an ice cube melting in people's hearts.

Everybody knew about the might of the alien tribes. Since the entrance was blocked, what should they do now?

They had laid their hope in Lin Meng's team. They hoped that her team could find a solution. However, they'd been waiting for a long time, yet they had received no news from the world out there. They were all frightened at this moment.

Unknowingly, more and more warriors of the small forces

started to gather at the entrance of the secret domain, as if they wanted to go out. They didn't want to be like a fish in a tank, waiting for someone to kill them all.

People of seven ancient factions, who used to fight with the pagans, knew that they wouldn't take risks and fight face to face with the opponent. However, seeing the energy movement in the entrance become clearer as time passed, and no sign of Lin Meng's team returning, they started to feel hopeless.

What to do now?

Without their leaders, they were flurried and hesitant, not knowing what to do.

Time flew while their worries augmented. Gradually, the news sent back from the entrance became worse and worse.

Another news came to them: Traitors had started to attack the guards at the entrance.

This news was like an exploding bomb, making them dizzy. They were enraged. There were traitors in their organization who didn't care about the future of the Human Clan!

It was unimaginable to them! They couldn't believe that someone could be that insane!

However, this news was true. They were too furious to keep their mind sound. After a moment of silence, they woke up in a freezing atmosphere, showing their despair.

Another message came: They couldn't keep the entrance any longer.

Everybody was flurried. It seemed like they had a bucket of cold water poured all over their body from top to toe, which extinguished their flame of hope completely.

"Miss Xia's still confined. Before master left, she advised that if something unexpected happened, we had to release her and let her

chair." The Pure Land's elder had stayed quiet for a while, but he recalled something all of a sudden, and asked the guards to release Xia Xin Yan and bring her here.

Since they had lost the ones they trusted, everybody was shaken. They were dispirited to find out that their brains seemed insufficient at this moment, and that they couldn't make up their minds.

They quarreled with each other, mocking and scolding the traitors and rebels while sneering, but they couldn't give out an effective solution.

Shortly, Xia Xin Yan came out of her prison. She got the situation immediately from the others. Her face was as cold as water, frowning as she knew this situation was hard to resolve.

"What should we do now? Master told us that if anything happens, you should chair." The Elder of the Pure Land looked at her with an ash-gray hue covering his face.

"We should go to the other gateway of this secret domain, and cross that chaotic abyss to seek the chance to survive," Xia Xin Yan pondered for a while and then said with a sorrowful face.

Afterward, the people became grim, looking even more hopeless than before.

"Impossible!" An elder of the Devil Valley jolted up from his seat, his face malicious. "Are you telling us to die? Our master has told us that no matter what happens, we can't go through that entrance. He said that no one would survive there. Once we enter that door, we will have to die!"

More people of the Spirit Treasure Sect and the Martial Spirit Palace were screaming to show their objection.

Xia Xin Yan didn't change her visage. She only had a painful struggle reflecting on her jade-like face. "I have only that solution. My teacher also said that the other entrance of the Secret Domain

hides a tremendous danger. She wasn't sure that she could cross that entrance. However, the most important thing is that she didn't know where that entrance led to. Perhaps it's a dead end. But, we have no other option now. Our force isn't enough to resist the pagans. If you stay, you will die or become slaves. As far as I know, members of the seven ancient factions will be killed instantly. You won't have the chance to even become a slave to them. Is that what you want?"

The entire hall fell into silence.

It was true. People who stayed would be killed mercilessly. They would never have a chance to survive.

However, after they had arrived in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, leaders of the seven ancient factions had surveyed that area. They all agreed that it was a dead road. They had no means to predict what stayed in there or where it would lead.

Everybody would feel fear instinctively towards unknown dangers. It was a part of the human nature.

That was why they had never thought about leaving through the other gateway.

"The Pure Land will go to that gateway first. We'll move now." As Xia Xin Yan saw them staying silent, she knew she couldn't convince them all. She pondered for a while and then let out a low shout to urge her people.

Then, Xia Xin Yan took the lead and yelled. "All Xia family's soldiers follow me. We will go to the entrance of the secret domain. We hope we will find a way to survive. If you want to stay, we don't care. I hope the five alien tribes would be merciful enough to spare your life."

After those words, she walked away determinedly.

Members of the Xia family from the Endless Sea scattered to gather their family members and followed Xia Xin Yan.



Elders of the Pure Land discussed secretly, then ordered their disciples to prepare. Finally, they decided to go towards the other gateway and seek a chance of survival.

Elders of the Devil Valley, Martial Spirit Palace, Spirit Treasure Sect, and the Heaven Temple hadn't decided yet. They were hesitant, considering the best solution.

Soon, they had another message from the main entrance: They had lost the entrance; the Pagans were coming!

This news had cut off the thought of survival in their hearts. Abruptly, they knew what to do now despite their hesitation.

If they stayed, they had to die. It was no doubt. But if they went to that unpredictable gateway, perhaps... they could survive.

Under this impasse, they finally made up their mind. They didn't hesitate anymore and shouted, then took their people to run towards the other gateway of the secret domain.

In the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, flows of people started to move, stomping on the ice and lava everywhere, heading to an unknown future. They all felt heavy and dispirited.

Six hours later...

Pagans started to appear in the entrance. With the support from the insiders, the guards at the entrance were all killed. After the five great alien tribes arrived, all those who resisted were cleaned up effortlessly.

To survive, they had to surrender. Pagans then planted the restrictions on them or controlled their families... Of course, some were heartless enough to want to seek riches and honor through the alien tribes.

Soon, Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Kante, Comoros, and Corpse Chief appeared in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain.

A strange light sparkled in Bao Ao's eyes, extending ahead of

them as if he wanted to survey something. After a while, he spoke up, "It's strange. There are no living people here. Where are the rest of the members of the seven ancient factions?"

A senile old man came over with a servile countenance. "Seems like they went to another secret gateway. That place is perilous. If they go there, only death awaits them."

Bao Ao nodded, then casually clapped his hands. The old man's head exploded, blood and brain splashing everywhere. "Crap! He knew they still have another secret entrance, but he didn't report us. Damn it!"

Members of the Human Clan shut their mouths, not daring to utter any word. They stayed silent like the dead.

"We're here to slaughter. We also want to collect souls. Even if they die, we shouldn't let them die in vain." Comoros said maliciously. "We will go there now to see if we can take anything."

His Yin Written Charm Scripture could absorb souls directly. His active participation was to collect soul energy to revive the patriarch of their Ghost Mark Clan. Seeing the good nutrients about to perish, he felt bad and irritated.

Bao Ao nodded in agreement, "Let's go."

After one hour, Bao Ao's group reached a place where energy was extremely chaotic. There were caves cut through space, sparkling with numerous colorful lights. Those beams of light weaved with each other like gossamer. However, they couldn't see the inside of the caves.

No human being was there.

"Damn it!" Comoros got angry. "The Human Clan has so many trashes. They didn't report us this situation. F\*ck them! We've made a wrong step. We gathered here for nothing!"

Bao Ao didn't say anything, while Jie Ji also kept silent. Kante, Corpse Chief, and the creature of the Dark Clan in the dim halo

were surveying the entrance quietly. They were trying to sense the disorderly energy, as if they wanted to find something.

After a while, the creature staying inside the dim halo protected by the three Yama King Abi, Hei Tian, and Hades sent its soul fluctuation to Yama King Abi.

Yama King Abi slightly changed his visage. He shook his head and waved his hand. "We should go. Our Dark Clan won't enter that door. If you are interested in it, you can go."

"It's the chaotic space basin. If you want to die, you can go there and play. Our Ancient Bao family won't join you." Bao Ao spoke after a while. He waved his hand with a dark face, signaling Gu Da Si to leave.

"Haha... I'm not interested in it. I'm going to find Shi Yan and have a little chitchat with him. If you want to go there, I... I give you my blessings." Jie Ji glared at Comoros, who was still hesitant. He laughed and then took his men out of the place.

# Chapter 678: Soul fragments

---

The Dark Clan and the Demon Clan left. Corpse Chief of the Corpse Clan and Kante of the Dark Spirit Clan didn't linger either. They got out of the place quietly, leaving Comoros of the Ghost Mark Clan and his fellows there.

Waiting until all the other tribes had left, Comoros's tense face relaxed.

He released his Soul Consciousness, sensing around for a while. He found that all of the other four tribes had left the Ice and Fire Secret Domain. A green light shot out from his eyes, as strange, gloomy cries emitted from his sleeves.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture, the halidom of the Ghost Mark Clan, flew out. Under his control, it flew towards the entrance of the secret domain.

Comoros sat down cross-legged, pouring his flows of pure Soul Consciousness into it. Shortly, the scripture diffused many beams of thick Mysterious Yin Qi, that seemed to never disperse.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture flew into the entrance of the secret domain, slowly moving forward in the matrix of the colorful lights. If one observed, they could see many blocks of meat floating deep inside that unpredictable entrance. In a deeper place, soul fragments bobbed here and there. It seemed that they didn't scatter according to natural principles.

Comoros was struck with joy, his eyes bright as stars. He started manipulating the Yin Written Charm Scripture even more carefully.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture was like a giant mouth that would never feel tired. In that matrix of light, it was devouring the soul fragments, entering deeper into the place.

The further it went, the more powerful the soul fragments were.

Soul fragments in this entrance belonged to warriors with strong soul energy and profound realm.

That area was bizarre, as if it could change the principles of heaven and earth. It could preserve the soul fragments, making them wander around the place eternally. They roamed around and never vanished.

Magical symbols of the Yin Written Charm Scripture sparkled one after another, indicating that they had gained the energy from the soul fragments.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture gathered more and more soul energy, while Comoros felt joyful receiving the response from the scripture.

He was surprised on finding some mighty soul fragments deep in the entrance. The energy inside wasn't less than the soul of a True God Realm warrior.

Comoros was struck. He got it immediately, shivering while sitting on the ground.

Those were just the soul fragments, but they weren't weaker than the True God Realm warriors. How strong that soul was when the warrior was alive?

King God Realm!

As this thought flashed through his head, Comoros wanted to swing his arms and shout. When the time came, nothing could stop it.

He suddenly got to know that people who had gone through this secret entrance weren't only the low-realm human warriors hiding in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain.

At some point far in the past, some imposing existences had entered this place and buried their bodies there as well.

Due to the existence of the strange field that went against

Nature's orders, the fragments of their powerful souls hadn't vanished yet, staying deep inside the entrance.

Only a special divine weapon like the Yin Written Charm Scripture could enter that chaotic space basin to collect the soul fragments, which could help repair the damage to the Yin Written Charm Scripture and revive their patriarch from the center of the ancient sacrificial altar.

Comoros felt like he had drunk ice-cold water on a burning hot day. He felt refreshed, as if his pores were filled with joy. He was shaking in thrill.

He had a premonition that not long afterward, he would be able to rebuild the soul of the Ghost Mark Clan's patriarch and revive him from the Yin Written Charm Scripture.

How long had it been?

It had been so long that he had almost forgotten the figure and the imposing power of his patriarch. If he hadn't used all of his energy to save the tribe, the Ghost Mark Clan would have soon vanished into the Yin Written Charm Scripture.

His patriarch had used his power, and he didn't even regret that he would have to scatter his God Soul to preserve the bloodline of the Ghost Mark Clan.

The great, mighty patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan had always been in the hearts of the Ghost Mark Clan's clansmen. They would never forget him. As soon as they had left the Yin Written Charm Scripture, they had pledged to resurrect their patriarch at any cost.

As long as he could be revived...

Comoros's face was cold. Malicious light sparkled from his eyes, as he was calculating something.

Among the five tribes, the Ghost Mark Clan was the weakest. Being the sage of the Ghost Mark Clan, he was mocked and disdained very often. Bao Ao and the other leaders wouldn't give

him any face at all.

It was all because the Ghost Mark Clan's force was weak. After so many years of being consumed continually, they had a significant loss that couldn't be recovered shortly.

And that brat Shi Yan...

Comoros smiled fiendishly.

So many resentments and sorrows vanished when he knew his patriarch would return soon. They had been waiting in sorrow for so long. Now, it was the time to receive what they deserved. He almost shouted so that everyone could know that the Ghost Mark Clan, the strong force that had its name known everywhere, was about to rise again.

Crack Crack Crack!

Suddenly, sounds of impact echoed from the Yin Written Charm Scripture. Comoros seemed to have been hit, spitting a mouthful blood. He became distressed.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture had entered too deep, and he couldn't see it for a long time. At this moment, he could only use the soul connection to feel its location.

Comoros recognized that the Yin Written Charm Scripture seemed to have encountered something formidable in that chaotic space basin. It could be a formation created naturally, or something strange that could make the Yin Written Charm Scripture shiver in fear.

Comoros hesitated for only one second. He decided quickly and retrieved the Yin Written Charm Scripture using his feeble soul connection with it.

As soon as the Yin Written Charm Scripture got his thought, it returned to him, following the old track.

After one hour, the Yin Written Charm Scripture fell into his

palm from the entrance of the secret domain. All the ghostly symbols and words of the Ghost Mark Clan became lively like snakes crawling. Waves of strong Mysterious Yin energy rippled from the scripture, hitting his soul.

His body and soul got minor damage, but Comoros didn't care about his body, releasing the soul to sense for a while. He couldn't press his joy, facing the sky and laughing contentedly.

Hot tears rolled down his face, without him knowing it. "Patriarch, you're about to come back to life. Little Comoros had to wait for you for too long."

Comoros cried and laughed at the same time, as if he were mentally ill.

...

Next to the ancient tree...

Bao Ao looked at the magic mirror floating above his head. A smile filled his face. The magic mirror was showing the city center where Shi Yan was staying. Bao Ao could see every face of the Human Clan's hotshots.

"That kid's good. I didn't think that he could kill Lin Meng's team. Haha... It's beyond our estimation. Interesting, really interesting."

Jie Ji glared at the mirror and then laughed. "Seems like we don't need to hurry. Yeah, first, we should send some men to kill the Human Clan members that escaped that area. After we clean them up, we will continue. We aren't in a rush."

Bao Ao smiled warmly, turning around to order his people. "Bo Ruo, Gu Da Si, you two take our men and check the entire Perpetual Night Forest. When you meet human beings, kill them all."

Bo Ruo smiled deliberately. She was riding a level 8 beast, holding a little girl in her lap. She smacked the girl and then



chuckled. "Yes, sir."

Gu Da Si and Bo Rou didn't talk much, riding their giant beasts and flying away like masses of black clouds.

Jie Ji was surprised for a while, then hastened to assign his soldiers. "Ke Mu! You fool, why don't you move you're a\*s now! If you're late, we will have nothing to harvest!"

A group of Demon Clan's clansmen standing behind Jie Ji in black armor immediately rode their beasts, flying away.

Kante of the Dark Spirit Clan didn't say anything, sending a thought to his people.

Shortly, the dead souls' evil lair appeared above an area where many human beings were running for their lives. Dark green tentacles extended from the evil lair, dragging those people.

They were the members of the Aoke family. Bai Gen Seng could only watch the tentacles of the dead souls' evil lair. He had no choice but to try dodging them all, trying to make a way to the edge of the Perpetual Night Forest.

Corpse Chief of the Corpse Clan also ordered his members. "Get underground and collect the corpses."

Members of the Corpse Clan, except for Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea, started to get into the ground, disappearing shortly.

"Comoros hasn't come out yet. I think he does want something." Jie Ji laughed evilly. "He doesn't want to live anymore, I guess. No need to mention him, even King God Realm experts have to die on entering that place!"

"Never mind him. We should visit Shi Yan. When he gets out, he will find us." Bao Ao frowned, as he disdained the Ghost Mark Clan. In his eyes, this tribe was so weak that it wasn't worth his attention.

"How about you?" Jie Ji looked at the Dark Clan and the dim

halo.

Apparently, a creature was staying inside that dim halo protected by Yama Kings Abi, Hei Tian, and Hades. It seemed that creature didn't have a body; it existed in a mysterious soul form.

Even he and Bao Ao couldn't see how strong that one was. They could only know that it had a strange living aura and the Dark Clan's aura. However, its energy fluctuation was something really special they had never seen before. Jie Ji and Bao Ao were a little bit afraid of that creature.

"We'll go to the city where the Human Clan gathers," said Yama King Abi faintly.

Jie Ji nodded. He and Bao Ao exchanged looks, then slowly soared up into the sky. They drifted like two clusters of cotton clouds, moving towards Shi Yan's city.

Corpse Chief and Kante followed them closely, not waiting for Comoros. In their hearts, they didn't really appreciate the Ghost Mark Clan, and didn't treat Comoros like someone at their level.

Not long after they had left, the ancient tree emitted energy waves, and Comoros stepped out with a bright face.

Strange gray clouds floated in his eyes. They were made of the extremely thick Mysterious Yin Qi, which carried a peculiar power.

Comoros's aura had a total change. Although he stood still on the spot, the heaven and earth energy rolled towards him as if it were attracted by something.

He was in the True God Realm, but he only had one-third of his energy remaining when he got out of the confinement. Finally, he had restored it fully.

Confidence came back to him, changing his bearing with it.

# Chapter 679: Drink

---

City center.

Human Clan, Winged Clan, Dark Devil Clan, and even the Monster Clan were all busy. Under the arrangement of Yang Zhuo's team, people who were allowed to get into the city had submitted the materials to supplement the barriers, formations, and restrictions.

Rare and precious materials submitted were arranged and distributed properly into the formations.

At this moment, the city center became hustling and bustling. The cheers and compliments of women resounded continually. People who were allowed to enter the city felt lucky, as they were still alive after a big catastrophe. They followed Yang Zhuo's orders obediently.

Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao had returned. The Yang family's traitors were all killed.

Yang Tian Emperor didn't hate them for leaving the family, but he hated them because they had betrayed the Yangs. They had enticed the others to make them leave, promising them something good from the Pure Land and Martial Spirit Palace.

The ringleaders of this plan were Feng Xiao of Devil Valley and Xue Mu of Pure Land. They had used power and position to make Shen Lin and Dong Ji follow them. These two didn't care about the friendship they had with the Yangs, and decided to attack them.

In Yang Tian Emperor's eyes, these people were worth ten thousand death sentences. So, they were all dead now.

Yu Rou and Yi Tian Mo were in the True God Realm after using the Creator's Divine Pond. When they came back with high spirits, they felt contented on seeing everybody safe and sound.

In this chaotic time, following an imposing and wise leader was

their luck. And luckily, Shi Yan was such a leader.

Bing Qing Tong, Leng Dan Qing, Han Cui, and Shuang Yu Zhu stayed in the city center, gazing at Shi Yan as if they were afraid that he would do something lustful. They all had upset eyes.

Currently, there were hundreds of beauties in this city. Those women acted like they had taken aphrodisiac. When they saw Shi Yan, they threw him flirty glances, revealing their most prominent features, as if they hated that they couldn't lay him on his back and jump on him.

In this area, only depending on the strong could help them live longer. Those women understood this principle well.

In their thoughts, if they could have a night with Shi Yan, their lives would be secured, and they wouldn't need to worry about the pagans anymore.

They had used all of their tricks. As long as they saw Shi Yan, they would become enthusiastic, making the other men glare with jealousy.

Shi Yan didn't have much free time. He observed for a while and then sat down on the round platform in the center of the city. He started to concentrate his mind.

The Essence Qi of Lin Meng and Nie Ruo was too much. The energy of the two True God Realm experts rolled torrentially into his acupuncture points, making them swollen and painful. While the Essence Qi was refined, he had to bear painful torture with a grimace.

Fortunately, he had found the solution.

Bing Qing Tong, Han Cui, Leng Dan Qing, and Shuang Yu Zhu were all here. When he couldn't resist the violent surging negative force, just with a wink, the four beautiful snow ice flowers would help him vent out his lustful desire.

That was why he didn't worry that the negative energy would

turn around and attack him. At the same time, the four snow flowers would receive significant benefits from him.

As they had just entered the True God Realm, they hadn't accumulated enough energy. It would take them at least ten years more to gather enough Essence Qi to reach the threshold of the next realm.

Shi Yan had helped them take a big step forward.

The overflowing massive, mysterious energy had been distributed to the four snow flowers and Long Zhu. The abundant remaining energy had improved his entire body to an unimaginable level.

Even his Star Martial Spirit had gained a great benefit from the mysterious energy.

The Essence Qi ancient tree in his abdomen had all of its branches turned as translucent as jade, filled with condensed Essence Qi.

He just needed another time of recognition to enter the True God Realm.

He had made up his mind. After things were done here, he would enter the Creator's Divine Pond right away to leap into the True God Realm.

Under people's efforts, formations, barriers, and restrictions everywhere in the city restored their functions. Even the collapsed outer city now had many ugly dunes of soil jutting here and there after receiving the energy.

When Shi Yan descended from the round platform, he found that it was good to have many people working together. Everything worked out well. He didn't see anything that made him worried.

At that moment, Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang came close to him with grim countenances. They told him that the Ice and Fire Secret Domain had fallen.

This news didn't surprise him much. Since he knew the pagans had controlled the entrance, he could predict the situation. Shi Yan was still calm, just arching his brows, "How many of your people are staying in there?"

"Several thousand," Yun Hao smiled miserably. "Low realm warriors or the families of the elders... They aren't capable of defending themselves."

Yu Wan Jiang also wore a grim face, as his heart was filled with worries.

"We have no solution," Shi Yan kept silent for a while and then sighed. "Press down your grief. Perhaps... they were all killed. I can't help you. If you had stayed in the city center right at the beginning, it wouldn't have been that terrible."

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang were dispirited. They knew their assumptions were wrong, as they had put the trust in Lin Meng's team, which resulted in several thousands of their disciples burying themselves altogether.

Shi Yan tried to comfort them for a while. Next, he released his Soul Consciousness to control the Utmost Eight Purgatories City and reorder the chaotic forces to wait for the next attack.

After one hour of quietness, two gray cotton masses of clouds drifted towards them from the horizon, appearing outside the city center.

After a while, Corpse Chief, Corpse Mount, and Corpse Sea, the Dark Clan, and Kante also showed themselves, standing together with Bao Ao and Jie Ji.

All human beings in the city center felt tense instantly, their faces changing drastically. Everybody knew their responsibility as they started preparing discreetly.

"Haha, we meet again. You, you aren't ordinary at all. You could defeat the seven ancient factions, causing them a great loss." Bao

Ao rose his voice and laughed. "Little buddy, won't you come out to see your friends?"

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea standing next to Corpse Chief also felt nervous, gazing at the city center.

"Don't go there!" Yang Tian Emperor shouted.

Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, and Bing Qing Tong started to ask him not to leave the city center.

He was the soul of the city center. If the city lost its soul, it couldn't generate its most powerful attacks or defense.

They were afraid that the pagans were just trying to entice Shi Yan. The moment he got out of the city, they would kill him immediately. After that, they would demolish the city and extinguish the light of Human Clan.

Shi Yan frowned then nodded. "I understand."

Then, he turned into a beam of dim light, gliding above the wall, reaching the place where the disorderly energy of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City was hovering. He showed himself, smiling to Bao Ao's group. "Hello... I wonder what you want to advise me for you to have traveled this far? I'm sorry, but the city's a mess right now. Forgive me for not inviting you to visit the city. If you want to find me for a drink, can we have it outside?"

"Haha, good kid. I like you." Jie Ji patted his thigh, his eyes bright. Right when he finished, he disappeared into thin air.

A moment later, Jie Ji appeared in the center of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City, as if he didn't care he was in the middle of danger. Jugs of garnet wine floated one by one in front of him. When he tore the seal, the enchanting smell of wine permeated the place, making people drunk.

"Come here... Come here. We should drink first. We won't talk any business." Jie Ji extending his arm, and three jugs of wine flew towards Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's cold face cracked a smile. "Alright."

He took one step forward, as if he didn't know that dangers and the other alien tribes were waiting for the perfect chance to kill him.

He walked until he was three meters away from Jie Ji. Ten jugs of wine floated in the air between them. Each jug was as big as a jar of rice, emitting the intoxicating fragrance of good wine.

Shi Yan didn't wait for Jie Ji to talk more. He grabbed a jug and drank it. In front of everybody, he faced up the sky to drink the liquor. His Adam's apple moved as he gulped audibly. At this moment, he looked like a boorish fella, who didn't know he was in danger.

Jie Ji was startled. He didn't think that this human kid could have such guts. He watched the young man with great interest.

Gulp! Gulp!

Shi Yan didn't say anything and just slugged like a cow drinking water. After around ten seconds, he had finished a whole jug of wine. Shi Yan bottomed up his bottle and talked to Jie Ji, who was standing opposite to him. "I didn't spill a drop. I didn't disappoint your good wine and goodwill, right?"

Jie Ji beamed a smile, which then broadened into a wild laughter. "Good! Enough heroic spirit! Haha, you kid, you're too bad. I like it!"

Pausing for a while, Jie Ji stopped laughing, looking at him with a serious face. "You are human, and I'm a demon. Shouldn't you be afraid that I would poison your wine to kill you?"

Shi Yan cleaned the trickle of wine on the corner of his mouth and then laughed loudly. "Oh yeah, I should. However, I've heard that the Demon Clan is always upright. You will never use shortcuts or wicked plans to deal with the enemies. That's why I dared to drink the wine. Argh, if Comoros gave me this bottle, I



would never touch even a drop."

Jie Ji patted his thigh, his smile broader. He felt quite good when Shi Yan was servile to him. "Good! Straightforward enough! I like you."

Then, Jie Ji took a bottle and gulped right in front of Shi Yan. He had no wave of energy surging around him, as if he hadn't put up any guard.

"Kill him! Kill him quickly!"

Many people in the city let out low shouts with great hope in their eyes.

They all saw that Jie Ji had no aura or waves of surging energy on his body, as if he weren't taking any precautions. If Shi Yan attacked him now, at least, he could cause him to struggle or get hurt a little bit.

"Shut up!" Yang Tian Emperor harrumphed, glaring at those people.

Most of them were the ones that had agreed to enter the city, the members of the seven ancient factions and some small forces. They weren't too loyal, and their discrimination towards the alien tribes was deep.

Yang Tian Emperor rolled his eyes while the other kept their mouths shut. They bowed down, and didn't dare to say anything.

"Drink, drink."

Bao Ao laughed for a while and then came to them. He casually grabbed Jie Ji's good wine and then slugged. Just like Jie Ji, he was relaxed, as if he were visiting his friend's house. The other couldn't sense the feeling of daggers being drawn in this scene at all.

# Chapter 680: Demon Testing Needle

---

Shi Yan, Bao Ao, and Jie Ji stood in the center of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City and drank as if they didn't see anyone else. The Human Clan in the city, along with the Corpse Clan, Dark Clan, and Dark Spirit Clan outside the city, were all stunned, looking at the three of them drinking.

Ten strong liquor jugs were drunk, and not even a single drop was spilled.

"We've finished Jie Ji's wine, so shall we try mine?" Bao Ao threw the empty bottle away, smiling brightly while looking at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was surprised, nodded and then smiled. "We shouldn't consider one side and neglect the other side. You are my guest. We will do as you wish."

"Good!"

Bao Ao roared and then swung his left hand. Ten new jugs of wine lined up, as a special fragrance of liquor permeated the area.

Shi Yan didn't hesitate much. He grabbed a jug and drank crazily in front of everybody.

Strong liquor flowed down his throat, blending with Jie Ji's good wine in his stomach. When the two different liquors touched each other, it raised a furious heat in his internal organs. Shi Yan was struck, as a streak of pain appeared in between his eyebrows.

The blood in each of his vessels was boiling up, burning his entire body.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji didn't drink immediately. They were gazing at Shi Yan without blinking, as a strange light flared in their eyes.

At that moment, Shi Yan's body turned pink entirely. Two faint flames emitted from his nostrils, which looked really terrifying.

It seemed that he didn't feel pain. Under the attentive looks of the Head Masters of the two ancient Demon families, he pressed down the turbulence in his stomach and continued drinking, as if he didn't know about the change of his body.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji studied him. Their eyes gradually brightened, as a divine light radiated immensely.

After a long while, Bao Ao and Jie Ji exchanged looks. However, they didn't say anything but continued drinking. They looked a little bit strange, as if they had some deep thought in their heads.

"Is he crazy? Why is he drinking with the Demon Clan?"

In the city, Long Ying's small face was filled with an inexplicable surprise. She shook her head as she couldn't figure it out. She thought that Shi Yan was being stupid.

Many people thought the same, but they didn't dare to utter their opinions.

Since Yang Tian Emperor's were raking through them as if he would kill them immediately if they dared to show their discontentment. They just bit their lips to prevent their tongues from slipping.

Outside the city...

Kante and Corpse Chief, together with the three Yama Kings Abi, Hei Tian, and Hades, kept silent as they were allowing Bao Ao and Jie Ji to act strangely. They just frowned, looking at Shi Yan.

It seemed they had established a secret agreement with Bao Ao. They knew what the others were doing, so they didn't hasten to take action.

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea stood next to Corpse Chief. The two of them had intelligence and the inheritance of their clan. As their power grew, they weren't dull anymore. After watching for a while, Corpse Mount asked, "Master, is he okay?"

Corpse Chief was sitting on a massive coffin. He looked like a ten-thousand-year ancient mummy in the deep forest, with fur grown all over his body. His fingernails were one meter long.

Corpse Chief glared at Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea, then shifted his look to Shi Yan, who was still drinking. He spoke up with his unique strident voice. "No wonder why you could befriend with him. This human isn't like the others. If the Human Clan's members are like him, we don't need to chase them to the dead end."

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea didn't understand much, still looking at their master with surprise.

Corpse Chief didn't explain further.

Shi Yan felt so hot inside as if his blood was burning. Mist diffused from his body, actually containing alcohol.

He suddenly felt the mark on his forehead burning scorchingly. As the heat was burdening him, a strange energy generated from his boiling blood started to gather at the mark on his head.

The mark he was trying conceal became clear and uncontrollable.

Shi Yan changed his face as he found that the black ribbon he used to cover his forehead was burning. Soon, this mark would be exposed. Shi Yan was worried.

His blood was boiling torrentially. It seemed the blend of Jie Ji's and Bao Ao's liquors had created a magical change in his body, burning his blood, and pouring the Blood Qi into the mark.

Shi Yan understood that Bao Ao and Jie Ji had done something related to the mark on his forehead.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji scrutinized him, seeing the black ribbon melting on his head. Their looks became odder.

"Shi Yan, come out and talk for a while. Don't worry. If Jie Ji and I are here, no one will dare to hurt you. We should find a place and

talk, okay?" As Bao Ao considered it to be the right time, he grinned warmly. Jie Ji nodded, turning around and throwing a look at Kante and the Dark Clan. "If anyone dares to touch you, I'll make him miserable. Don't worry. As long as Bao Ao and I are here, you will be safe."

Bao Ao's and Jie Ji's voices resounded to every corner. Yang Tian Emperor's group could hear them clear and loud in the city center.

People from the city center started to advise him loudly. Yang Tian Emperor, Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang and the others were telling him not to believe in the two demons.

Bing Qing Tong's group of four women was even more flurried. Worries flooded their hearts.

Only Qi Tian Oldie, Long Zhu didn't say anything. He just frowned, his face complicated.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck. He furrowed his brows, pondered for a while, and then nodded with a red face. "Let's go."

He threw a look over his shoulder and then shouted coldly. "No one's allowed to leave the city."

Bing Qing Tong's group wanted to jump off the city to reach him. Hearing him, they didn't dare to act rashly.

When interacting with other people, women should listen to their men to give them face; they had to keep this rule even if they didn't want to do so.

Bing Qing Tong's group understood it well. Although they were worried about him, they had to listen to him. They came back to their locations with worries, praying for him to be safe and sound.

"Don't worry, I understand," Shi Yan beamed a smile to the four women.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji exchanged looks quietly. They left the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. Also, they tried to avoid the Dark Clan, the

Corpse Clan, and the Dark Spirit Clan, going deep into the forest behind the city.

Shi Yan followed them. After they stopped, he appeared right behind them. Shi Yan forced a smile while asking, "What did you give me to drink? Why do I feel as if my blood is boiling, making me dizzy?"

Jie Ji cracked a smile, then rolled his eyes at Shi Yan while scolding. "You stinky kid, don't show your contented smile to me. Bao Ao and I have treasured those jugs of wine for such a long time. Usually, we don't even dare to enjoy them. You have enraged me as you drank it all without being grateful."

Bao Ao smiled and explained to him. "If you drink my and Jie Ji's wine separately, they will bring you a marvelous effect. But, if you blend them, the effect will be stunning, you know? Haha... Well, I shouldn't explain the details. You can enjoy and feel it slowly. Of course, normal people won't be able to stand the mix of these two kinds of liquors. They will explode to death."

Shi Yan discolored, almost jumping up from his spot. "I'm a normal human, too!"

"You aren't a normal human!" Bao Ao and Jie Ji gazed at him with a serious look on their faces.

"Why am I not normal?"

"If you were a normal human being, you should have exploded to death already. Unless... you were at the King God Realm," Bao Ao replied seriously. His face showed that he wasn't joking.

Shi Yan was scared.

"You have the Demon Clan's bloodline in your body. Otherwise, do you think you could survive until this moment?" Jie Ji laughed evilly. "I never expected that our Demon Clan could have an alien like you. Haha... Those human beings have submitted to you, right? Not bad. Although the process is somehow beyond my

expectation, the results are alright. A Demon Clan's kid rules the humanity... Haha, I do want to see it. I can say that our Demon Clan is about to thrive again. It's destiny."

Shi Yan was petrified.

He finally confirmed that the blood in his body belonged to Demon Clan's bloodline.

When he saw Bao Ao the first time, he had this vague feeling. Otherwise, Bao Ao would never let him stay alive. He would have killed him shortly, instead of leaving a mark on his neck.

Jie Ji rubbed his hands as he felt excited. He warmly patted Shi Yan's shoulder. "Don't worry. As long as you belong to our clan, no matter what happens, we'll protect you."

"Don't babble. First, we need to verify which branch he belongs to in our Clan." Bao Ao frowned while his trembling fingers fumbled, taking out a silver needle.

This silver needle was as long as a finger. With a close look, people would notice that it was hollow. The needle had some visible patterns on its body, which vaguely formed an ancient and exquisite devil formation.

This Demon Testing Needle could distinguish branches of Demon Clan using blood.

After so many years, the Demon Clan's bloodline was scattered widely, and many families had gone extinct. Many other races had their blood mixed with the Demon Clan's, that only the Demon Testing Needle could differentiate.

"We don't need that mark anymore. I'll help you erase it." Bao Ao laughed, putting his fingertip on the mark on Shi Yan's neck. Then, he gently wiped the mark away.

Shi Yan felt an insignificant pain in his neck. He checked and found nothing there.

"Come here. Drip one drop of your blood, and let us check which branch you belong to. Haha... A bold fella like you should belong to a brave and strong family. I'm sure about it." Jie Ji laughed as he was so excited.

Bao Ao also looked at him.

Shi Yan kept silent for a while and then nodded. "Alright, I also want to know."

Then, a drop of garnet blood flew out from his fingertip, falling onto the Demon Testing Needle.



# Chapter 681: That's how we work!

---

Crack!

The Demon Testing Needle shattered.

The drop of ruby blood fell, then rolled on the ground. However, it didn't seep into the ground but revolved, releasing a tremendous aura.

Shi Yan paled slightly.

The drop of blood he had squeezed off his finger was the Immortal Blood. The imposing blood aura it carried was condensed from the enormous energy. Also, this blood was different from the blood in his body.

He had condensed ten drops of Immortal Blood, which wasn't as much as even 1% of the blood in his body. However, it contained a tremendous, imposing energy.

He wanted to use this Immortal Blood to gain the acceptance of Bao Ao and Jie Ji. He wanted to make a good relationship with the Demon Clan to protect the Yang family and his human members.

The five alien tribes were too intimidating. If the situation weren't too harsh, he didn't want to turn his back to the five alien tribes and risk his life against them.

If he could borrow the force, he would never deny the chance. In his eyes, the Immortal Blood perhaps would be the key to connect him and Bao Ao, Jie Ji. Thus, to gain the acceptance he didn't use his blood, but a drop of the Immortal Blood.

He could never imagine that the Immortal Blood drop would break the Demon Testing Needle. This had frightened him, as he thought that perhaps he had done it the wrong way.

Shi Yan kept silent. He was discreetly urging the energy in his body to get ready in case he was attacked.

He knew the reason why Bao Ao and Jie Ji had treated him well and hadn't killed him yet. These two had considered him the fellow of their clan. That's why they had protected him.

If he weren't the member of their clan, Shi Yan believed that Bao Ao and Jie Ji would never show him mercy. Their attack would be more furious than ever.

Shi Yan felt tense, and he was secretly prepared. If Bao Ao and Jie Ji were hostile, he would run away immediately and never hesitate.

In his eyes, Bao Ao and Jie Ji were more dangerous than Long Zhu. At least, they were at the Third Sky of True God Realm.

In this place, if these two attacked him, he could only run away to survive.

When his energy started to move, his boiling blood was more blazing. Under the effect of the liquors, his blood seemed to be refined. They even proactively took his Essence Qi to turn it into Immortal Blood.

This finding startled him more. He sensed for a while and found his blood flowing faster in his vessels, as if someone had forced it to move.

Indeed, his boiling blood had a miraculous change under the effect of the wine.

Shi Yan changed his face while being alert, looking at Bao Ao and Jie Ji.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji seemed like lightning had struck on them, standing dully on their spots. They stooped, looking at the pieces of the Demon Testing Needle, and the drop of Immortal Blood. They had a stunned complexion, as if someone had cast the Body Fixing Technique on them.

Shi Yan was also astounded. He frowned then used his soul to urge the drop of Immortal Blood on the ground to get back into his

body through the cut on his fingertip.

Bao Ao's and Jie Ji's eyes moved along with the Immortal Blood, seeing it entering Shi Yan's body. The two suddenly shivered. A terrifying light radiated from their eyes, which was like real several-meters-long ribbons.

Their dazzling line of sight fell on Shi Yan's finger, giving him a burning pain, as if he had put his finger into a flaming liquid.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji still couldn't utter a word, their faces looking frightening. Light sparkled in their eyes like lines of fire.

Shi Yan didn't know about their thoughts. He discreetly stepped backward, frowned while putting up his guard. "What's going on? Why did the Demon Testing Needle get...broken?"

Bao Ao and Jie Ji trembled slightly. Their mouths twitched, as if they could finally react.

They exchanged looks and retrieved the light in their eyes. Their faces looked as if they had just discovered a whole new continent. They seemed to be petrified. They wanted to say something, but didn't know how to start it, which made them clumsily funny.

After a long while, Bao Ao stopped his awkward action first. He took several deep breaths, gave some dry coughs, and then said, "Shi Yan, agree with us about one thing. Come with us to this place."

Jie Ji looked at him with longing eyes.

Shi Yan was astounded. He pondered and then asked, "So my bloodline... is verified?"

Bao Ao and Jie Ji smiled. Their thick-skinned face bloomed like a flower, nodding continually.

"Which branch of the Demon Clan?" asked Shi Yan curiously.

"Come with us. You will get it naturally. Haha... We'll help you solve the problem here. We'll make the other clans withdraw. We

won't disturb your place. How about that?" Jie Ji smiled until his eyes got as narrow as a thin line. He was smiling and begging. "You have to go there. Without you... It's not good."

Shi Yan was astounded for a while. "I can't leave now. I need time."

He was half a step into the True God Realm, so he wanted to use the Creator's Divine Pond to break through the True God Realm first. Then only he would think what to do next.

"No problem. We will wait for you outside. Yeah, we will protect you guys. Once you're done, you will leave with us." Bao Ao said generously. "My men will help you defend. You don't need to worry about the stuff here."

"I can send my men to you to use," Jie Ji also showed his good will.

Shi Yan felt awkward looking at these two bold leaders, but he didn't know what they wanted to do.

He thought about it carefully and then nodded. "Okay, after I've arranged everything, I'll go with you. Yeah, where do you want to go?"

"You'll get to know. Don't worry. We're not going to harm you... Maybe, you will have a new magical encounter, I guess." Bao Ao patted his chest affirmatively.

"Alright," Shi Yan agreed begrudgingly.

What Bao Ao and Jie Ji had offered him was too generous. He could avoid the fight with the five alien tribes, and, from their attitudes, Shi Yan understood that they could even fight the other tribes for him. This change was inexplicable to him.

"Alright, you should solve your stuff first. We will help you resolve the other things." Bao Ao swung his hand as if fighting against the other tribes wasn't a hard task to him.

Shi Yan was suspicious. However, he followed them back to the city center. Still, he didn't know what the two cunning Demon Clan's leaders wanted to do.

After he got back to the city, he saw that Bao Ao and Jie Ji were still standing there.

They fiddled with the fragments of the Demon Testing Needle in their hands. Looking at the crystal pieces, they couldn't hold their joy anymore, as if they had found a large treasure.

"No matter what we could have thought, we would never have thought that he belongs to... that race. Haha, I didn't expect that that race still has a generation of descendants. God does favor our Clan!" Long afterward, Bao Ao sighed, but his face was joyful. He was trembling.

"Who could have thought about it?" Jie Ji was also stirred up. "I thought it would be super hard to enter the First Demon Area. Haha, with him, we have the key already. It's time for our Demon Clan to raise. If that race still has the bloodline and inheritance, we still have the hope of our prosperity. It's too good to be true."

"We should solve his problems to ease his worries," Bao Ao pondered for a while and then smiled. "As long as we protect him, he could have enough time to grow in this Divine Great Land."

Jie Ji nodded heavily.

They exchanged looks and grinned, then disappeared into thin air as if they could tear space.

In the next moment, Bao Ao and Jie Ji appeared next to Corpse Chief, Kante, and the Dark Clan. Comoros had appeared with changed makings. He was filled with confidence, as a light sparkled radiantly in his eyes.

"How is it?" asked Kante.

"He belongs to my Demon Clan, it's no doubt. Otherwise, he wouldn't return safely to the city. Haha..." Bao Ao laughed and

replied.

"Which branch of your Demon Clan? With the Demon Testing Needle, I think it's easy to verify him, right?" Comoros frowned, as he felt really annoyed inside. He wanted to kill that brat. But, if they could prove he was one of the Demon Clan's members, Bao Ao and Jie Ji would protect him, which made it hard to kill him then.

"Haha, which branch... Excuse us, but we can't tell you. You just need to know that he belongs to our Demon Clan." Bao Ao was still smiling, but his eyes were cold and sharp. "Those lowly people are his servants. Jie Ji and I have agreed that since Shi Yan's our fellow, he has the right to live in the Divine Great Land. Those people are his slaves, so they can live too. This is our opinion. What do you think?"

Comoros shouted. "No! When we came here, we made it clear that if he belongs to the Demon Clan, he can live. But those humans have to die!"

Corpse Chief of the Corpse Clan, Kante of the Dark Spirit Clan, and the three Yama Kings of the Dark Clan all wore grimaced faces. Apparently, they didn't agree with Bao Ao and Jie Ji's solution.

"If you don't agree with us, it's okay," Jie Ji grinned fiendishly. "If you want to take action, besides the Human Clan, you will have to deal with the Demon Clan too. Oh right, the Monster Clan is with him now as well. Are you sure you want to do this?"

As soon as he finished, Comoros and Kante paled indignantly. Rage rose in their hearts, as they were gazing at Bao Ao and Jie Ji with red eyes.

"That's how the Demon Clan works. Talk to our fists." Bao Ao rose his head arrogantly as he didn't put in mind the others' objection. "If you aren't so pleased with our opinion, we can always fight. You will face humans, monsters, and us. Decide yourself."

"Good! I will remember that!" Comoros clenched his jaw and then shouted. "I don't believe you can keep swaggering. I want to see if you can protect him forever!"

Then, Comoros left along with his clansmen from the Ghost Mark Clan.

People of the Corpse Clan, the Dark Clan, and the Dark Spirit Clan coldly looked at Bao Ao and Jie Ji for a while. However, they didn't choose to attack them directly. Eventually, they took their men and left.

## Chapter 682: A new world!

---

Shi Yan returned to the city center with a red face. He sat down immediately, his face slightly fierce. Yang Tian Emperor, Cao Qiu Dao, Di Shan, and Yu Rou gathered around him instinctively, looking at him bewilderedly.

"I'm alright," Shi Yan beamed a reluctant smile. "It's not like what you thought. Bao Ao and Jie Ji didn't hurt me. Anyway, my body is a little bit strange. I need to adjust my state for a while."

Then, he closed his eyes and started to urge his blood and Qi to scatter the liquor's special effect, and blend it with his blood little by little.

That liquor helped him condense the Immortal Blood. This discovery surprised him cheerily. He would never let this chance slip away.

Drops of wine burned his stomach, making him redden, as if he had a furnace in his body. Heat waves rippled furiously from him.

Although Bing Qing Tong's group was worried about him, the technique they had cultivated was the Ice Jade Technique, which made it hard for them to adapt well to heat. The four women had sweat all over their bodies, so they had to step backward, standing far from Shi Yan.

As Yang Tian Emperor's team didn't know what had happened or what was going on, they could only watch over him, and they didn't even care about what was happening in the world out there.

In their eyes, Shi Yan being safe and sound was the most crucial matter. If he met anything unexpected, this city would be destroyed quickly.

The refugees who had just entered the city didn't know anything. They all felt worried and resentful, but they didn't dare to say a word.



It was the most critical time, when the pagans were still watching them as if watching their preys. Shi Yan was the owner of this city, but he seemed to not care about the situation. This made them worried about the sudden ambush of those pagan tribes.

Yun Hao, Yu Wan Jiang, Di Shan, Yi Tian Mo, and the others were floating near the edge of the city to watch over the alien tribes, in case they made a sudden move.

It happened fast, and this guarding group hadn't prepared for this situation. They were all bewildered, not knowing what was going on.

The alien tribes... retreated.

The leaders of the Dark Clan, Corpse Clan, Dark Spirit Clan, and the Ghost Mark paled as if they had swallowed flies. They took their men and left quietly.

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang gawked, dropping their jaws.

"What... What's going on?" Yun Hao turned around to look at the Fighting Union's hegemon standing behind him. "They came from ten thousand miles away to eradicate the Human Clan, right? Why did they withdraw at the most critical moment?"

The forces the five great tribes had shown them was much beyond Lin Meng's five ancient factions. If they attacked, no one could be sure that the city would stand unharmed.

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang were always tense. They had prepared well for a bloody battle.

However, at this moment, the four tribes had left, leaving only the Demon Tribe, who seemed to be throwing a big party over there instead of attacking the human beings in the city. Did they still look like a furious enemy?

Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang felt like their brains were so small that they were unusable now.

"The pagans withdrew! They have withdrawn!"

Some leaders of the smaller forces stood on the city wall and observed. They couldn't help but shout, as if they were celebrating the New Year. Their faces were filled with happiness and hope.

The voices echoed in the city, giving the ones who were worried about their coming death a heavy dose of tranquilizer. They hugged each other while celebrating, as they had survived a disaster.

They had thought that they would be killed tragically by the heartless pagans. However, the alien tribes had left before the two sides engaged in a battle. What was going on?

Everybody was so happy that they were astounded. However, they were also suspicious as they didn't know what had happened.

Everybody understood that the strange operation of the alien tribes was related to Shi Yan. However, he was meditating with his eyes closed. No one dared to disturb him, so no one could know what had happened.

The leaders of the Monster Clan hovering in the sky had prepared well to fight with the alien tribes. Seeing the significant change, they were startled, as they couldn't make head or tail of it.

"Oh, no fighting? What did Shi Yan tell the... two Demons? Why did they leave?" Yan Long grabbed his flaming hair, but he couldn't figure it out.

"Ghost knows," Xue Lie shook his head continually. He seemed a little bit disappointed. "The energy in my body's surging. I'm prepared to kill. F\*ck it. No fight... Disappointed... I'm so disappointed."

Yang Tian Emperor and Cao Qiu Dao glared at Shi Yan with great surprise.

In their hearts, Shi Yan had told the leaders of the Demon Clan something which created such a great reaction. However, they

couldn't think of what had made the alien tribes withdraw.

Many young people in the city were screaming and yelling happily, as if they had received a new life. The heavy stone pressing on their hearts was lifted.

At this moment, they vaguely thought that as long as they went with Shi Yan, they would survive well in the Divine Great Land, without worrying about the alien tribes.

They could imagine the tragic end of those who had left.

This small city was the only shelter for the Human Clan in the Divine Great Land. Once they could get in, they could survive. If they got ejected, the alien tribes would kill them shortly.

They suddenly felt so lucky that they had a wide vision to not follow the others and leave this place.

After an unknown period, while people were high with the relief and happiness, Shi Yan woke up. He grinned and then told them, "If you guys still have energy, we need to rebuild the outer city."

Yang Tian Emperor and Li Zheng Rong were dumbstruck, looking at him.

"Demon Clan's still out there," said Li Zheng Rong.

"It's okay. I'll ask them to stay out of our sight," Shi Yan stood up from the round platform, strolling towards the city wall. He talked to Bao Ao and Jie Ji, who were partying. "If you guys want to drink and have fun, please move further. My people are scared of you. Haha..."

"F\*ck you, stinky kid! Do we obstruct your eyes here?" Jie Ji laughed and scolded him. He swung his hands. "Everybody, stay away. They don't like us. We should go now."

Strong warriors of the Demon Tribe wore black armor. They were all as cold as ice mountains, with a bloodthirsty aura, which made people be scared of them naturally.

They stood up and rode their demonic beasts away under Jie Ji's yelling.

Bao Ao beamed a forced smile talking to Bo Rou and Gu Da Si, "Tell our fellows to retreat further. Yeah, fifty miles then. Remember to drag those dead bodies with you."

"Sir..." Bo Rou wanted to say something, but she didn't finish.

Bao Ao swung his hand, talking faintly, "...Don't ask much. Later on, you will know what we've done today will give our Demon Clan a new future."

Bo Rou and Gu Da Si were struck. They nodded and said nothing, then took their men to leave.

Many Demon Tribe's members were skeptical. Hearing Bao Ao's words, they calmed down. Although they didn't know the real reason, they understood it was a critical matter, and they chose to believe in their Head Master's vision.

Many people in the city came to the city wall, looking at the place where the Demon Clan was gathering.

They saw that the demonic beasts the clansmen were riding had carried the dead human bodies away. Some were actually dismembering and swallowing the corpses. The horrible sounds from them sent shivers down people's spines. Some women paled, as if they were about to throw up at any moment.

They could see clearly that those bodies belonged to the ones who stayed in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, or the ones who had chosen to leave.

They knew many of them, and there were some with whom they had had drinks with, or discussed martial technique together.

At this moment, their acquaintances were the stiff corpses, which became the food for the beasts.

At this moment, they could see clearly what awaited them if they

weren't a part of the city. Perhaps, they would be one of those dead bodies.

There was only a wall separating them from that miserable fates. They were still alive, but their friends were dead now with incomplete bodies. This was the most tragic result they could imagine.

They suddenly felt grateful to Shi Yan from the bottom of their hearts.

Everybody understood that without Shi Yan and this city, they would have only one terrifying consequence – even their bones wouldn't be left!

A cold current diffused from the bottom of their hearts, making them shiver, and melting the happiness they had just gained.

Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, Cao Qiu Dao, and Yun Hao had experienced many tragic situations. They understood how cruel the reality was. The moment the others left, they could predict their fate. Hence, they weren't so surprised.

However, the two ancient families of the Demon Clan had followed Shi Yan's words and retreated without any hesitation. This surprised them a lot.

Many people stood there bewilderedly, seeing the Demon Clan leaving. After a while, when all the clansmen of the Demon Clan had left, they shifted their skeptical looks to Shi Yan, hoping the man would clarify their doubts.

Under their hot gazes, Shi Yan was calm, and just beamed a faint smile. "Yeah, something's changed indeed. However, I can't talk much now. Haha... You just need to know that the alien tribes won't trouble us for a short time."

Shi Yan knew it wasn't the right time to disclose his Demon bloodline. Otherwise, people in this city would be extreme and start overthinking. He wanted to discreetly change them and make

them accept the fact, which was how the tribes would live together in the future.

Yang Tian Emperor's team nodded, and didn't chase him furthermore.

"We need to rebuild the city! Within ten days, we need to restore the outer city and make it stronger..." Shi Yan rose his voice until he was shouting. Pausing for a while, he added, "...For yourself."

Everybody gladly followed him.

# Chapter 683: Advance together

---

A new outer city jutted out from the ground after seven days. This new city wall was more imposing, seeming like a never-ending mountain range. Although it wasn't even, the lowest point was around one hundred meters high.

This radiant silver city seemed to be made of metal, standing firmly while diffusing a cold aura that never dispersed.

Under the cooperation of the Human Clan, Monster Clan, Dark Devil Clan, and the Winged Clan, the new city wall seemed invincible. Carved formations decorated the wall, bringing out a tremendous energy.

The day the outer city was finished, many humans felt happy, as they believed that this city was their new home. They had to protect it at any cost to preserve the last piece of land of the Human Clan.

As the owner of the city, Shi Yan had joined the construction from the beginning to the end. He had concentrated on carving the formation and refining the liquid steel, that made this city wall more rigid than the hardest metal.

Yan Long, Xue Lie, Glacial Armor Giant Alligator, Nine-headed Bird, and Silver-winged Sky Wolf had used their monster forms to hit the city wall to test its endurance. Although the impact had crashed their armors, it left no cracks in the wall.

The two Head Masters of the Demon Clan had tried the defensive ability of the city wall discreetly. They were astounded to see that if they wanted to smash this city down, they would have to pay a big price.

Everybody had their spirit boosted. They had survived the disaster, and they felt lucky that they made a wise decision to not leave the city.

Alien tribes were still hunting humans in the Perpetual Night Forest. People who didn't belong in this city had become their targets. After seven days, most of the human warriors had been killed, becoming wandering ghosts under the pagan's slaughter, or the fertilizer for their sacrificial altar. The number of people who could survive was pathetically little.

In the outer city, all formations and barriers worked well. Qi Tian Oldie Long Zhu had restored half of his power. The city had Yun Hao and Yu Wan Jiang at the Second Sky of True God Realm, and Di Shan, Li Zheng Rong, and Yu Rou at the First Sky of True God Realm.

With this force in the city and the city's defensive ability, Shi Yan felt more determined.

He believed that even if the four alien tribes returned and attacked his city, it wouldn't be any easy for them.

Finally, he could exhale in relief. Next, he had to prepare for the big business of his realm advancement.

Shi Yan called Long Zhu and Yun Hao and explained part of the secrets of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. He arranged everything and then left quietly with Yang Tian Emperor.

When he got out of the city, Bao Ao and Jie Ji recognized immediately. They stepped forward and asked for his opinion.

"Give me half a month. After that, I will go with you guys." Shi Yan told them and then took Yang Tian Emperor to the Creator's Divine Pond.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji had to wait for so many years, so the period of fifteen more days wasn't too long for them. They gladly agreed.

...

Near the Creator's Divine Pond...

Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor smiled, looking at the platform



in the middle of the miraculous pond.

"With this pond, we can have more True God Realm warriors. Not long afterward, our general competence will increase fast. Later on, even if Qin Gu Chuan, Guan Ho, and Lu Miao haven't died, they would never replace us in the Human Clan." Yang Tian Emperor felt relaxed, as a glorious light sparkled in his eyes.

Currently, the Yang family was prosperous like they had never been before, much more than when they were in the Endless Sea.

Although the Yang family was the overlord of the Endless Sea, its structure was small, which was insignificant in the eyes of the experts in the Divine Great Land.

However, it was different today. They were in most mysterious Perpetual Night Forest of the Divine Great Land, building the main line of the Human Clan. Today, they were the future of the Human Clan!

The Cao family, the Dark Devil Clan, the Winged Clan, the Fighting Union, and the Radiant God Cult, together with the small forces, had gathered in the Yang family, which was a situation he had never dared to imagine. However, everything came true now.

The Yang family had become the owner of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. All people who stayed here, no matter they belonged to the seven alliances or the small forces, had to follow the Yang family's arrangement.

The power and the force of the Yang family had leaped to a new peak they had never seen before.

All of this was thanks to Shi Yan, the young man he had picked up from the Quiet Cloud Land.

Looking at Shi Yan in front of him, Yang Tian Emperor was extremely proud, thinking that bringing Shi Yan from the Quiet Cloud Land here was the best decision he had ever made in his whole life.

"Great-grandpa, you should go first," Shi Yan chuckled, taking out the Soul Gathering Pearl. He sent the bead to the platform to release the crystal clear soul energy.

The Soul Gathering Pearl had collected a large amount of soul power from Ling Meng and Nie Ruo. The soul energy it had refined was translucent and condensed. Shi Yan felt pleased on seeing it.

After observing the soul energy a little bit, Shi Yan saw that it was enough for ten warriors to enter the True God Realm easily without any risks.

"No, I'm not hurried." Yang Tian Emperor shook his head and smiled, "The two Demons are still waiting for you. You should break through to the True God Realm first. It's easy to talk with them then. Moreover, if something unexpected happens, you would already be in the True God Realm, which will be a tranquilizer to the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. You are more important than me. You should go first."

Shi Yan was surprised. He pondered for a while and considered that it was logical.

If he used the cultivation base of True God Realm to control the Utmost Eight Purgatories City, he could advance the power of the formations and barriers in the city by one more level. This city would become tremendously strong and would better protect his people.

From this point, he had a bigger value than Yang Tian Emperor.

He didn't deny, smiled and said, "Then, I'll get in there first. Great grandpa, please watch over me. I will reach the True God Realm quickly."

"Little Yan, you want to know how that little girl is, don't you? She has entered the chaotic space basin. I guess she is more likely to die than stay alive. Do you still want to use the Immortal Blood?" Yang Tian Emperor frowned.

The Immortal Blood could see what the user's close acquaintance had experienced. As long as the other's realm was lower or equal to his, Shi Yan could use the Immortal Blood to know the location and current situation of that person. He hastened to enter the True God Realm also to check how Xia Xin Yan was.

Shi Yan knew what had happened in the Ice and Fire Secret Domain from Bao Ao and Jie Ji. He totally agreed with Xia Xin Yan when she resolutely decided to enter the chaotic space basin to avoid the alien slaughter.

He believed that if he were in the same situation, he would have made the same decision.

Xia Xin Yan had the understanding of the martial path of a King God Realm expert. Shi Yan thought that she would be alright even if she were in the chaotic space basin. However, he was still worried about her.

That's why he wanted to use the Immortal Blood to see her whereabouts. However, Xia Xin Yan had reached the True God Realm, and he was just in the Spirit Realm. If he forced himself to process the reading, he would get hurt.

Only if he reached the True God Realm would using the Immortal Blood vaguely show him whether Xia Xin Yan's soul had vanished or not. To him, it was enough.

"Yes, I always worry about her. Haha... She took me to the Endless Sea. She took care of me well. When we were in the Endless Sea, she had never done anything to be ashamed of. I know what happened with the Xia family and Xia Qing Hou. However, it isn't related to her," Shi Yan smiled.

Yang Tian Emperor frowned, "But her grandpa..."

"We didn't do anything to him. We don't know whether he's alive or not. I think... she would be alright."

Shi Yan smiled begrudgingly. He pulled himself together, then

concentrated and washed away the chaotic thoughts like gossamer in his head.

Yang Tian Emperor wanted to say something, but he noticed Shi Yan's bright eyes and his calmed down aura, and knew that Shi Yan had started the process. Yang Tian Emperor didn't talk more. He moved away and sat down cross-legged to protect Shi Yan.

Shi Yan floated like a lily water pad, then slowly landed on the spiritual platform in the center of the divine pond. He sat down, then closed his eyes and let his soul sublimate. His Sea of Consciousness settled like the mirror of his consciousness.

Light rippled from the top-grade Essence Crystals scattered around the place, pouring into the spiritual platform from the special ditches to supply energy for the magical formation.

Yang Tian Emperor observed to see the changes of the divine pond.

...

Heavenly Demon Mountain Range, Vault of Heaven Sea, Endless Sea...

This place had the endless mountain range where many demon beasts gathered in the Endless Sea. It was also the forbidden area of the Human Clan. Strong beasts wandered here and there year around. Even when the Martial Spirit Palace was at their peak time, they had never dared to trespass this area.

The sun, moon, and stars shone over a ten-thousand-meters-high mountain, jutting to the sky, as if it wanted to connect the sun, moon, and stars.

Boom Boom Boom!

All of a sudden, many head-splitting explosions reverberated from this grand mountain. An energy wave flooded the area, expanding everywhere from the mountain.

Crack Crack Crack!

Wherever the energy wave washed over, mountains collapsed one by one. This endless mountain range seemed to cave in terrifyingly.

Under the shining light of sun, moon, and stars, the energy wave had peeled off the surface layer of rock, revealing the true shape of this mountain.

Dazzling massive pillars with many colors shot up to the sky!

Each pillar was at least several thousand meters tall, with many patterns and drawings in the old style of the Monster Clan. Under the bright sky, it radiated shiningly.

It turned out there were so many giant pillars hiding in this endless mountain range. These pillars were scattered thickly in every corner of the Heavenly Demon Mountain Range, creating a massive ancient formation of the Monster Clan.

After the rock layer was slid away, an inexplicably massive ancient formation was exposed at the ten-thousand-meter-high mountain in the center of the place. This formation was supported by seven ferocious monster hands.

Each monster hand was around ten mu. A fierce, cold aura diffused from them, while the monster scriptures drawn on the palms sparkled. Seven monster hands supported a Star of David Formation, where some tiny figures of the beast were sitting.

From a close look, those were the Ghost Hunter, the Devouring Gold Silkworm, and the King of Demonic Insects. At this moment, they seemed to receive some ancient inheritance of the Monster Clan, taking in the energy and powers from the giant pillars of the demonic formation around them.

# Chapter 684: The Seal of Upanishad of the lasting mark

---

At the bottom of the crystal clear lake...

Shi Yan sat neatly on the spiritual platform in the middle of the mysterious ancient formation with a calm face. His profound Soul Consciousness matched perfectly with the aura of this divine pond.

Unknowingly, he fell into a deep dream where he felt his soul had departed his body. His consciousness bobbed without a target, such that he couldn't gather it into an effective and precise thought.

Lines of thick energy reached to the center of the divine pond everywhere.

Gradually, the Life Original Fluid and the Soul Washing Divine Water in the spiritual platform were stirred up, and the translucent soul energy diffused. Different-colored magical energies that couldn't blend with each other gathered and twirled around his body beautifully.

When these significant energies fluctuated and entered his body through his pores, they gradually flowed towards his brains, accumulating bit by bit in his Sea of Consciousness.

His host soul was sitting neatly in the center of the Sea of Consciousness like his real body was doing in reality. He was calmly waiting to connect the energies with his flows of Soul Consciousness.

The five-colored Qi started to diffuse in his Sea of Consciousness, blending with his flows of Soul Consciousness, making them float towards his host soul.

Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness started to drain as all beams of his Soul Consciousness were twined around the host soul, turning it into an illuminated object with magical soul fluctuations.

The scattered energy of heaven and earth that was rolling above the platform was attracted, pouring into his host soul like waves of the surging tide. It made his host soul tremble. He couldn't even gather his thoughts.

The host soul kept the Upanishads of his martial spirits, which he had comprehended over the recent years. It also contained the Death and Life Seal intent domain, the miraculous star energy, and space power.

The three different powers were washed in his host soul. After each time of washing, they were refined and cleaned, giving Shi Yan a new level of cognition of the three energies' mysteries.

A flame sparkled in his host soul. This flame was bright silver, appearing like a flickering flame at his glabella, bouncing continually.

It was the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

Under the washing of countless types of mysterious and indescribable energies of the Antiquity Time, this heaven flame was dancing, slowly emerging from his glabella.

In the life field of the host soul, the three Upanishads of the Death and Life Seal, Star, and Space, had become three fingernail-sized dots. They were shimmering, carrying the subtle magical intent domains, which could be deemed as miracles in the universe.

When a warrior was breaking to the True God Realm, while he was using his host soul to condense the God Soul, all energy Upanishads he had comprehended would leap up to another level.

During the process of condensing the God Soul, while the energies of heaven and earth were washing the host soul, the warrior could further understand the energies he had, making it the foundation of his True God Realm.

After many years of walking on the martial path, Shi Yan had

practiced many things. However, only the three kinds of energies, including the Death and Life Seal, the Star, and Space energies could generate the Seal of Upanishad in his host soul.

This spoke of the fact that Shi Yan had totally controlled these three energies, which he could use to dedicate himself to progress.

Regarding the other techniques and powers, Shi Yan didn't have a good grasp of their Essence, so he couldn't create the Upanishad Seal in his host soul.

The Upanishad Seal could be deemed the most precious asset of a warrior. Once it could fuse with the God Soul, it could bloom gloriously in the future, giving the warrior access to a wider universe.

As long as the God Soul wasn't destroyed, the power that created the Seal of Upanishad would never vanish.

If a warrior wanted to reincarnate, the power that created his trace of Upanishad would be imparted to his next incarnation.

At the same time, the Seal of Upanishad was also a basic foundation to generate the martial spirit. A strong warrior could use his bloodline to bestow his Seal of Upanishad.

Taking Shi Yan as an example, if he could successfully condense the God Soul this time, when he reached a higher realm in the future and grasped the secret of inheritance, he could impart the Upanishad of Star, Death and Life, and Space, to his grandchildren, increasing the success rate of these three powers' inheritance.

It was rumored that the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist had the crystal clear God Soul of some warrior who had died a long time ago with the Seal of Upanishad, the most precious attainment of that warrior in his whole life.

Only the powers that could create the Seal of Upanishad could fuse with the God Soul, and it would never vanish when the body



was destroyed. And, only the Seal of Upanishad could be preserved when memories faded and disappeared. Unless the Life Seal were eradicated, the Seal of Upanishad would exist together with the Life Seal eternally.

The generation of the Upanishad Seal was mysterious. No one could understand its true principle. It was hard to sense this process under normal circumstances. Only when the warrior was breaking through a major realm, it could flash shortly.

Today, Shi Yan had three Seals of Upanishad in his head, including the Death and Life, Star, and Space. These three seals had emerged in his host soul's brain unknowingly.

Usually, a normal warrior had to understand a Seal of Upanishad to the acme to step into the True God Realm and condense the God Soul.

But Shi Yan's case was different...

Using the Creator's Divine Pond, he had got through a shortcut. If one of the three Seals of Upanishad he had could be understood to the peak, he could use the Creator's Divine Pond and break through to the True God Realm based on that Upanishad.

Bing Qing Tong, Han Cui, Di Shan, and Yi Tian Mo had used one kind of Upanishad Seal to successfully enter the True God Realm.

However, Shi Yan's three Seals of Upanishad were miraculously balanced. His understanding of the three powers had advanced perfectly together. None of them were too profound or too weak compared to the others.

So, when he was stepping in the True God Realm, condensing his God Soul, such an experience had been gained.

There was no focus.

Even the divine pond didn't know which power it should focus on to improve one of Shi Yan's Upanishad Seals. And, at this moment, Shi Yan was bewildered that he couldn't use his Soul

Consciousness to guide the pond.

This situation was marvelously strange. It took place quietly. The others could only see the pond steadily urge and pour energy, Soul Washing Divine Water, Life Original Fluid, and crystal clear soul energy to the spiritual platform continually.

At the same time, the top-grade Essence Crystals scattering outside the divine pond were inundating it with energy, as if they would never stop until they could create something miraculous.

The three powers of Death and Life, Star, and Space were washed and improved altogether. He didn't know why and how it was happening, so he just tried to transform the three Seal of Upanishad at the same time.

This had slowed down his breaking through process, much slower than Yi Tian Mo's team.

To improve the three Seals of Upanishad at the same time required a huge amount of energy and the power of the entire divine pond, much more than the amount spent for the previous users.

Gradually, three different kinds of energies emitted from the spiritual platform. The Death and Life Intent Domain, Star Mysteries, and the ever-changing Space appeared altogether above the platform.

Shi Yan was condensing his God Soul.

However, Yang Tian Emperor felt worried beside the divine pond. He had been walking back and forth restlessly, his face gloomy.

Yang Tian Emperor had seen Li Zheng Rong's group entering the True God Realm. The energy waves that the divine pond had generated at that time weren't the same as in Shi Yan's case now, not more than one-tenth.

Time flew by quietly. Unknowingly, it had been three months. In

a normal case, this period was enough for three people to generate their God Souls and enter the True God realm.

To Shi Yan, it seemed he had just begun...

Yang Tian Emperor became more agitated. Day after day, his anxiety grew bigger.

It seemed that the top-grade Essence Crystals scattered outside the pond weren't enough. Many top-grade Essence Crystals, which used to be as beautiful as diamonds, had turned ash-gray after their energy had been used up completely.

Seeing the Essence Crystals being consumed massively, Yang Tian Emperor's concern grew bigger. However, he didn't know how to help Shi Yan in these circumstances.

Until Ye Chang Feng came...

After three months, many people in the city finally recognized the unusual situation. They asked him to go and check.

Seeing Ye Chang Feng, Yang Tian Emperor asked him to bring all of the Essence Crystals from the outer city and the city center here. Afterward, when he transported almost ten thousand pieces of Essence Crystal to the pond, Yang Tian Emperor and Ye Chang Feng then got busy replacing the used ones.

With the new energy supply, the Creator's Divine Pond became normal.

However, good things never lasted long. After two more months, the three energies of Upanishad in the spiritual platform became clearer. At the same time, cracks appeared in many corners of the divine pond. Some curves of the formation seemed to be about to explode at any minute.

The Creator's Divine Pond had been built by experts with supernatural powers and many rare materials. When those materials shattered, it meant the energy that the platform had to bear were so much that it cracked the pond.

Yang Tian Emperor became edgier, but he had no solution. Even Shi Yan couldn't understand the mysteries of his Creator's Divine Pond. How could he help with this situation?

He had no way to protect or repair the pond. He could only observe and try protecting Shi Yan carefully.

The only thing that assured his mind was that the spiritual platform was still working. There was no sign of operation failure yet.

Time flew by hurriedly.

After three more months, besides the spiritual platform floating in the middle of the Creator's Divine Pond, the other materials that formed the exquisite formations and barriers had become the accessories for the place, with no energy fluctuating from them.

It seemed that all the energy had been drawn to create Shi Yan's God Soul, helping him enter the True God Realm.

At this moment, Yang Tian Emperor could see that the Creator's Divine Pond had been completely damaged. In this era, no one could fix it. The chance for him to break through the next realm was cut off accidentally.

Yang Tian Emperor didn't worry about himself but Shi Yan. Anyway, he felt lucky that the platform was still working.

The three energies moved above the platform like three invisible giant dragons fighting with each other. Yang Tian Emperor had to stay further away, as he couldn't bear the energy impact from these three powers.

Time flew fast. After another two months, the spiritual platform started to have many hairline cracks, as if it could shatter at any minute.

When Yang Tian Emperor felt like his heart was hung on a thread, biting his tongue anxiously, the platform suddenly quieted down. Shi Yan, who was still sitting on the platform, gradually

woke up.

Yang Tian Emperor was struck. Joy sparkled in his eyes as he smiled dumbly.

Yang Tian Emperor understood that the process was quite dangerous and difficult. But in the end, Shi Yan succeeded.

His God Soul had been created.

# Chapter 685: The Three-tiered Soul Sacrificial Altar

---

Shi Yan woke up leisurely.

As soon as he opened his eyes, he was stunned, his face strange.

The Creator's Divine Pond had been demolished. The spiritual platform and the materials that built the divine pond seemed to have exploded, leaving only dozen-meters wide, pitch-black, deep hole right where the magical formation of the pond was carved. Water immediately filled that pond.

Shi Yan scanned the place. He found that all the top-grade Essence Crystals had turned into ordinary stones. They had no energy surging or any spiritual Qi.

Yang Tian Emperor stood by the large pothole. He looked distressed, with bloodshot eyes, as if he hadn't slept for several hundred days. He wasn't in high spirits either.

After a glance, Shi Yan stopped checking around and analyzed his own body.

Astonishment filled his face constantly, as if he had found something miraculous. He looked dumbstruck.

Big changes had happened in his head.

His Sea of Consciousness had expanded by five times. Waves rippled in his brain. Each flow of his Soul Consciousness was now a beam of glorious light. They sparkled radiantly with pure Soul Consciousness energy fluctuating.

His vast Sea of Consciousness started to surge according to some rules of Nature. Flows of Soul Consciousness turned into seawater of the Sea of Consciousness, as if they could create a miraculous connection with his tendons and vessels, giving him a clear change of Essence Qi in his body.

Quieting down his mind, he surveyed his body. A joy that he couldn't press down flowed through his entire body.

His Sea of Consciousness and the Essence Qi ancient tree had been connected.

Flows of Soul Consciousness could run to the Essence Qi ancient tree in his stomach through his vessels and tendons, which helped him control his Essence Qi and distribute it to his vessels to bring out his supernatural powers.

This was a new concept he had never known before.

In the Spirit Realm, whenever he wanted to urge the Essence Qi in his body, he had to send his Soul Consciousness to his host soul, which sent the waves of consciousness that ordered to gather the Essence Qi. After that, with the transportation through special vessels and tendons, he could carry out the effective martial techniques.

However, it was different now.

Flows of his Soul Consciousness could connect the vessels and the Essence Qi ancient tree. When his thought fell into the Sea of Consciousness like just a small ripple, it could immediately urge the energy in his body.

This reaction speed was much faster than before. In other words, he had another faster and more precise way to control the Essence Qi.

But it wasn't the only change in his head.

A triangular altar floated above his Sea of Consciousness. It wasn't a real entity, trembling unsteadily. This was made of many beams and spots of light, which stored the mysterious of Life and Death Intent Domain, Star, and Space. The distinctive surging energy of these three powers was unique and mysterious.

Floating atop the altar made of the powers of Death and Life Intent Domain, Star, and Space, was the God Soul. The God Soul

didn't look like Shi Yan's himself, but more like a chaotic liquid flame. This translucent fluid was murmuring quietly above the altar.

Observing for a while, Shi Yan found that the altar had more than one tier. It had three tiers.

The bottom was his vast Sea of Consciousness. The middle tier stored the mysteries of Death and Life, Star, and Space, where these three powers formed a triangle. Special energy waves rippled and resonated with his God Soul from this tier.

Floating atop the altar was the unshaped flame-like God Soul, which was constantly releasing the soul energy.

The Sea of Consciousness, Upanishads of power, and the God Soul had formed the altar. The Sea of Consciousness was the largest part that established the foundation; Upanishads of power were in the middle, and the fist-sized God Soul topped them like a liquid flame.

As he tried to flicker his thought, he found that his God Soul, the power Upanishads, and his Sea of Consciousness had fused perfectly. His flow of thought wasn't hindered. As soon as it reached the tier of Upanishad, it could immediately trigger that tier of the altar to rouse the energy. Next, it would connect the Sea of Consciousness, which controlled the body to make the energy, vessels, and muscles cooperate, to engage the tremendous martial techniques.

The God Soul would control everything with the power Upanishads and the Sea of Consciousness as its two assistants. When the God Soul manipulated his blood and muscles with the Essence Qi, he could strike a martial technique with the power from the Upanishad to have an intimidating attack.

Was it the True God Realm?

A beam of doubt flashed in Shi Yan's head. In the next moment,



his spirit flew out from his body with a trace of distraction in its eyes.

Swoosh Swoosh!

A bright silver flame was dancing unsteadily above the Sea of Consciousness, as if it had been banished from its home, having no foothold at this moment.

It was the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

While he was breaking through the True God Realm, he had condensed the God Soul, which had expelled this heaven flame from his host soul.

At this moment, Shi Yan had the God Soul, but the flame couldn't fuse with it anymore, despite the fact that it could still connect with his God Soul.

Shi Yan kept silent. His thoughts crossed the God Soul, as if he was searching for something. He was trying to contact the heaven flame.

After a while, his eyes brightened, and his spirit was high.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame told him that when the heaven flame fused, they could be placed at the center of his three-tiered altar, becoming a new tier.

The God Soul was mysterious and inexplicable, which stored the purest miracle of Nature's principle. Once it was formed, it could only contain the Seals of Upanishad, knowledge, and memories. It couldn't hold any other creature. Heaven flames were some sorts of living beings with a consciousness, which meant it couldn't be fused with his God Soul.

If he insisted on making a fusion, it would be possible if a heaven flame were the perfect match with a Seal of Upanishad he had comprehended. However, he had to erase the memory of the heaven flame to put its seal into the Seal of Upanishad. This would boost the development and breakthrough of that Upanishad Seal

tremendously.

However, the three Seals of Upanishad in his God Soul weren't matched with the heaven flames' characteristics. This kind of fusion was hard to carry out.

And, Shi Yan didn't want to erase the heaven flames' memories. A heaven flame without intellect and memories wasn't something he wanted.

Perhaps the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had recognized his thought, so it sent him this soul thought, giving him a win-win solution: co-existing.

He would have a new sacrificial altar floating above his Sea of Consciousness, which was formed by the heaven flames. It would co-exist with the tier of the power Upanishad to nurture his God Soul. It could use his Sea of Consciousness to shelter and absorb his energy. Of course, it could provide him powers as well.

This structure had the same meaning, with the heaven flames being a special power Upanishad. However, it wouldn't be combined with the second tier of his three-tiered altar, or connect perfectly with the Sea of Consciousness and the God Soul. Anyhow, they could still support each other well.

Shi Yan didn't follow its suggestion immediately. He decided to talk to the Ice Cold Flame first. He wanted to know the other flame's opinion.

After the Ice Cold Flame received his offer, it considered for a while. Eventually, it decided that they could carry out this plan, as it would benefit both of them.

The heaven flames could use his Sea of Consciousness, and the energy from his blood and flesh to nurture themselves, making them stronger. Furthermore, since they didn't fuse with the God Soul, it would be easier if they wanted to leave him later.

To Shi Yan, when the three-tiered altar had another section

made of heaven flames, he could use the power of the heaven flames. When he battled with the others, he could use them at ease.

He didn't trust the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame much. However, he trusted the Ice Cold Flame more. After he got the Ice Cold Flame's idea, he started this plan immediately.

When his thought moved, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame turned into a sea of bright silver flame, staying in a corner of the power Upanishad tier, floating above the Sea of Consciousness.

The Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame in the Blood Vein Ring flew out, turning into two small flames that entered his eyes. They flashed and then disappeared into this Sea of Consciousness, staying with the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

Two flows of aura, a scorching one and an icy one, bobbed in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. His God Soul felt irritated a little bit. Later on, when the Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame tried to reduce their power, his God Soul gradually adapted.

The auras of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, and the Earth Flame turned into three streams of unique energies, just like the triangular tier of power Upanishads, which could enhance his God Soul.

He was sensitive enough to sense it.

"We still have another one..." Shi Yan sent his thought to the Blood Vein ring. "Release it. I want to confine it."

The aura of the Corpse Vanishing Flame oozed little by little from the Blood Vein Ring. Shi Yan got this heaven flame from Qing Ming, and it hadn't been loyal to him yet. He had kept it in the Blood Vein Ring. At this moment, when the ring loosened its confinement, the flame wanted to run away shortly.

Star Chain!

Shi Yan's soul flickered, and his Sea of Consciousness murmured. The Star Upanishad in the triangle tier was urged.

A crystal clear chain that was sparkling like the stars in the sky stormed out from his heart and twined the Corpse Vanishing Flame, dragging it into his body.

After Yun Hao had entered the city, he had imparted the techniques related to the Star Execution and the Flaming Sun Execution of the Radiant God Cult to Shi Yan. Now, he had the cutting edge of these forces.

This Star Chain was the development of the Star Upanishad, which could imprison soul form beings. It was special confinement for the strange and eccentric souls of creatures.

The Ice Cold Flame's aura diffused from his eyes. Flows of freezing air extended to the Star Chain, increasing its confining power. The Corpse Vanishing Flame couldn't wiggle.

"Don't fail me. I let you enter my inner Sea of Consciousness, which gives you face. If you don't follow me, I can make you stop struggling forever."

Shi Yan's icy cold soul will entered the green Corpse Vanishing Flame.

The Star Chain dragged him to the Sea of Consciousness. As soon as it got into the Sea of Consciousness, the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame swarmed over and restrained it.

The Corpse Vanishing Flame stopped wiggling. It seemed to follow his thought, letting him do whatever he wanted.

At this moment, Shi Yan put aside what was happening in the world out there, magical flames dancing in his cold eyes. Using the technique the Ice Cold Flame and the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had told him, he used the Sea of Consciousness as the foundation and the God Soul to guide and gather the energy of

his body, condensing a proper place on the triangular altar for the heaven flames to rest.

A new expansion, which could help both sides increase their powers, was slowly formed.

In the beginning, the Corse Vanishing Flame had still resisted. Afterward, when he knew Shi Yan's real intentions, it felt joyful and started to cooperate with him more.

It wasn't stupid. When the flame knew Shi Yan didn't want to erase its memories and just wanted to live together, it stopped struggling and proactively helped him.

# Chapter 686: True God Realm

---

The establishment of the new altar was faster than he had expected. After three days, another tier of the heaven flames appeared on the triangle of the three powers Upanishad.

The four heaven flames, including the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame, had formed a rectangle. A strange material connected them together. It was the combination of the Sea of Consciousness, his blood and flesh Qi, and the energy of his will.

After this expansion of the altar was completed, Shi Yan could contact the four heaven flames easily, as they had a soul connection. He could easily urge the powers of the four heaven flames as he wished.

The four heaven flames became a power Upanishad of his. Although they weren't combined with the God Soul like the Upanishad of Star, Death and Life, and Space, they weren't any weaker.

The four heaven flames were satisfied with their current situation. Staying above the Sea of Consciousness, they could use Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness and his vigorous aura to nurture themselves. Later on, they wouldn't need to worry that the warriors would use special tools to restrain them. If they wanted, they could fly out at any moment.

At this moment, Shi Yan's breakthrough to the True God Realm had come to a perfect end.

He had created the God Soul. The three power Upanishads of Star, Death and Life, and Space had advanced formidably under the fierce urge of the Creator's Divine Pond. At the same time, they could cooperate in a perfect balance, using the co-existing form of the triangular altar.

Shi Yan opened his eyes, revealing a forced smile as he saw the Creator's Divine Pond was just a ruin now. "Great-grandpa, I'm so sorry. I can't use this shortcut for you anymore. I didn't expect that my breakthrough would create this mess."

All the top-grade Essence Crystals, the Soul Washing Divine Water, the Life Original Fluid, the crystal clear soul that the Soul Gathering Pearl had refined, and even the Star Original Essence Crystals, were consumed completely. Nothing remained there.

He had absorbed all kinds of energies from the divine pond, using its destruction to create his success in building the God Soul and his power Upanishads to enter the First Sky of True God Realm.

"It's okay. As long as you are well," Yang Tian Emperor smiled, his face exhausted. "Even if we don't have this pond, I believe I can break through soon. Haha... perhaps using my own comprehension to reach the new realm would help me thrive better. You shouldn't let it burden you."

Shi Yan nodded. As things had accelerated to this point, he knew speaking was no help.

"Shi Yan, is your body... alright?" Yang Tian Emperor was a little bit nervous.

"No... It's better than ever! Haha... Great-grandpa, don't worry. I've gained a marvelous benefit this time. I can understand the essence of the martial path. It's like... I have a whole new world in my reach," Shi Yan said smilingly.

Yang Tian Emperor could finally ease his mind. "Then, it's good."

"Wait a minute, I want to see... if Xia Xin Yan's still alive." Shi Yan's face was complicated, as he felt uneasy.

A drop of ruby blood rolled from his fingertip, shining in red halo, showing its powerful, evil energy.

A thought was sent to his God Soul, creating magical waves of energy, urging the power of the triangular altar. The power of

Space was triggered, connecting to his entire body.

A light road appeared in front of him.

Space distorted, and a small slit cracked open. He could see many glorious lights inside that space, making it look like a giant spider web, which hid the mysteries of the mighty space.

That garnet drop of Immortal Blood rolled into that slit and moved for a while before shattering.

At the moment the drop of blood shattered, a feeble connection stormed into his God Soul. His God Soul whispered a name, turning it into a vehement soul fluctuation, rising strongly.

Shi Yan slightly paled. Another thought flickered, and another drop of his Immortal Blood fell into that space crack. Soon, the connection appeared again for a fraction of time before it vanished.

Shi Yan dropped another drop of his Immortal Blood and sensed.

After dropping five drops of Immortal Blood into the space slit continually, Shi Yan paled, closing his eyes and trying to sense deeper.

After a while, the space slit in front of him started to close.

"What? Is that little girl... alive?" Yang Tian Emperor asked gingerly.

Shi Yan nodded, furrowing his brows. "Alive. I can sense a connection. However, she's in an area far away. Although I have a new cognition of the space Upanishad, it's hard to use the Immortal Blood to connect with her. Seems like she's not well. I feel like she's bearing an extreme torture."

Yang Tian Emperor kept silent, as he didn't know what to say.

In his eyes, Xia Xin Yan wasn't worth Shi Yan's concern. Wasting five drops of Immortal Blood just to know whether she was alive or not made Yang Tian Emperor feel quite grieved.



He also knew the Immortal Rebirth Secret, and had the Immortal Blood, too. That's why he knew how precious each drop was.

At the critical moment, a drop of Immortal Blood could grow flesh and blood. Using it to predict someone's life was such a waste.

However, he couldn't advise the young man, because he used to be hurt because of love himself. He understood that 'love' was something that caused the most extreme pain, and it was hard to reason against.

"Don't worry. I have my principle. I won't let my affections mess up with my mind. Falling in love is the most glorious phase of someone's life. When I meet my love, I will spend everything to keep it. But if I can't have it, or I can't keep it, I won't be confounded for the rest of my life." Shi Yan smiled, looking at the old man. "Great-grandpa, do you think I can't let it go?"

Yang Tian Emperor woke up and smiled sincerely. He knew this kid was coldhearted, and he would never let his mind sink into troubles because of the external world.

"How long have I been here for? Why do I feel it's been a really long time," Shi Yan asked suddenly.

"Almost a year," Yang Tian Emperor forced a smile, shaking his head. "Kid, when you break through the realm, you always make it faster than the others. But you were so slow in the divine pond. I wonder what had happened."

"Slow doesn't mean bad," Shi Yan grinned brightly. "This shows I've gained good things... Much better than the others!"

Yang Tian Emperor got it. His eyes brightened. "You..."

"Yeah, I got better things than Di Shan and Li Zheng Rong. Otherwise, the pond wouldn't be destroyed... haha." Shi Yan felt pleased.

Yang Tian Emperor was surprised. He also smiled, talking in a

cheerful tone. "Good, as long as you have gotten a good harvest, we don't need to worry anymore."

"Let's go. We don't need to get back to this place." A thought flashed. The Earth Flame released its power and opened the formation on the lake surface. Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor leaped up to the sky.

Frowning at the lake, Shi Yan pondered for a while and then pointed downward.

Space power twisted, ripping a large space crack and covering the entire lake. Shortly, the lake disappeared, leaving a one hundred square miles hole under their feet.

Yang Tian Emperor discolored.

This performance had struck him deeply. Tearing space and creating a giant hole to swallow the entire lake. Such move was worth calling it a miracle!

"Although the divine pond's destroyed, it still has the streaks of formation that the others could restore. Perhaps, someone could do it. It would be a disaster then. There're so many great experts from the Antiquity Time in the Divine Great Land at this moment. Perhaps, someone could restore it completely," said Shi Yan.

Yang Tian Emperor nodded. "Better to be careful. I was careless thinking that no one could restore this lake besides you. That's why I didn't think much."

"I can't restore it," Shi Yan forced a smile. "The one who built this pond was a Divine Grade Formation Master. He had three King God Realm experts to support him. They had used countless materials to carve at least five thousand small formations. I can't understand many formations. So of course, I can't restore them."

Yang Tian Emperor was surprised.

"The higher realm I reach, the smaller I feel. In this life, there're so many intimidating existences. Our power isn't worth

mentioning," Shi Yan forced a smile.

He suddenly recalled the creature in the soul sea inside the dead souls' evil lair of the Dark Spirit Clan.

That year, he had taken risks using his hollow soul to enter that place and survey once. The ancient aura of that soul sea was as hard to predict as the universe. That cold evil will could smash his hollow soul, as if it were killing an ant.

At that moment, he thought it was something at the True God Realm.

However, through fighting with Long Zhu, Lin Meng, and the experience he got through entering his new realm, he could confirm that that existence was beyond the concept of the True God Realm.

The Cold Wind Island, where the Corpse God Sect was based, had a space crack. Shi Yan had seen skeletons of a-thousand-meters-long level 10 beast, which was beheaded in one strike. The one that could kill a level 10 beast, the level that could be compared to the King God Realm, how intimidating he must have been?

The more he learned, the more careful he was. He would never have an arrogant thought in his mind because of his achievements, all because he understood that there were so many inexplicable existences out there. If the warriors who had escaped this continent into the outer space in the Antiquity Time were still alive, which realm they would be at now?

Sometimes, he didn't dare to think about it further. The more he thought about it, the more struggling he figured out the road ahead of him was. He felt helpless. However, on this path, he would never stop his steps.

"Don't think too much. Everything starts with the first step. Every strong warrior has a struggling time like us. Without making an effort, will we ever see the beautiful sights? Later, when we

look back to today, we will see it valuable to our development," Yang Tian Emperor said emotionally.

Shi Yan nodded and smiled. "I understand. I won't let it affect me. We should go back."

"Yes."

Ripples of space appeared in front of Shi Yan, bringing the mysteries of space power.

Shi Yan stepped into the space ripples, disappearing shortly.

In the next moment, he appeared in the city center. He had crossed one thousand miles just with one step.

The advancement of Space Upanishad had increased his speed to an unimaginable level. He could build a passage that could cross space. He could travel one thousand miles with only one step, as easily as flipping his hands.

# Chapter 687: Put down

---

With only one step and his Soul Consciousness, he could arrive at his destination easily.

Shi Yan arrived in the Utmost Eight Purgatories City in just a blink.

After one year, the city he had built himself had new changes.

The city center wasn't changed, but the outer city had been expanded by three times. The Radiant God Cult, Fighting Union, and the other small forces had set up many formations and barriers. They had used their sect's formation and barriers to make the city bigger and stronger.

Many warriors with shabby clothing gathered and built shelters several hundred miles around the silver city.

Shi Yan stood on the city wall of the outer city, as his Soul Consciousness glided over those people. He found that they were also human, but they didn't belong to the group he had allowed to stay in the city.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji took the Demon Clan and left nine months ago. They had been waiting for Shi Yan for so long. Eventually, they couldn't help but leave and go on with their business.

Li Zheng Rong, Cao Qiu Dao, Di Shan, and Yu Rou came to see him at the city wall, their faces filled with sincere smiles.

"I met some changes in my advancement, so it took a lot of time. Anyway, I'm alright. You don't need to worry." Shi Yan told them his situation first, not waiting for them to ask him. "What's happened to those people?"

"Argh, they are the survivors. They were lucky that they survived the pagans' hunting." Li Zheng Rong frowned and explained. "After you got into the divine pond, alien tribes hunted people in the Perpetual Night Forest everywhere. Many people got killed,

while some had left the Perpetual Night Forest to some places far away. However, their results were also tragic. Those who were lucky enough to survive came here on their own. They want to get in the city to save their lives. Without you here, we won't let them in. Hence, they camped out there."

"Harrumph... Those people seem to be smart, choosing this place to take shelter. Otherwise, I guess they would have been killed already," Cao Qiu Dao sneered.

Alien tribes were hunting Human Clan everywhere. Only this Utmost Eight Purgatories City could stay away from that massacre. On one hand, this city had strong forces, and on the other hand, the Demon Clan and Monster Clan supported them, which made the other four clans spare this city during their hunt.

Thus, those who weren't allowed to enter the city and had camped outside also survived. Alien tribes didn't target them anymore.

Shi Yan scanned them. He could see that they were living in poor conditions. Some still had open wounds.

Many of them brought their families along with senile members. The survival pressure had affected them badly. They seemed to be subdued by some invisible force. Their eyes were always gloomy and distressed.

"Shi Yan..." Long Zhu appeared all of a sudden, wearing a merciful face, looking at him miserably. "No matter what, they are the members of the Human Clan. If we don't care about them, once the pagans come, they will be eradicated in just a blink."

Shi Yan frowned. He pondered for a while and then asked the others. "What do you think?"

"Old Long is right," Li Zheng Rong and Cao Qiu Dao said in a low tone, their faces solemn.

Those people had gathered there for a long time. They had spent

months to beg for a slot in the city. As the others had heard a lot of their whining and begging, even a man with a steel heart couldn't help but agree with them.

Many of them were old and wounded. If they didn't care, perhaps they would die sooner.

"Alright," Shi Yan nodded, "Open another region in the outer city and let them in. Yeah, let them stay alone. Remember, don't let them enter the city center. Although they are miserable, they are to be blamed for what they've done. These people change their minds often. They had aimed at us. The city center's really important, so we can't make a mistake. If they destroy our effort, there will be no place for our regret."

"Okay, I will arrange this myself," Long Zhu smiled, turning around to prepare for those people.

"When Bao Ao and Jie Ji left, they left you a note saying that you should go to their place after you get out. They have something important they want to talk with you." Cao Qiu Dao took out a map of the Grace Mainland, which had a location marked in bold red ink.

Shi Yan skimmed the map, but he didn't receive it. "What's the current situation?"

Cao Qiu Dao, Di Shan, Yu Rou, and Yang Tian Emperor shook their head as they felt a little bit embarrassed.

"You don't know?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"We've been here, and we rarely go out. Our operation range is within the Perpetual Night Forest," Yu Rou smiled tenderly and explained. "Half a year ago, all alien tribes left the Perpetual Night Forest. At this moment, only the Monster Clan and us stay in this forest. The alien tribes have claimed the rest of the continent. The five great alien tribes have divided the Grace Mainland into many regions, and each of them rules an area. We feel lucky they don't

come here to attack us anymore..."

"I heard Yan Long of the Monster Clan say that the five alien tribes have an internal dispute. They seemed to be having a war too. But I don't know the details," added Cao Qiu Dao.

Human Clan in the Perpetual Night Forest didn't dare to leave the Perpetual Night Forest, but the Monster Clan didn't have this restriction.

Yan Long and Xue Lie, the rulers of the Monster Clan, often got out of the forest. They knew the situation of the continent out there. However, they weren't interested in this stuff, so their information wasn't clear enough.

"Yeah, seems like I have to go out and check the situation of the continent," Shi Yan pondered for a while and then came to the city center to prepare for his trip.

Shi Yan spent three days in the city center to check every formation, barrier, and restriction once. He found that everything still worked well after he had left the city. There were no big issues.

This relaxed his mind. He talked to Yang Tian Emperor, Di Shan, and Yu Rou about the mysteries and the important features of the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. After he left, if something happened, they would know how to solve it.

After he prepared everything properly, he left to see Bao Ao and Jie Ji of the Demon Clan.

He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing came to him before he left. Their complexion looked complicated.

That year, when they were still in the Endless Sea, Shi Yan had helped the Yang family to confirm their overlord position in the Endless Sea. At that time, they had an abyss between each other already.

He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing had survived and left the Endless



Sea. They had become Yan Ke's disciples, which helped their cultivation base increase fast. The two girls thought that it would help them shorten the distance between them and the man. However, when they met him again, Shi Yan had reached the Second Sky of Spirit Realm. Even their teacher couldn't do anything to him.

After the earth-shaking event in the Perpetual Night Forest, they had a new cognition of the fact that the distance between them had never been shortened. Quite the contrary, it was getting bigger and bigger.

Shi Yan had reached the True God Realm, and the two girls, although they were always doing their best, hadn't even reached the Spirit Realm yet. It seemed that they were a life away.

Today, Shi Yan's position and profile had gone beyond their imagination. He would possibly become the future leader of Human Clan, with good relationships with the Monster Clan and the Demon Clan.

This made them understand that no matter how hard they tried, they would never reach Shi Yan. At this moment, there were so many beautiful women in the city, and each of had wished that Shi Yan would favor them, even for only one night. It was enough for them to be proud.

Compared to those women, they found that they had not many advantages. The thought of being together with Shi Yan for the rest of their lives had faded away.

Life was always cruel. To warriors, if the realms were too much different, it was hard to be together.

Shi Yan had many companions now, which made them recognize that leaving him when he was weak had become the thing they had regretted the most.

"I'm surprised I can meet you guys here. How are you doing? If

you need anything, just tell me. I will help you," Shi Yan talked first as he saw the two staying silent.

"No, we live well. Thank you. If you hadn't let us in, perhaps we would be dead already," He Qing Man whispered.

Shi Yan nodded. "Then it's good. We've known each other since we were in the Endless Sea. We're friends. It's natural if I help you, right?"

"Shi Yan, if you meet our teacher this time, please spare her life, as she had helped us before," begged Qu Yan Qing.

"Which teacher? Wu Qin of the Endless Sea or... Yan Ke?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Our teacher in the Endless Sea is dead. It's Yan Ke," Qu Yan Qing sighed, her face dreary.

Shi Yan nodded, "Yeah, if I meet Yan Ke, as long as she won't want to kill me, I will give you face."

The two women then thanked him.

"Qing Man... I want to have a word with him in private. Could you?" Qu Yan Qing bowed her head shyly.

He Qing Man was surprised for a while, then she left begrudgingly.

Waiting until the other woman left, Qu Yan Qing's beautiful eyes sparkled. She stooped her blushed face, talking shyly. "That year in the Endless Sea, before you left, I had told you that if you take me to the Divine Great Land, I will... be your woman."

Shi Yan was startled. Then, he waved his hand generously. "I was messing around. Don't mind that... Haha."

"I'm serious," Qu Yan Qing lifted her head, her beautiful eyes sparkling while looking at him. "If you want me, you can come to me at any time. I'm always willing to be with you."

Then, Qu Yan Qing blushed, running away without waiting for

Shi Yan to answer. She left an enchanting fragrance in Shi Yan's nostrils.

Shi Yan rubbed his nose, smiling and sighing quietly.

As he had experienced so many things, he wasn't so arrogant and compulsive like before. He understood that the debt of love was the most difficult debt to be paid off.

When he had just entered the Endless Sea, He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing were the famous beauties he could never reach. They were the pearls of the sea that many young men had yearned for.

At that time, if He Qing Man and Qu Yan Qing showed him a flash of their affection, he would be touched so much that he could have cried, as he would have felt proud beyond comparison.

However, Qu Yan Qing had humbled herself to ask for his night now. Human affairs were unpredictable and marvelous indeed.

# Chapter 688: Ancient Desolate Area, Border Sea

---

The location Bao Ao had shown him was in the far East of the Divine Great Land, a place called the Ancient Desolate Area.

In Antiquity Time, the Grace Mainland had an area called the Ancient Desolate Area, the transition area between the great clans, where different clans gathered and exchanged goods.

As Shi Yan had reached the True God Realm, he had a deeper knowledge of space. Eventually, he got to know that there were some smaller spaces around the Grace Mainland. They were like some small rooms surrounding a big room.

In Antiquity Time, those small spaces were the territories of different clans that they had exploited.

During that old time, the ten clans had thrived. As their experts with tremendous supernatural powers weren't contented with the small area of the Grace Mainland, they had found themselves new worlds. Those areas contained thick spiritual Qi and precious materials. They had used different methods to find many smaller spaces around the Grace Mainland, where their clan could stay and exploit.

Soon, they found out those spaces were filled with spiritual Qi and rich soil, which was suitable for their clan to live.

Then, the alien tribes moved to those smaller spaces, cultivating and searching for precious products of Nature. They had divided and claimed their own territories.

As time flew, many clans stayed in the small spaces. Some clans that were defeated in big wars in the Grace Mainland also moved their whole clan out of the continent.

Actually, the Seven-layered Underworld, the Four Demon Areas, the Chasm Battlefield, the secret domain in the Cold Wind Island,

and the Ice and Fire Secret Domain in the Perpetual Night Forest were all the small spaces outside the Grace Mainland. After tens of thousands of years, they had developed to the current appearance.

Those spaces were connected with each other and the Grace Mainland, and some gateways were sealed for some reasons.

After so many years, many of the small spaces had run out of spiritual Qi. Some spaces were sealed, becoming the survival regions of alien tribes. They would never connect with the Grace Mainland again.

The Ancient Desolate Area was the place connecting territories of alien tribes. Above the Ancient Desolate Area was the Border Sea, where many heaven gates kept floating and bobbing, leading to numerous small spaces.

Since space power in the Border Sea above the Ancient Desolate Area was chaotically abundant, it was the most suitable place to build heaven gateways. That's why the clans had decided to build the gateways there to connect to the smaller spaces.

Gradually, the Ancient Desolate Area had become a special existence.

However, no one knew what had happened to the Border Sea in the modern time that all heaven gateways had been closed. Due to the chaotic space energy in the area, people didn't dare to take risks and explore the place.

In the modern day, there were no experts who specialized in building heaven gateways. Thus, the Ancient Desolate Area had become an abandoned place.

Previously, the seven ancient factions had sent their hotshots to guard the area and the Border Sea above, as they were afraid something would happen to the Border Sea.

During the recent ten thousand years, everything was normal there. Gradually, the seven ancient factions had loosened their

guard. They withdrew the hotshots and didn't pay much attention to the area.

It was until the time Shi Yan comprehended the space power, which led to the Great Space Fission, and the Border Sea changed abnormally. Many sealed heaven gateways opened under the effect of the space power.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji had come back to this continent from the Second Demon Area through the heaven gateway here.

Shi Yan had gathered space power, using his Soul Consciousness to direct the way. Half a day later, he had crossed through layers of space just like walking through the doors to get to the Ancient Desolate Area. As soon as he had arrived there, he saw the wonder of the Antiquity Time – the Border Sea.

It was a barren place with a garnet ground and no foliage. Shi Yan saw many ruins of palaces and buildings, with many traces of ancient formations.

At first glance, the Ancient Desolate Area looked like an imposing ruin of a big city.

The sky above the Ancient Desolate Area had many cracks, like long cuts, across the sky. Those cuts contained billions of light spots, with fierce space power that could crush everything.

That was the Border Sea.

Shi Yan faced up the sky and recognized that the Border Sea was made of countless space slits. Each space slit led to a small space, which were the secret domains Yun Hao had mentioned.

The journey to the secret domains Yun Hao and the seven ancient factions had mentioned was the trip to the Border Sea above the Ancient Desolate Area. The seven ancient factions had some secret techniques that could open one or two secret domains here. These places still had spiritual Qi and some interesting places to explore.

Today, when Shi Yan observed so many cracks in the sky, he

understood that the seven ancient factions didn't need to open any secret domain anymore. Most of the gateways to the secret domains were inside the space cracks. However, it would be tough to explore those areas.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji had shown him this area. However, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness couldn't sense anything.

Standing in the barren, quiet Ancient Desolate Area, Shi Yan mused for a while, releasing flows of invisible lightning-like Soul Consciousness to the space slits in the Border Sea above his head.

Behind each space slit was a small space above the Grace Mainland. During the Antiquity Time, those spaces were the territories of the strong tribes. But after tens of thousands of years, the spiritual Qi there had scattered completely. Now, only death Qi filled the place.

When a normal warrior sent his Soul Consciousness to the space slit, not only couldn't he get anything, but also couldn't retrieve it back, which would affect his soul.

Shi Yan was different, as his Soul Consciousness carried the mysteries of Space Upanishad. It could glide through space slits without being hindered. Normal space energy fluctuation couldn't affect him, giving him room to explore the place.

More than three hundred flows of Soul Consciousness sneaked through the space slits. Flows of death and desolate aura came back to his God Soul, making him understand the basic situation of those spaces.

There was no living fluctuation, spiritual Qi, or treasures that carried energy. In those small spaces, it seemed that silence dominated the entire area, which caused him a fierce soul impact.

Actually, the Antiquity Time didn't have only the ten races. The God Clan, the Dark Clan, the Demon Clan, and the Monster Clan were just the ten strongest clans.

Besides them, there were almost one hundred minor and bizarre races. However, they were weak, and their competence was unclear.

Those small clans had opened space cracks and moved their whole clans there. However, after so many years, those spaces were tranquil, as if the clans staying inside were all dead.

Shi Yan was frightened.

Looking at the Border Sea above his head with so many space cracks, Shi Yan didn't give up. He gathered and condensed his Soul Consciousness, sending it to survey more space slits.

There were several thousand space slits inside the Border Sea. Even his Soul Consciousness's intensity couldn't search them all shortly. He had to carry it out step by step.

The three hundred flows of Soul Consciousness hadn't reported any energy fluctuations of living beings to him. Everything was quiet and desolate, which distressed him a little bit.

He understood that one of those space cracks was the entrance to the Second Demon Area where Bao Ao and Jie Ji had come from. However, finding a door among a countless number of doors wasn't an easy task.

He vaguely thought it wasn't good.

If nothing unexpected happened, Bao Ao and Jie Ji would send some experienced warriors of the Demon Tribe to support him. But he saw no one now. What had happened?

Then, he observed the surroundings of the Ancient Desolate Area, and found some streaks of recent battles.

A thought popped up in his head. The five great alien tribes had fought here!

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were here. Were they defeated? Did they retreat into the Second Demon Area?



Bao Ao and Jie Ji's force could be considered the strongest among the five clans. Normally, the other four clans wouldn't dare to fight face to face the Demon Clan.

Something unexpected had happened!

Shi Yan slammed his eyebrows together.

He had a good impression of Bao Ao and Jie Ji. They had helped him. Moreover, he seemed to have the Demon bloodline in his body. Naturally, Shi Yan would favor the Demon Clan more.

If the Demon Clan failed, his career in the Perpetual Night would be affected. He might be swept away by the other four clans shortly.

He suddenly felt tense. Shi Yan immediately gathered his Soul Consciousness and sensed the remaining space splits. A long while later, his eyes brightened. He shuddered and then retrieved the flows of Soul Consciousness he had released.

Got it!

A significant beam of Demon Qi appeared clearly inside a space slit. After he extended his Soul Consciousness to tens of thousands of miles inside the space crack, he felt the energy fluctuation of living beings for the first time.

That was a member of the Ghost Mark Clan.

He had a good grasp of the Soul Upanishad of the Ghost Mark Clan. His Soul Consciousness just needed to rake through the place, and he could confirm that was a member of the Ghost Mark Clan due to his special physique. Shi Yan was certain about it.

There was Demon Qi and adequate conditions for living beings, which confirmed that the Demon Clan was in there. However, seeing the Ghost Mark Clan's member there, Shi Yan assumed that the Demon Clan had encountered big trouble, and were forced to get back to their homeland.

Thoughts crossed his head continually. Shi Yan pondered, following the Soul Consciousness's direction towards that space slit.

This space split was quite peaceful and large. Perhaps, Bao Ao and Jie Ji had renovated this place before. The chaotic, unpredictable space energy waves were restrained by the strange Demon techniques, so this place wasn't as dangerous as Shi Yan had thought.

After he reached the True God Realm, his understanding of the space power had increased by one more level. However, the more he knew, the better he understood the dangers of space slits.

Although he understood space power, entering the perilous space slits could always take his life away.

Many terrible space cracks contained the evilest creatures in the world, along with the most intimidating natural formations. Many space cracks were exactly like giant slaughtering machines, which could destroy every creature, including the God Souls!

The chaotic space basin was one of the most hazardous places. The furious, disordered flows of space in there could destroy the God Soul, or smash the King God Realm's warriors into pulp.

This was why he didn't dare to enter the other entrance of the Ice and Fire Secret Domain, which had the chaotic space basin.

Although he was worried about Xia Xin Yan, for the future of the entire family and the Human Clan, he chose not to take risks. This showed how tremendously dangerous the place was.

Swoosh!

Like a gust of wind, he glided through the space slit. Immediately, he felt the light in his eyes had vanished, as he stepped in a dark, gloomy world.

The Second Demon Area...

# Chapter 689: The Second Demon Area

---

Just like many other secret domains, there were no sun, moon, stars, or spiritual Qi of heaven and earth in this area. Shi Yan only saw the thick clusters of demonic clouds on the horizon.

The air in the Demon Area was cold and dry. Strong gusts rolled and slaughtered everywhere like small sharp blades. There was nothing like spring or sunlight here.

Unlike the Grace Mainland which didn't have night and darkness anymore, this place was dark and gloomy, which would affect visitors' vision, as they couldn't see anything further than ten meters.

The ground was ink-black, as if it were dyed with a thick layer of ink, giving people a heavy pressure.

Shi Yan floated in the air, looking afar. He saw many large holes on the ink-black ground. They were like the Nine Serenities Abyss, that they couldn't see their bottom, or the giant mouth of a demonic beast, hiding many mysterious dangers.

Some holes were larger than one thousand miles in diameter, such that people couldn't see any beam of light or even their own fingers there. The darkness that filled the place was terrifying like a black hole in space, that could swallow everything, making people startle in fright.

The dark ground had some foliage. However, all of them looked ferocious, with sharp blades on their leaves and branches. Each tree was at least a hundred meters high, rooted deep in the earth like a giant monster.

Under the cold gust, branches with sharp blades slowly rattled, reflecting the dark, cold beams of light.

Many demonic beasts were moving in the immense forest. Usually, demonic beasts were savage. They would never stay idle.

They had to compete all the time, fighting and killing the other beasts to survive.

The world of beasts here had only killing competitions. Only high-level existences could gain intelligence and mighty powers to trigger the power that always hid in their souls.

The ground here was ink-black, and the forest was perilously immense. Many demolished palaces were seen in the abyss. Sometimes, Shi Yan could see pieces of Demogorgon giant statues under so many layers of dust. If he didn't observe carefully, he would never see them.

This was the Second Demon Area, a relatively large space outside the Grace Mainland, which had Demon Qi, and hence was pretty suitable for the Demon Clan to stay in and cultivate.

Early in the Antiquity Time, this land had been exploited, becoming the home of many small tribes of the Demon Clan.

Long, long time ago, this land had many treasures, including some rare stones and metals that couldn't be found in the Grace Mainland. Those were really good for forging powerful secret treasures.

The Demon Clan was once incomparably strong. During the Antiquity time, they had claimed all the rich spaces. The First, the Second, the Third, and the Fourth Demon Areas in those times were the place people had to gawk at and envy.

Due to the mighty power of this Clan, they had four areas to nurture their people, making them stronger quickly.

Shi Yan hovered under the ink-black demon clouds, releasing his Soul Consciousness to sense and search for energy fluctuations of living beings.

Not long after his Soul Consciousness had crossed thirty thousand miles, a living being's energy flow shot back to his Sea of Consciousness, running directly to his God Soul.

Shi Yan frowned, but he didn't hesitate. He urged his power to gather the mysteries of space power. Space ripples appeared in front of him, each ripple carrying his Soul Consciousness.

Under his feet, the land seemed to move backward, just like a big curtain being pulled away. All forests and abysses disappeared instantly.

He was crossing space using the magical power of space, which accelerated him tremendously.

The land didn't move. What was moving were his body, spirit, mind, and soul.

Dead bodies of the Demon Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, the Corpse Clan, and the Dark Clan scattered under his feet while he was crossing through space.

Shi Yan didn't linger to investigate. At the moment, he knew that a war had happened here, so he would obviously see many corpses scattered everywhere in this Demon Area.

Although the Ghost Mark Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, the Corpse Clan, and the Dark Clan had joined hands, they would never get the absolute advantage in this land. This was the Demon Clan's territory, the homeland which they were familiar with the most, having the thick Demon Qi.

In this area, even if they were weaker, it wouldn't be easy to chew them.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness had locked that soul energy fluctuation. Under the effect of his space power, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness could make a passage with the energy resonance. After one hour, he could reach his target.

That was a massive abyss covering the area of thousand miles squared. Dark demon Qi was rolling together with howls and roars of beasts.

Bodies were piled around the abyss. Most of them were Demon

Clan's clansmen and their mounts. The others were the corpses of the Dark Clan and the Ghost Mark Clan. Their blood was dried, becoming a dark-red layer that was sticking on the dark ground.

The bloody scent was still very thick, rising from the abyss. The fight down there hadn't ended yet.

Shi Yan frowned, looking into the dark abyss, where he couldn't see his own fingers. He decided to sneak in.

He owed Bao Ao and Jie Ji a favor. The ones attacking the Demon Clan today should be the experts of the other four clans. Although Shi Yan had reached the True God Realm, he wasn't so sure.

This time, he could get hurt like the other members of the Demon Clan, or he would have to bury his body in this Demon Area.

Yet, he plunged down anyway.

Along his way, demon Qi burst out torrentially. Cold gusts slaughtered through the demon Qi, bringing the thick, pungent scent of blood. Gradually, Shi Yan could see the vague light down there. It seemed some special intent domains were expanding, creating the strange magnetic fields.

Boom Boom!

Waves of ear-splitting explosion reverberated from underground. Big chunks of dark stones scattered, being flung everywhere, bringing with them tremendous energy.

Swoosh!

A hundred-meters-long beast was thrown away, rocketing into the air and almost hitting Shi Yan.

That beast had a sharp horn on the head, and dark green scales covered its entire body. However, it had so many bleeding wounds that Shi Yan could even see the bones under its flesh. Its life was sliding away. Apparently, he couldn't help it.

Shi Yan frowned. This beast was a level 7 one, equal to a human warrior in the Sky Realm. It seemed to be struck to death with only one strike. The attacker should be a Spirit Realm expert.

Roar!

Shi Yan roared like a flying dragon. His cry reverberated everywhere. He dashed quickly, crossing a hundred miles in just a blink and falling into the pitch-black abyss.

This immense abyss had many transparent crystals inlaid on the walls. They weren't black, but were radiating like five-colored precious gems, illuminating the bottom of the abyss.

Around one thousand warriors of the Demon Clan were roaring and crying on their beasts. Members of the Dark Clan and Ghost Mark Clan were chasing after them, getting them involved in battles. Lights shot out from everywhere, together with lightning strikes. Dark treasures and Demon treasures impacted, sparking dazzlingly.

Three Yama Kings and the two experts of the Ghost Mark Clan were surrounding two clansmen of the Demon Clan. They were struggling, but their faces were still savage. Their mounts were dying. The two demons cried furiously, as if they wanted to risk their lives altogether.

They were Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si. Shi Yan knew them. They were the members of the Ancient Bao family, Bao Ao's subordinates.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si were furious. Under the attacks of the three Yama Kings and the two hotshots of the Ghost Mark Clan, they were still bravely resisting. One of the Ghost Mark Clan's man had the aura and the soul fluctuation of Cassidy!

Bo Ruo and Gu Si Da had fallen into the disadvantaged situation. They had so many wounds on their body, and their armors had countless tiny cracks.

"Star falls!"

Shi Yan showed himself. He floated and shouted, not caring if the others would notice him.

Starlight blazed gloriously, condensing into diamonds in between his hands. They were revolving, falling from his hands like the Milky Way descending from the sky.

Flows of eternal Star Intent Domain diffused from each star, as they were arraying into a strange star formation. They moved as fast as meteors, making beautiful curves in the air before descending.

The stars hit members of the Dark Clan and Ghost Mark Clan, burning them with star flames. Starlight twirled around their bodies as they were dying.

"Crack!"

Shi Yan shouted, pointing towards the place where the three Yama Kings were standing. A space crack appeared, shooting billion of space light beams.

The three Yama Kings acted as if they had met ghosts. They were frightened, moving instantly with grimaced faces.

A terrifying suction force was released from that space crack. If they weren't quick enough, once they got pulled into that space, they would have to die for sure.

The space crack was perilous. Furthermore, they couldn't locate it, as it could tear space and appear anywhere. It was the deadliest place to be in. Once a creature got into that space, without spiritual Qi or energy, its consciousness would shatter, which was more terrible than death.

"You brat again!" A member of the Ghost Mark Clan smiled sickly. He had a young appearance, but his aura was senile, which was pretty similar to Cassidy.

"It's you!" Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si of the Demon Clan also screamed, wearing an astounded complexion.



Bo Ruo still wore male costumes. She was extraordinarily handsome. However, due to the battle, her bun was loosened. Her black hair cascaded like a soft black stream, lingering on her round rear end. She had a small horn on her head, which was the holder of her bun. It was revealed now.

It was the distinctive feature of the Horned Dragon Clan.

Gu Da Si belonged to the Black Scale Clan. His black scales on his body had grown directly from his skin. He was holding the two-bladed axe, which had blood on it. This weapon had an earth-shaking murderous aura, as it had drunk a lot of blood apparently.

"You are... Cassidy? You have a body again?" Shi Yan slightly changed his visage, as he was assessing the young man of the Ghost Mark Clan. He sensed, then shouted in fear.

When they were in the Perpetual Night forest, he had destroyed Cassidy's body, making his God Soul run away. After just one year, Cassidy had returned with a stronger aura!

"True. Haha... It's me." Cassidy beamed a gloomy smile. "You ambushed me when my power hadn't restored yet. It's my fortune that our patriarch has supernatural powers. He has helped me build a new body and restore my power. If my patriarch didn't want to attack the Demon Clan first, we would have killed you in the forest already! I will skin you alive! Haha... It's good that you have brought yourself here... too good!"

The Ghost Mark Clan still had a patriarch? An existence which was even more dangerous than Comoros?

Shi Yan discolored in fright.

# Chapter 690: Yin Spirit Ghost Flame

---

Shi Yan hovered in the abyss deep underground. His face was as still as water, while his mind was seething. Shi Yan felt his heart sink into a dark pit.

If the Ghost Mark Clan had a patriarch that was more powerful than Comoros, it would be a big catastrophe pouring on Human Clan.

This clan had a deep grudge against humanity. They had made killing the entire Human Clan their goal. Anyway, with their mighty force, Human Clan would be eradicated soon.

According to Cassidy, the top priority of his patriarch wasn't the Human Clan, as he had laid his eyes on the Demon Clan. Otherwise, Shi Yan would have had no time or chance to break through to the True God Realm.

While he had so many thoughts in his head, Cassidy attacked him.

"Soul Drawing!"

Cassidy sneered. His ten fingers wiggled, releasing an energy that could tear the soul.

Ten flows of strange soul fluctuation that naked eyes couldn't see coiled around Shi Yan like tenacious ropes, tightening gradually.

Cassidy had eaten the bitter fruit once. He knew that once soul energy entered Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, something strange would happen. This time, he was more careful, as he didn't send his ten flows of soul energy into Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, but turned them into invisible ropes and wound around Shi Yan's body.

A furious pulling force appeared from the ten soul ropes. It seemed that it could coil Shi Yan's newly formed God Soul, dragging it from the altar.

Shi Yan discolored drastically.

The God Soul was the root of a warrior, which stored the Life Seal and the Seals of Upanishad. Once it was dragged out of his body, it meant his life had come to an end.

Cassidy's power Upanishad had aimed at the God Soul. He wanted to forcefully drag Shi Yan's God Soul out of his body. Once the God Soul was pulled out, he couldn't perform many of his martial techniques. At that moment, he would become a fish that he could cut as he pleased.

Of course, Shi Yan wouldn't stay idle.

"Burn!"

A thought crossed Shi Yan's mind. He shouted, and a white jade flame sparked from his eyes. In the beginning, it was small. Shortly, it had turned into a seething fire sea covering his entire body. Flows of white-jade flames twirled around him like water.

Cassidy's ten soul ropes were covered, sizzling in an immense gray mist. They were all burned down.

"Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame! Heaven Flame!"

Cassidy discolored in fright. Eventually, he understood why he had to face the bitter result so many times. He paled immediately.

The Ghost Mark Clan was good at using Soul Upanishad. Their supernatural abilities had a close relationship with soul. That was also why they had become one of the most powerful, vilest clans. Many human beings, despite their higher realms, had only a tragic ending under their terrifying soul attacks.

However, it was no doubt the soul class defensive treasures were the things the Ghost Mark Clan was afraid of the most. And, the heaven flame that could burn all kind of soul energies was no doubt their nemesis!

Thus, seeing the white-jade flame covering Shi Yan, Cassidy felt

as if someone had punched him in the face. He felt so bitter.

His ten soul ropes were burned completely. Cassidy's God Soul got hurt the second time. He hurried to back off, as his face distorted terribly.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame seemed to have an unclear grudge against the Ghost Mark Clan. After it appeared, the flame hesitated for a while before dashing towards Cassidy, as if it had to burn the man into ashes. Cassidy hastened to run away, urging the mysterious power to resist the flame.

Other Ghost Mark Clan's members around them scattered in fear, trying to find the way to hide from the flame. However, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame burned their souls.

The Ghost Mark Clan wasn't good at using the other power Upanishads. If they were another clan, although the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had locked them, they could use the other techniques or energies to counter.

However, the power this clan was cultivating was related closely with souls. All the barriers, formations, and defense they had released depended on soul energy. When they met the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, their archenemy, they could only be termed as unlucky, as their barriers and restrictions would be burned as soon as the flame touched them. Gradually, they had no defensive power left.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame seemed to have a big grudge against the Ghost Mark Clan. After it had flown away from Shi Yan's altar, it kept chasing after the Ghost Mark Clan's members, burning their souls. As it had burned the souls of dozens of the Ghost Mark Clan's clansmen, it was still gazing at Cassidy.

Another expert of the Ghost Mark Clan was struggling to resist the flame. However, he could do nothing but run away as fast as possible.

Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was one of the heaven flames, and it was also the nemesis of this race. They had no way to resist its force. At this moment, they couldn't do anything else but leave. They needed to avoid this disaster first, only then they could have time to think of the countermeasures.

Shi Yan gawked, dropping his jaws.

Only at this moment did he finally understand the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame's intimidation. Where the white-jade flame swept over, all the soul fluctuations were washed away. Members of the Ghost Mark Clan had no way to withstand it.

Soon, members of the Ghost Mark Clan quickly left the abyss, leaving several hundred bodies while running for their lives.

A flow of white-jade white flame took one circle and then returned to Shi Yan. Like a jade flower, it exposed the eccentric beauty of danger in this abyss.

Bo Ruo, Gu Da Si, and the hotshots of the Demon Clan couldn't say anything. Their eyes brightened as they exhaled in relief.

It was strange that the three Yama King didn't leave or try to support the Ghost Mark Clan.

"I have a grudge against this race," the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame sent its thought to Shi Yan when it came back. "People of this race had sealed me. They couldn't kill me, so they decided to confine me."

Shi Yan suddenly recognized it.

It was true. When he was in the place of the Dark Devil Clan in the Chasm Battlefield, he got the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame in the Yin Beast Mountain. The Dark Devil Clan was a branch of the Ghost Mark Clan.

So, the one who had sealed the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was related to the Ghost Mark Clan.

This wasn't a surprise. The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame's features had made it the nemesis of the Ghost Mark Clan. This race had to find any means they could reach to destroy this flame.

Letting it survive meant planting an indefinite seed of danger for the clan, which they wouldn't know when it would sprout and kill them all. If Shi Yan were the hotshot of the Ghost Mark Clan, he would try many things to seal the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame as well.

Where are Bao Ao and Jie Ji?" Shi Yan turned around, looking at Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si. "You guys separated?"

Bo Ruo was a member of the Horned Dragon Clan. Her long hair cascaded along her body, touching the ground. Her face was as beautiful as a gem, decorated with her phoenix eyes. Hearing him, she snorted and then said, "The two masters are in another area. Stronger enemies are attacking them. Because of you, they have joined hands and attacked our masters."

Shi Yan was surprised.

At this moment, he found that the creature in the dim halo weren't staying with the three Yama Kings. Also, Shi Yan didn't see the hotshots of the other clans like Comoros, Corpse Chief, and Kante. From this situation, he could assume that Bao Ao and Jie Ji were in big trouble.

"It's the Demon Clan who had raised the dispute," Yama King Abi harrumphed. He coldly looked at Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si. "If the patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan hadn't been revived, you guys would have killed them all. You have triggered this great war. Of course, we won't stay idle and let you slaughter us."

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si darkened their faces.

"If you guys want to do whatever you want and open the First Demon Area, we have to destroy the Demon Clan," shouted Yama

King Hei Tian.

The three Yama Kings glared at Shi Yan. Their visages were strange, as if they considered Shi Yan their delicious prey. The three Yama Kings didn't talk more. They gathered their followers and left after the Ghost Mark Clan.

Shi Yan didn't understand anything, but he had a strange, uneasy feeling in his heart.

From the looks of the three Yama Kings when they left, they seemed to be interested in him more, as if he had something marvelous on his body. This surprised him a lot.

Shortly, all the members of the Dark Clan had retreated.

Bo Ruo pinned up her long hair, adjusting her clothes. In the next moment, she returned to look like an elegant, handsome young man. However, her complexion was cold like a gloomy, sharp sword.

"Abi, Hei Tian, and Hades might have sent the news already. He... will come soon." Bo Ruo frowned, whispering to Shi Yan. "Why did you use the heaven flame? It will bring more troubles."

Shi Yan squinted, talking faintly. "Why do you say so?"

"The dim halo that Abi, Hei Tian, and Hades have protected carries the soul of the Dark Clan's sage. That soul has the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame. If he knows you have heaven flames, he will come and collect your flames. Heaven flames can absorb each other. If he can absorb your heaven flames, his soul will become more intimidating," Bo Ruo explained agitatedly.

A streak of light sparkled in Shi Yan's eyes.

In the Antiquity Time, a sage of the Underworld had fallen into bedevilment during his cultivation. His body got shattered, and his soul had sunk into the Yin Spirit Ghost Sea of the Underworld. It then gathered the billion Yin Spirits of the Yin Spirit Ghost Sea to evolve into the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame.

The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame contained the knowledge of the martial path of the Underworld's sage. If the Dark Dweller got it, he could become the new leader of that Dark Dwellers generation. The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame could control the Yin Spirit and the wandering ghosts. It was ranked number six among the heaven flames, and was the most suitable flame to the Dark Clan.

According to Bo Ruo, the creature that the three Yama Kings Abi, Hei Tian, and Hades had protected was the soul of a sage of the Dark Clan. He had the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, but he didn't have a body. At this moment, he still had many weaknesses.

If he could absorb some heaven flames and get stronger, he could use the scorching power of the heaven flame to condense a new body. At that time, he would be extremely intimidating.



# Chapter 691: The statues of the Demogorgon

---

The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame was special, as only soul-formed beings could absorb it. This cold flame had the energy power that could control the spirits or wandering ghosts of the Underworld. At the same time, it contained the martial path of the Underworld's Sage.

Apparently, a creature of the Underworld had occupied this flame. However, he didn't have a body anymore. That was how his soul could merge with the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame.

He needed to create a new body to promote his supernatural powers.

To create a body, it normally required the strong flesh and blood to be refined by the scorching heaven flame. If he could have another heaven flame, he soul would be mightier, and the chance of having a body could be bigger.

The heaven flames could devour each other. This was why the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame wanted to swallow the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, and the Earth Flame. If it could merge with the two other heaven flames, it would be more powerful than itself.

That Dark Clan's creature wanted Shi Yan's heaven flames, and Shi Yan was moved on hearing about the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame.

The more heaven flames he had, the stronger the heaven flame altar in his brain would become. At that time, he could urge more intimidating power of those flames.

If he could occupy the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame and merge it with the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Corpse Vanishing Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, and the Earth Flame in the sacrificial altar, this tier of the altar would be sharply increased to another level.

Shi Yan also wanted the flame of that creature.

"He... exists in the soul form only. It shouldn't be hard to deal with him, right?" He kept silent for a while before his eyes got brightened. "It's not hard to deal with him?" Gu Da Si beamed a forced smile. His scarred face became more ferocious with that smile. "Although he only has the soul, he has the strange weapons of the Dark Clan. He has a layer of tens of thousands of Yin spirits and wandering ghosts around him. I think even Master Bao Ao couldn't be sure if he could defeat him or not."

The corner of Shi Yan's mouth twitched.

As Bao Ao and Jie Ji had taken one step into the King God Realm, they were the formidable experts of the Peak of True God Realm. If the Demon Qi in the Demon Area had been thick enough, they would have reached the King God Realm earlier with their innate talents.

In this land, except for the King God Realm experts, not many people could really threaten Bao Ao and Jie Ji. Even Qi Tian Oldie Long Zhu wasn't their opponent.

If Bao Ao and Jie Ji weren't that creature's match, even if Shi Yan after having reached the True God Realm with mysterious power Upanishads, he could never defeat that soul of the Dark Clan.

Then, Shi Yan couldn't help but smile miserably. He shook his head begrudgingly, as he was filled with pressure.

"Why do they want to stop you from opening the First Demon Area?" asked Shi Yan.

"Wait until you meet our Master, he will tell you." Bo Ruo put on a glum face as if she really hated him. She didn't want to explain further.

Shi Yan rubbed his nose. As he thought it wasn't interesting, he didn't want to chase further.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji didn't explain in details to Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si about the relationship between them and Shi Yan. In their eyes, it was hard to reason why their masters had turned their backs to the other alien tribes for a human brat.

If Bao Ao and Jie Ji didn't protect them, Shi Yan's city would have been demolished. It was normal that the Human Clan would have been eradicated.

This was their original plan.

However, after Bao Ao found Shi Yan, everything had turned upside down. Their plan wasn't going as they had expected.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si didn't know what their masters had thought. They didn't support this idea, so they deemed Shi Yan as the ringleader of all the bad things.

Corpses of the Demon Clan's members scattered everywhere in the Second Demon Area, including their fellows of the Horned Dragon Tribe and the Black Scale Tribe. They had blamed their fellow's deaths on Shi Yan.

"Let's go."

Bo Ruo harrumphed, then walked to a hefty stone in the abyss. That stone was really massive. It was around one hundred meters tall, ink-black and as rigid as steel.

More than seven hundred members of the Demon Clan ridding their beasts gathered from the other areas in the abyss. They had many wounds, and were looking at Shi Yan with hatred in their eyes.

Gu Da Si's mountain-like muscular body was covered with wounds. He didn't care about that and came to that stone. He extended his arm, touching that stone.

A wave of brutal energy was poured into that massive stone. It then moved, cracking and revealing a pitch black entrance.

"Bao Ao is in there?" Shi Yan used his Soul Consciousness to sense for a while. He was surprised that this passage was empty, as he couldn't detect any energy beam of living fluctuation. He couldn't help but ask.

"No!" Bo Ruo screamed impatiently. She took the lead and entered the wide passage that could allow a hundred people walk shoulder by shoulder. Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si took their members and the beasts and walked through the passage easily.

Shi Yan wasn't enraged. He calmly walked behind Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si, into the entrance.

The wall of this entrance was also black as if it was made of black, rigid metal. Some precious gems were inlaid on the wall, illuminating the passage.

Waiting until one hundred Demons and beasts got into the entrance, the stone behind them slowly moved, sealing the entrance.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si walked in the front while Shi Yan followed them. The group of people entered deeper into the entrance. Everyone wore a dark face, and no one uttered a word. The ambiance of this entrance was stiff.

In this silent place, many members of the Demon Clan were wearing a cold face, looking at Shi Yan with their bloodthirsty eyes, as if they were trying to press down their resentment.

Demon Clan didn't like humans. Shi Yan was a human being, a special human that their masters favored. In those clansmen's eyes, Shi Yan had brought death to their fellows.

After all, they would never dare to blame Bao Ao and Jie Ji.

This passage was dry, but it had the smell of rotten things. There was no decoration or anything magical. This place brought only a cold and hard feeling, which irritated people's hearts and minds.

They had been walking for several hours. However, Bo Ruo and

Gu Da Si hadn't said a word. Shi Yan also kept his mouth shut.

His Soul Consciousness scanned the place, and got to know that this passage was tens of thousands of miles long, as if it would never end. At the same time, it was a spacious place, which was a megastructure underground.

After another four hours, when Shi Yan was so bored he got irritated, Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si suddenly put on a serious countenance, their face respectful and fearful.

Shi Yan focused on them, observing these two.

The ink-black wall in front of Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si suddenly had some magical demon patterns, which looked like the lines on a human palm. They were complicated and mysterious at the same time.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si stood at that place, biting their fingers to drip their blood on those lines.

The demon patterns glowed abruptly like a massive spider web. Those peculiar patterns glowed with silver, green, blue, and orange lights. In this ill-lit passage, they looked both evil and mysterious.

A light spot suddenly flashed in the center of the spider web. A light then expanded, sending strange energy fluctuations, lingering and twisting each line.

A massive black door emerged in the light. It was ten meters tall and a dozen of meters wide. Demon Qi diffused torrentially from the door.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si threw a look over their shoulder, looking at Shi Yan as they entered the door, without a word.

Shi Yan smiled clumsily. He got through the door, not waiting for the others to call him.

An ancient, spacious grand palace appeared in his sight. This

palace was one thousand meters tall, with an open center, in an area of ten miles squared. The center of this palace had many giant black pillars decorated with drawings of demonic beasts.

Demon scriptures were carved on the walls outside the palace. Each paragraph was inexplicably complicated, as though it was carrying a mysterious power.

A deep pond sat in the center of the palace, where a black flame was burning, releasing a thick Demon Qi. Standing in the center of the black flame in the pond were seven ferocious-looking Demogorgon statues. Each of them was a hundred meter tall, as lively as a real person, with ruthless energy waves.

Shi Yan stood by that pond as he lifted his head to watch the grand statues. He felt he was so small.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si took the clansmen of the Demon Clan kneeled down by the pond, using the worshiping etiquette of the Demon Clan with solemn faces.

The beasts who came with them seemed to be affected too. They laid down on the ground, gazing at the beast drawings on many pillars in the hall as if they could receive some energy from them.

"Vastly through ten thousand years, the Demogorgon's will doesn't extinguish!"

"Vastly through ten thousand years, the Demogorgon's will doesn't extinguish!"

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si kneeled together with their fellows, looking at the seven statues of the ferocious Demogorgon, hailing them with a strange language.

At the moment the voices arose, their mind, spirit, and Qi had fused with their energy, turning into many beams, rolling into the seven statues.

It was unknown what kind of material they had used to produce those seven Demogorgon statues. However, a kind of magical

energy was moving continually inside the statues, and it seemed to never fade.

Bo Ruo, Gu Da Si, and the hotshots of the Demon Clan had used their minds, spirit, Qi, and their willpower to create a connection with some power in the seven Demogorgon statues. They seemed to use that power to test their latest progress and gain more flashes of comprehension.

The seven statues of Demogorgon were like the special existence of the soul sacrificial altar of the Corpse Clan, which stored the Seal of Upanishads of the Demon Clan and never lost them.

# Chapter 692: Derive the inheritance!

---

The power Upanishad in those Demogorgon statues was the essence of the Demon Clan's best techniques, just like the martial arts, martial spirit, and other power Upanishad of Human Clan.

However, human warriors usually used books and scriptures to learn the inheritance, while the Demon Clan used those statues to gain the pure energy that they were cultivating.

These seven Demogorgon statues seemed to carry kinds of energy and ancient Seals of Upanishad, or some new powers that they had just created lately in the Second Demon Area. New members of the Demon Clan would come here to take the powers. Experts of the clan would visit this place to record the new power Upanishad they had discovered and developed, that the others could come and take it as their inheritance.

These seven Demogorgon statues carried the culture, Upanishad, essence, and the inheritance of the Demon Clan. This place was the cradle of the Second Demon Area, the most precious thing they had.

As Bo Ruo, Gu Da Si and the other experts of the Demon Clan had new cognition of their powers after the battle, they came here to use the seven Demogorgon statues to verify and gain the cultivating techniques that were more suitable to them.

The seven Demogorgon statues were inexplicably mysterious. They were the great combination of power Upanishads. They could store the knowledge and the way to use energy.

All members of the Demon Clan were humming, connecting themselves with the statues to find the suitable powers for them to learn and break through.

Shi Yan gawked as he was astounded because of the Demon Clan's magic. The way they used the statues to impart their



inheritance and culture seemed to be more...powerful than using books.

Books would be damaged with time. Most of the time, the reason why some martial techniques were lost was because the owners were killed and they didn't leave any books to record their power Upanishad. In such a case, a power Upanishad would disappear forever.

The Demon Clan didn't do the same. They used the carvings on those statues to store the power Upanishads they had gained from the ancient times up to now. Whenever an expert learned a new technique, he would carve it on the statues. Other members could inherit his new technique from the statues or could use it to break through later.

From this point of view, the Demon Clan was a generous clan. They weren't like the Human Clan who always considered the powers they got a big treasure, which they would never share with the others.

Shi Yan suddenly got it. It was no longer unknown why the Demon Clan was so strong.

They had recorded the knowledge and wisdom of the experts in the Demon Area on those statues, which would help the next generations save time and effort in learning new techniques.

That's why people said that Demon Clan had no weak members, and that everybody was a solidier. It was related closely to the Demogorgon statues.

Each new member of the Demon Clan could come to this place and receive the inheritance under their senior's guidance. It would be much easier for them to cultivate their powers later.

It wasn't like the Human Clan that only outstanding people could become the disciples of famous experts and enter the martial path.

This was also the reason why only a small group among the

crowd of tens of thousands of people could become warriors.

Human Clan, because of their selfishness, wouldn't use this method to preserve the power Upanishads and leave to the next generations, making it an open source for the youths to choose their road of cultivation.

Bo Ruo, Gu Da Si, and the other members of the Demon Clan were still humming, connecting with the seven Demogorgon statues to feel the mysteries of the power, to learn them and use them for their next battles.

Shi Yan stood there motionlessly. He didn't look harmonious with the rest of the Demon Clan, who were kneeling on the ground.

Anyway, no one cared about him, as they were busy connecting with the Demogorgon statues. They weren't worried that Shi Yan would disturb them or break the statues.

Shortly, the Inner World Five Devils in his Blood Vein Ring seemed to sense something. They struggled, getting out of the ring.

After the Five Devils had absorbed thirty-six ghostly spirits in the ring, they had grown up vigorously, with mighty, evil soul fluctuations. As soon as the Five Devils got out, they didn't wait for Shi Yan to say anything, flying directly towards the seven Demogorgon statues, disappearing shortly.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck.

Bo Ruo and the experts of the Demon Clan seemed to not recognize this sudden occurrence. They were still meditating to learn something.

However, Shi Yan was so frightened. His Soul Consciousness flickered, and he found that he still had the connection with the Five Devils. The Five Devils had entered the statues, and they seemed to take in the powers there happily. This finding astounded Shi Yan a lot.

The Five Devils were taking the power Upanishad that the Demon Clan had been imparting for tens of thousands of years in the statues. What kind of f\*cking situation is it?

The Five Devils' absorption speed was rapid. Shortly, they left one statue to go to another.

The connection between Shi Yan and the Five Devils became clearer. He found a large amount of knowledge of new realms, demon techniques, and methods he didn't know.

When the Five Devils were taking in the power of the statues, it wasn't that they were erasing the powers and knowledge stored in there, as they had just restored the streaks of cognition in their own souls. So, they didn't cause any anomaly to the statues that Bo Ruo and the others could recognize. The number of techniques and power Upanishads wasn't changed.

Only Shi Yan knew that the Five Devils had changed slowly. Their aura became more eccentric, as if they were gaining... intellect.

Shortly, the Five Devils had turned into five gray shadows, flying to his Sea of Consciousness instead of the Blood Vein Ring, before Bo Ruo's group could recognize them. His Sea of Consciousness was changed again. After the Five Devils had entered, they proactively found a place, gathering in a circle and releasing flows of magical techniques of the Demon Clan.

The Five Devils were now based a little bit farther from the tier of the heaven flame and the Seals of Upanishads. They seemed to condense a part of the mysterious tier.

Shi Yan was more startled.

Currently, he had a three-tiered altar in his head with the Sea of Consciousness as the bottom, the heaven flames and power Upanishads as the second tier, and his God Soul topping them all.

At this moment, the Five Devils had expanded a section in the

second tier, building a sacrificial altar similar to the heaven flames and power Upanishads. Shi Yan didn't know what would be stirred up due to this change.

He didn't know how to stop them. He could only gawk at the Five Devils, after they had absorbed the mysteries of demon techniques, rolling in his Sea of Consciousness.

Right after that, flows of black flame on the pond nearby started to roll over Shi Yan, as if they were pulled by some mysterious power.

Those black flames weren't a real fire. They were the Demon Qi that was condensed to carry the massive demon energy.

Flows of flames covered him as if he were burned by a black fire.

Only he knew that the Five Devils had dragged the demon energy in this black fire to configure a new altar.

Muscles and blood in his body surged altogether. Drops of Immortal Blood that he had treasured were pulled out, gathering in his Sea of Consciousness. The mix of his Immortal Blood, blood Qi, demon Qi, and the strange aura of the demon techniques had become the foundation of the new altar.

Shi Yan felt hurt seeing the Five Devils using his Immortal Blood. However, he had no way to stop them.

In his mind, Shi Yan wanted to see what the Five Devils wanted to do. He vaguely felt that the Five Devils wouldn't harm him, and instead would give him big benefits.

Gradually, a shining blood section appeared. It was like a viscous blood sea, with a miraculous winding air floating above the sea. Demon Qi then poured into the blood sea, turning it into a black and red sea.

The Five Devils arrayed in a pentagonal formation. They stood imposingly like the five Demogorgon statues at the five corners, using his Immortal Blood, Essence Qi, demon Qi, and the other

techniques to condense a section similar to the altar of the heaven flames and the Seals of Upanishad.

A new section of the sacrificial altar...

"What are you doing!"

Bo Ruo suddenly screamed in fright. She awakened first, and she saw the black flame in the pond covering Shi Yan entirely.

Suddenly, Gu Da Si and the other members of the Demon Clan stood up. Their faces were ferocious, as if they all wanted to kill Shi Yan.

This place was the holy land of the Demon Clan. The Hall of Demogorgon was the holy place, where all demons could take the mysterious powers of the clan. If Bao Ao and Jie Ji hadn't advised them, even if they had to die, they would have never brought Shi Yan here.

He had come here obediently, and now he had caused something strange, that made the thick demon Qi cover his body. Bo Ruo's group couldn't stand it. They hated that they couldn't slash Shi Yan ten thousand times to kill him.

Nobody had witnessed the Five Devils taking the mysterious inheritance in the statues, so they didn't know that Shi Yan wasn't willing to do that. They assumed that Shi Yan wanted to mess this place up.

Shi Yan couldn't answer her, as the Five Devils were torturing him in his head, consuming his Soul Consciousness and Essence Qi. At this moment, he couldn't get distracted. He had to observe the Sea of Consciousness, as he was afraid that something bad would happen. He didn't notice what was happening around him.

"This human has triggered the demon flame! He must have done something wrong! Kill him!"

"Kill him!"

"Kill him!"

"Kill him!"

In just a blink, all members of the Demon Clan in the Hall of Demogorgon thundered. The Hall of Demogorgon was the holy place no one could trespass. The respect they had for this place was much more than what they had for Bao Ao and Jie Ji.

Trespassing the Hall of Demogorgon meant someone wanted to uproot the Demon Clan in the Second Demon Area. That person would never be forgiven.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si changed their face amidst the furious screams. At this moment, they got a headache as they didn't know how to calm down the situation.

Before Bao Ao left them, he had asked them seriously to bring Shi Yan to the Demogorgon Hall if they found him. And, they had to protect Shi Yan, keeping him safe and sound.

However, Shi Yan seemed to trigger everyone's anger in this Hall of Demogorgon. Those clansmen were enraged, thinking that he had violated the Hall. They must use his blood to wash this place.

"What should we do now?" Gu Da Si frowned, asking Bo Ruo in a low tone, his face begrudging. "Master has advised us to keep him safe. But our Demon Clan has rules. Anyone who trespasses the Hall of Demogorgon would be executed. There's no exception even to our clansmen, let alone a human... being?"

Bo Ruo also had a headache. "We can't contact our Master now. It's a headache. Arrrggghhh, so annoying!"

# Chapter 693: The Mark

---

In the Demogorgon Hall, Shi Yan was tense, watching the change of his Sea of Consciousness. A new section of the altar was formed gradually.

The black flame was still engulfing him, making a large amount of demon Qi run disorderly in his body. Most of it started to get into his Sea of Consciousness, while the remaining part ran through his vessels to reach his internal organs and limbs.

The Five Devils in the pentagonal formation were bobbing in his Sea of Consciousness, gathering the tremendous energy to finish the final step.

The screams of the Demon Clan's members thundered and reverberated in the Hall of Demogorgon. Many clansmen were enraged as they all wanted to kill Shi Yan.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si couldn't control the current situation.

Howl Howl Howl!

Strong black flames like pieces of leaf engulfed Shi Yan. At this moment, a wave of pure demon energy diffused from him, lingering inside the Hall.

Many members of the Demon Clan saw Shi Yan's body taking in the black flames from the pond, giving him a demon, eccentric aura.

The black ribbon covering his head fell, as an ancient mark glowed.

A flow of torrential, immense soul energy surged from the mark, just like the heavenly might. Many members of the Demon Clan felt their souls tremble continually, such that they couldn't even stand still. They became grimaced.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si were stunned. They gawked at the mark on

his head, and couldn't hide the fear on their faces.

The energy from the mark was clear. It was obviously the magical inheritance of the Demon Clan. As it was still sealed, the soul energy accumulated in that seal was earth-shaking.

The mark on Shi Yan's forehead just flashed, then restored its normal state.

However, the clansmen here had all felt a deep tremor in their souls. It was like an Ancient Demogorgon was imposingly taking a walk around the Hall, making them feel small and incapable of resisting.

The thought of killing Shi Yan in Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si's mind suddenly weakened. They stood there dumbstruck as they recalled the mark they had just seen.

Famous ancient families of the Demon Clan all had the mighty marks, which stored the history, culture, and inheritance of the family. It was the special power Upanishad, but it wasn't like the Demogorgon statues. This kind of mark was carved on the body of the Demon Clan's clansmen. Just like the martial spirit of human warriors, it had tremendous powers and would never disappear.

As Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si belonged to the Ancient Bao family, they had some knowledge of ancient marks. However, they had watched for a while but still couldn't figure out which family the mark on Shi Yan's head belonged to.

However, they could verify one thing: Shi Yan wasn't human.

Only people with the Demon Clan's bloodline could receive the mark, which was also the crest of the family. Persons who carried the mark couldn't be human.

Their hatred towards Shi Yan faded after they had recognized Shi Yan was from the same clan.

Clansmen who were the most hostile also calmed down, looking at him with surprise.



At this moment, they finally recognized that Shi Yan was still absorbing the demon power of the black flame, and he seemed to be doing something.

"Demon Soul Sacrificial Altar!" Bo Ruo observed for a while and then shouted with astonishment.

Gu Da Si was frightened. She gazed at Shi Yan and asked Bo Ruo. "Are you sure?"

The Demon Clan was like the other races. When they reached the True God Realm, they could condense the sacrificial altar in their Sea of Consciousness. The Demon Clan's sacrificial altar had three tiers. The bottom was the Sea of Consciousness, the top was the Demon Soul, and the middle tier was the techniques and powers they had learned. This was the main cultivating path of many races.

What Shi Yan was doing was to condense the Demon Soul Sacrificial Altar in the second tier of his altar.

Bo Ruo was at the Second Sky of True God Realm. After watching for a while, she could confirm this information, which astounded her greatly.

Usually, when a warrior broke through the True God Realm, he could create the soul sacrificial altar in his head. But it wouldn't change shortly.

It was obvious that Shi Yan had reached the True God Realm, and he had the soul sacrificial altar in his head. However, at this moment, it wasn't normal that he was condensing a tier once again.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si couldn't understand why he could change the structure of the soul altar for the second time.

They couldn't enter Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. Otherwise, if they saw the heaven flame altar on Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness beside the Seals of Upanishad, they would be startled as if they had

seen ghosts.

When human warriors used one kind of power Upanishad to break through, this power would become the foundation of his altar's second tier when he reached the True God Realm.

Shi Yan's second tier had three Seals of Upanishad, including the Star, the Death and Life, and Space, which was unusual. The heaven flame altar was an unreasonable area. This was so different from the cultivating path of normal people.

Right when Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si were still dumbstruck, Shi Yan inhaled a breath of dark demon Qi. He opened his eyes and then grinned. "It feels good."

A new section of the altar was formed with his blood, Essence Qi, demon Qi, mind, and spirit, to blend with the inheritance of the Demon Clan that the Five Devils had just absorbed.

The Five Devils sat neatly on the five corners of the altar. They were motionless, connecting with his soul.

Countless currents were moving in the center of the altar, generating a chaotic movement. It was the development of the demon techniques and mysteries that could connect with Shi Yan.

When his thought flickering, his God Soul ran into the altar. He then found many strange and rare demon cultivating and martial techniques. There were more than one thousand techniques with different ways of using energy. However, they were just the basic ones. At the same time, he could find some complete and powerful cultivating techniques.

That altar seemed to become a store that recorded the techniques that had been stored over tens of thousands of years in the seven Demogorgon statues of the Second Demon Area. They were so complicated that he felt his head was enlarging.

This place was like a giant bookstore. Those techniques and power Upanishad were similar to the books of techniques that

guided people on their cultivation path. Most of the techniques were categorized, specialized for different races.

A method wasn't suitable for everybody, especially the Demon Clan, which had many branches with different, unique physiques. That's why those methods were classified.

Shi Yan felt that he had entered the vast ocean of knowledge, where the techniques and method were the seawater, that he could read and cultivate.

But, he soon found that that knowledge wasn't useful for him.

All techniques and power Upanishad specified which branch of the Demon Clan could cultivate them. The Black Scale Tribe and the Horned Dragon Tribe had different cultivating techniques. They were even contrasting to each other.

The first thing he needed to know before starting cultivating a demon technique was to figure out which branch of the Demon Clan he belonged to.

Without this information, although he had so many cultivating techniques and methods, and some of them were so mighty, he couldn't practice any of them.

That sea of knowledge was the foundation of the altar. Without them, his altar could never be formed.

Shi Yan was still musing, and he didn't notice Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si's changes. Only when Bo Ruo made a dry cough did he then wake up.

"The seven Demogorgon statues are the roots of our Second Demon Area. They keep the vast sea of knowledge. As you can build the altar, it means you've got the inheritance from the statues, right?" Bo Ruo observed him and then asked.

Shi Yan nodded. "It's true. Although it wasn't the method you mentioned, I did have the inheritance from the statues. However... it seems I can't cultivate it."

"The inheritance of the statues in the Second Demon Area isn't the top-grade one. It doesn't have the Seal of Upanishads of the King God Realm." Bo Ruo gazed at him. "Anyway, the First Demon Area's different. Our Masters said that the Demogorgon statues in the First Demon Area store the mysteries of power that the King God Realm experts could study further. It's also why the two masters have to go there. Only receiving the inheritance from the statues in the First Demon Area can help them break through and advance."

Shi Yan was sensitive enough to see the change of Bo Ruo. This woman was talking nonstop. Her impatience seemed to have vanished.

"Why did you tell me that?" Shi Yan was bewildered, frowning.

"I think... I understand the two master's concern. Perhaps you are the key to open the First Demon Area," said Bo Ruo.

Gu Da Si's eyes brightened as he was excited.

The other members of the Demon Clan were also stirred up, their faces surprised.

The First Demon Area was the ancestral land of the Demon Clan. Demon Qi there was as thick as water. It also had the top-grade Demogorgon statues, with more precious knowledge of the Demon Clan stored through generations. Once they got there, they could thrive.

In their hearts, the First Demon Area was the holy land, which they always yearned for a glimpse of.

As they knew that Shi Yan would be the key to open the First Demon Area, people who wanted to kill him weren't hostile anymore.

"Why do the other clans not want you to open it?" asked Shi Yan.

"It requires an enormous amount of heaven and earth energy to open the First Demon Area. The moment the First Demon Area

opens, it will draw the energy of heaven and earth in the Grace Mainland proactively." Bo Ruo hesitated for a while and then said, "It would be alright if it were in the Antiquity. At that time, heaven and earth energy was thick like the cluster of clouds that would never disperse. So, the required energy to open the Demon Area wasn't a big deal in that era."

Pausing for a while, Bo Ruo said, "But it's different now. After tens of thousands of years, heaven and earth energy in this continent is thin and scattered. If we open the First Demon Area, it will take one-third of the energy. The other clans would never let this happen."

Shi Yan was surprised.

# Chapter 694: Drawing of Lao Luo

---

The heaven and earth energy was the cultivating foundation of the warriors. No matter it was spiritual Qi, demon Qi, dark Qi, or Mysterious Yin Qi, it was just a kind of heaven and earth energy.

To the big clans, heaven and earth energy was essential for their survival and upgrades. They would never quit using it.

After ten thousand years, the continent, which used to be filled with heaven and earth energy, now had just a thin layer left, which was also the reason why it was tough to see any King God Realm experts.

Under the given circumstance of the shortage of heaven and earth's energy, of course, the other clans would never let Bao Ao and Jie Ji use one-third of it to open the First Demon Area. This explained why they wanted to uproot the Demon Clan.

Using one-third of heaven and earth energy in the Grace Mainland to open a Demon Area surprised Shi Yan.

Bo Ruo explained him the situation and the reason why the other four great clans wanted to join hands and eradicate the Demon Clan.

"Where are Bao Ao and Jie Ji? Where should we meet them?" Shi Yan pondered for a while and then asked.

"In here," Bo Ruo pointed at the ground under her feet. "If Master Bao Ao and Jie Ji can escape, they will definitely get here. We should wait here. I hope they will be safe and sound."

After she said that, many clansmen put on a heavy countenance. Worries sparkled in their eyes.

This time, the Ghost Mark Clan, the Dark Spirit Clan, the Dark Clan, and the Corpse Clan had attacked them. These four clans had many hotshots, not to mention the patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan. Although they were confident about Bao Ao and Jie Ji's

competence, under the furious attack of such mighty force, they were still worried a lot.

They were especially worried about the threat that came from the reincarnated patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan and the one who had the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame of the Dark Clan.

Bo Ruo explained, then waved her hand to dismiss her fellows. The other members of the Demon Clan then started to talk and build the relationship with their demonic beasts.

The relationship between the Demon Clan and the demonic beasts was always good. Some demons and their beasts would never separate, as they were the best partners of each other. Sometimes, their relationship was more than siblings. No matter how busy they were, they always spent time to use the soul to contact their beasts. This would increase their compatibility.

Gu Da Si and the group of demons he led also found a corner and started to talk to their mounts using their souls. No one paid attention to Shi Yan.

For the time being, no one noticed Shi Yan, who was sitting neatly in the spacious Hall of Demogorgon. He became the idlest person at the moment.

Shi Yan wasn't angry, as he could see the demons' attitude towards him had changed. It was enough as they didn't scream and want to kill him.

In the Hall of Demogorgon, Shi Yan put on an indifferent countenance and took a walk around the place. He observed the patterns and drawings on the pillars and on the walls, as he wanted to see if he could understand the mysteries of those drawings.

This was a rare experience.

To normal people, although their relationship with the Demon Clan wasn't bad, they weren't allowed to enter the Hall of Demogorgon. Since this place was the place where they receive the

inheritance, they would never let any outsider trespass the hall.

As he could visit the Hall of Demogorgon today, it was his great honor. Each corner of the Demogorgon Hall was filled with mysteries. Many young people of the Demon Clan could comprehend something while watching the patterns and drawings in this place.

The Hall of Demogorgon in the Second Demon Area had been established a long time ago. Tens of thousands of years ago, when the Demon Clan exploited this area, the first thing they had done was to build the Hall of Demogorgon.

The Hall of Demogorgon was the foundation of the Demon Clan. Wherever many members of the Demon Clan gathered, there existed the Hall of Demogorgon. If the Hall was demolished, it meant that the Demon Clan in that space had been eradicated.

As the Hall of Demogorgon had been built dozens of thousands of years ago, the beasts drawings and the demon scriptures were carved by the experts in that era. Sometimes, they would glow with a strange light, carrying some kind of marvelous intent domain. If it were a wise demon, he could gain the great benefit after comprehending it

Shi Yan just walked back and forth. He took turns after turns to observe many demon scriptures and drawings.

Slowly, he reached a wall with many magical patterns. Those lines sketched a rough image of a giant demon facing the sky and howling. Behind him was a massive dark sun, which could swallow all beams of light.

Shi Yan was startled. He vaguely had a familiar feeling that he had seen this giant demon before.

War Devil! That was the War Devil!

The demon on that drawing looked seventy percent similar to the War Devil. If the War Devil was zoomed several times and its eyes



showed the endless darkness, the War Devil would look exactly like the demon in this drawing.

This finding startled him. He felt inexplicably scared and surprised.

War Devil was a dark clone of Lao Luo, one of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. However, Lao Luo was the worst among the Eight. Why did he have his image carved here?

According to Bo Ruo, this Hall of Demogorgon had been built by the experts of the Demon Clan dozens of thousands of years ago. So, Lao Luo's image had been here from that time. In other words, how old was the era when Lao Luo lived?

Members of the Demon Clan who could have their images carved on the wall of the Hall were all earth-shaking experts. Their images represented the glory and power they had. This meant Lao Luo should have been very intimidating.

Shi Yan didn't change his face, studying the drawings of Lao Luo for a while. Suddenly, he coughed.

Bo Ruo was staying in with a young girl of the Demon Clan not far from him. Hearing his cough, she frowned. A streak of impatience flashed on her face.

If she didn't have the features of the Horned Dragon Tribe on her head, she wouldn't be different from a beautiful, wheat-skinned human girl. With a pair of phoenix eyes and a picturesque appearance, she was an outstanding beauty

The woman came, glaring at Shi Yan and then at the drawing of Lao Luo. "What's up?"

"Who is the demon in this drawing?" Shi Yan pretended to know nothing. "Why is there a black sun behind him? He looks strange. I'm curious if he were a strong expert of the Demon Clan in the Antiquity?"

"I don't know who he is, but I know he must be one of the

strongest hotshots of the Demon Clan in the Antiquity. That's how he got his picture here." Bo Ruo furrowed her eyebrows and then continued. "Only the members that made a great contribution to the clan with their mighty power could get the approval from the Hall of Demogorgon and become a drawing of the Hall."

"How about the seven statues of Demogorgon?" Shi Yan was astounded. He couldn't help but look over his shoulder

"The Demogorgon statues are the foundation of the Demon Clan's inheritance. Each statue is one of the Demogorgon in Antiquity time," said Bo Ruo.

"What's the difference between the drawings on the wall and the statues? Could the one who get the picture here become a Demogorgon?" asked Shi Yan.

"You have so many questions," Bo Ruo was a little bit impatient. She contemplated for a while but still explained to him. "Clansmen who have surpassed the King God Realm could become the Demogorgon. After dozens of thousands of years, our entire Demon Clan has had only seven Demogorgons. They are the seven statues that you've seen here."

Surpassed the King God Realm!

Shi Yan discolored. He looked at the seven Demogorgon statues, as a feeling of respect rose in his heart.

This was the first time he had heard about someone who had surpassed the King God Realm. Today, he had known that the King God Realm wasn't the ultimate of the martial path. Beyond the King God Realm, it was another world.

"So where are the seven Demogorgons?" asked Shi Yan.

"They might have left." Bo Ruo wasn't so certain. "Perhaps they are dead. We need to get into the First Demon Area to know the answer."

"Why?"

"The seven Demogorgon statues just contain the power Upanishad. They can't interact." Bo Ruo hesitated for a while and then continued. "According to master Bo Ruo and Jie Ji, the seven Demogorgon statues in the First Demon Area can interact with the others. As long as they aren't dead, the seven Demogorgons could still send the power Upanishad and their comprehensions of the martial path they have had in the universe to the statues, which will benefit our future generations."

Shi Yan was astounded.

They still could receive the power Upanishad from the seven Demogorgons in the foreign lands. If it were true, once Bao Ao and Jie Ji entered the First Demon Area and received the inheritance from the statues, their realm and power should skyrocket, right?

"You are also a member of the Demon Clan. If you can receive the inheritance from this area, of course, you can receive the inheritance in the First Demon Area. If we can open the First Demon Area and find the top-grade seven Demogorgon statues, you will gain bigger benefits." Bo Ruo looked at Shi Yan nonchalantly.

"Why did they leave?" Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then asked.

"Heaven and earth energy in this continent isn't enough for them to level up anymore," Bo Ruo sighed, "The energy of this continent is really scarce at this moment. It's been ten thousand years, and we haven't seen any King God Realm warriors yet. It's because of the change of the energy. I heard our masters say that each continent has its own cycle of energy. At first, its energy is full. After creatures start to appear and absorb the energy, gradually, after dozens of thousands of years, the energy of the continent will be drained up. At some point in time, it will be over."

Shi Yan was surprised.

"This continent seems to be reaching the end of its energy cycle.

Perhaps, the energy of this place would empty out after another one thousand years." Bo Ruo shook her head begrudgingly. "We don't have much time left. If we can't enter the True God Realm sooner, we will have no way to escape. Later on, we will be dead because of running out of energy."

Shi Yan felt like a hammer had just pounded on his heart. Shi Yan was now totally awakened, having a new cognition of heaven and earth. And, he also had a deeper understanding of this continent.

# Chapter 695: Undying Demon Tribe

---

Shi Yan kept quiet, but he had thousands of thoughts in his head.

He would never have known about the existence that surpassed the King God Realm if Bo Ruo didn't tell him. Also, now he knew that each continent had its own energy cycle, and the Grace Mainland was at the end of its cycle. Soon, this place would run out of energy.

He knew Bo Ruo couldn't deceive him.

From many old books, he had found that there were invincible existences in Immemorial Epoch, and each of them seemed to have endless powers.

In that era, the seven Demogorgons that had surpassed the King God Realm had left the continent to the outer space.

Those were enough to prove how thick the heaven and earth energy was in those two eras. Also, they had had so many rare and precious natural products, which helped them reach that level.

Currently, this continent was worn out by strong creatures in the Immemorial Epoch, and the experts of the Antiquity. At present times, it was hard to reach the high realm.

Time was running out!

If the Grace Mainland didn't have the natural energy anymore one day, warriors would have nothing to support their cultivation, which would hold them from reaching the higher realms.

Without heaven and earth energy, spiritual herbs couldn't grow. Without heaven and earth energy, there would be no Essence Qi crystallization. Shi Yan felt terrible thinking about these things.

Heaven and earth energy was the root of all strong clans. The day this energy was drained was the doomsday of all races.

When Bao Ao and Jie Ji opened the First Demon Area, it would

increase the usage speed of heaven and earth energy. Losing one-third of the current amount, this energy on the Grace Mainland would be used up rapidly. No wonder why the other clans didn't stay idle. Even if it were Shi Yan, he would have to consider if he wanted to support Bao Ao and Jie Ji or not.

Sizzle Sizzle Sizzle!

Strange noises came from a wall of the Hall of Demogorgon, as if someone was setting a fire behind it.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si jolted, walking to that corner with surprised and happy faces.

The Hall of Demogorgon cracked open a slit. Bao Ao and Jie Ji walked through, bringing with them several thousands of warriors of the Demon Clan and their mounts.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji looked a little bit distressed. They had blood on their bodies. They seemed to be exhausted with different level of damage. Their auras were also weaker than usual.

"Masters," Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si knelt down on one knee, shouting in a low tone.

Bao Ao waved his hand to lift them up. Suddenly, his eyes got brighter as he saw Shi Yan. He nodded to the young man. "Kid, you're here."

He looked tired, but he still walked directly towards Shi Yan, and didn't notice that Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si hadn't stood up yet. His deep eyes gazed on Shi Yan, his face astounded.

The foul-mouthed Jie Ji seemed to have worse wounds than Bao Ao. He looked as if he had sunk in blood. Just like a beast, he screamed and roared, wanting to find the Ghost Mark Clan and solve the grudge. While he was talking boisterously, he walked towards Shi Yan. At first glance, he cried, "Ah, you got the demon soul sacrificial altar?"

"Nonsense!" Bao Ao cursed him. "This kid has the noblest blood

of our Demon Clan. Isn't it natural that he got the inheritance from this Hall?"

Pausing for a while, Bao Ao continued with an odd expression. "But, I don't know why you have three sections beneath your God Soul. Besides the demon altar, what are the other two? Strange... It's extraordinary! I can't understand this at all."

Shi Yan was startled inside as Bao Ao could see the mysteries beneath his God Soul with just one glance. Wasn't he a demon who wasn't good at soul knowledge?

"How about you guys? The other clans hadn't hurt you badly, had they?" Shi Yan smiled.

"Don't talk about it. F\*ck the patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan. That a\*shole's revived. He has a cultivation base of King God Realm. If his power had been recovered fully, we would have had no chance to return here. So annoying... They're so annoying! If I had known it earlier, I would have killed the Ghost Mark Clan first," Jie Ji thundered. "And that b\*stard of the Dark Clan could control tens of thousands of Yin spirits and hollow souls. He's also morbid. It's lucky that we're strong. Otherwise, we wouldn't have been able to meet you again."

"Okay, stop babbling. It's good that we could come back here. We shouldn't waste time," Bao Ao intervened. He looked at Shi Yan with a solemn countenance. "Are you ready?"

"Ready for what?"

"Opening the First Demon Area, of course."

Shi Yan's face became serious. "I heard Bo Ruo said that it needs one-third of the Grace Mainland's heaven and earth energy to open the First Demon Area. Is it true?"

"Isn't it rubbish?" Jie Ji intervened, "If not, why the four clans would chase us crazily?"

"It speeds up the rate of destruction the entire Grace Mainland,"

Shi Yan contemplated. "If the heaven and earth energy is running out, not to mention the four clans and the Human Clan, the Demon Clan will also find it hard to level up. Aren't you a little hare-brained doing that? Do you worry for the next generations?"

Actually, Shi Yan was worried about his people in the Utmost Eight Purgatories City, Yang Tian Emperor, Shi Jian, his elders, and the others whom he respected a lot.

If the Grace Mainland didn't have heaven and earth energy anymore, they wouldn't be able to break through further, and their martial path would have been severed.

"Shi Yan, I have a question for you," Bao Ao didn't change his visage, frowning. "Even if we don't do anything, energy on the Grace Mainland will run out one day, right?"

Shi Yan nodded. "Yes, it will. But it's a long time later."

Bao Ao beamed a forced smile. "That little time doesn't work. Once the heaven and earth energy is emptied out, as the martial art practitioners, we will face a lot of disasters. If it has to be that way, we'd better open the First Demon Area and find the seven great Demogorgon statues. Then, we'll see if we can find any solution. At least, Jie Ji and I can take the chance and break through to the King God Realm. At that time, we are eligible to leave this place. We will be responsible for the Demon Clan to find another foreign land, which is suitable for our clan to live and cultivate. Then, we will help Human Clan to leave too."

Shi Yan was musing.

Bao Ao's words were reasonable. Anyhow, the Grace Mainland was about to reach the end of its energy cycle. If they opened the First Demon Area, they would just accelerate it by one-third.

But if it were like what they said, the Demogorgon statues in the First Demon Area could store some good methods or techniques. At least, Bao Ao and Jie Ji could have a chance to receive the high-



quality inheritance and break through the King God Realm. At that time, they could escape this continent and find a better place for the Demon Clan.

All members of the Demon Clan inside the Hall of Demogorgon kept silent, looking at Shi Yan.

They all knew that Shi Yan was the key factor for opening the First Demon Area. If he didn't want to cooperate with them, their hope would be extinguished.

Most of the members of the Demon Clan had a clear understanding of the Grace Mainland's situation. They knew that this place would be drained soon. By the time they got out of the Second Demon Area, they planned to kill the other clans to reduce the consumption of heaven and earth energy in this continent.

Heaven and earth energy was used by strong experts to whet their martial path and perform attacks or defenses. No matter it was to restore the Essence Qi or breaking through new realms, it was closely related to using the heaven and earth energy.

In their eyes, if the other clans were all extinguished, leaving only the Demon Clan, the consumption rate would be slowed down, and they could have more time to prepare.

Of course, Bao Ao and Jie Ji had never given up on opening the First Demon Area. They had asked the Ghost Mark Clan to make the sacrificial altar to connect to the Antiquity Demogorgon to find this key.

But, it was too bad that they failed.

When they found Shi Yan, they saw hope in him. Then, they made up their minds. No matter what, they had to protect Shi Yan to open the First Demon Area later.

"Are you sure I can help you open it?" Shi Yan pondered for a while and then gazed at the other two.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji nodded.

"It would be impossible without me?"

The other two nodded again with solemn faces, not seeming to be joking.

Shi Yan smiled and then nodded. "Then you have to agree on one thing."

"Say it!" The two shouted hurriedly.

"If you guys can figure out the solution, my people should be benefited from it too." Shi Yan spoke slowly.

Shi Yan had considered it clearly. At this point of time, whether Bao Ao or Jie Ji wanted to carry out their plan or not, this continent would be emptied out soon.

If it had to be that way, it'd be better to work with Bao Ao and Jie Ji to find a new chance to survive.

There were intimidating existences in the Antiquity and the Immemorial Epoch in the foreign lands. Would it be better for them if they could meet those existences?

If it didn't work here, should they go to another place and find a continent where the energy was still rich and abundant? Everything would be solved, right?

As long as he could take his people, Shi Yan thought that cooperating with Bao Ao and Jie Ji wasn't a bad decision.

"They are your family members. It's no problem if you want to take them," Bao Ao made a quick decision and agreed immediately. "Moreover, you don't have many people, so, it's alright."

Jie Ji nodded continually.

Shi Yan smiled relaxedly. "Okay, I agree to help you open the First Demon Area." He paused for a while and then asked, "What should I do?"

"Use the blood you extracted last time. The Immortal Demon Blood!" Bao Ao let out a low shout.

"Immortal Demon Blood?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Yes, the Immortal Demon Blood, the blood of the Undying Demon Tribe! The Undying Demon Tribe is the tribe that had the strongest fighting competence among the other tribes of the Demon Clan in ancient times. It's the only tribe that could fight face to face with the same realm God Clan members. And, the God Clan is considered the perfect race. In the Antiquity, a Spirit Realm God Clan warrior could kill three warriors at the same level from the other clans except for your clan. And, only the members of the Undying Demon Tribe could fight the God Clan's members one-on-one without falling into the disadvantaged situation."

Shi Yan was struck.

Bao Ao pointed behind him. "See? The seven Demogorgon statues are all the experts of our Demon Clan who had surpassed the King God Realm during tens of thousands of years. Our Demon Clan has many branches. As far as I've known, the Demon Clan had more than dozens of branches in the Antiquity Time. Your Undying Demon Tribe is just one of them. However, there're three out of seven experts who had surpassed the King God Realm, and were from the Undying Demon Tribe!"

Shi Yan couldn't help but get frightened. Bao Ao's words had struck him vehemently.

"You have the Immortal Demon Blood. It's the Demogorgon's blood! It's the same blood that those three experts had. And, the Demogorgon's blood is the key to open the First Demon Area. Only the Demon Clan's branches that have the Demogorgon could possibly have the Demogorgon's blood, which is the blessing of our ancestors!" said Bao Ao with a respectful face.

# Chapter 696: Open

---

The seven statues were the replicas of the seven Demogorgon during tens of thousands of years of the Demon Clan. Each Demogorgon was an existence that surpassed the King God Realm.

Direct descendants of the seven Antiquity Demogorgons would probably have the Demogorgon's blood, with many different marvelous effects. Usually, it had a massive energy, with the mysteries of the martial path.

The Immortal Demon Blood was one of the Demogorgon's blood kind, which could heal the body and predict friends or relatives' activities.

Shi Yan had never known that the Immortal Blood in his body was the blood of the Demogorgon of the Demon Clan. He finally got the information from Bao Ao.

"What happened to the Undying Demon Tribe? Why did you assume that they were exterminated?" Shi Yan pondered for a while and then asked.

"The Undying Demon Tribe was combative innately. They were the true fighters. However, this tribe didn't have a large population. It was usually like that. During fighting in the Antiquity, they were always the pioneers to expel the God Clan, while the other clans followed behind them. In battles with the God Clan, if the Undying Demon Tribe's members weren't the vanguard, the other clans could never have endured. Eventually, the God Clan left, leaving the Undying Demon Tribe with severe losses. That battle had cost them four-fifth of the population."

Bao Ao continued his explanation. "Not long after the God Clan left, the Nine Clans Great War happened. As the Undying Demon Tribe had the strongest fighting competence in the Demon Clan, they continued to shoulder the most important missions of the clan. In that war, they had almost no members remaining. In the

end, when Human Clan rose, the Undying Demon Tribe disappeared. Otherwise, Human Clan would never have a chance to rule the continent," Bao Ao growled.

"Where had the seven Antiquity Demogorgons gone?"

"Some of them had left before the war with the God Clan, and some left after that to the foreign land, since the heaven and earth energy in the Grace Mainland wasn't enough for warriors at their levels to continue their cultivation. Whenever we gain a Demogorgon, the other clans have to be afraid of us the most," replied Bao Ao.

Shi Yan frowned, pointing at the drawing of Lao Luo. "Do you know him?"

"He was a precursor of our Demon Clan. According to the description from the Demogorgon statues, he was called Lao Luo. In the Antiquity and after the war with the God Clan, he was one of the most prominent warriors of our clan. He had reached the King God Realm at an amazing speed. Later, he didn't wait for too long. Or perhaps it had happened in that time when heaven and earth energy wasn't enough to help the King God Realm warriors in breaking through the next realm. He didn't continue to break through here to become the eighth Demogorgon. He left early. This precursor called Lao Luo was a miracle of our clan during that period. He had comprehended the power of Darkness. He didn't have many rivals for his whole life."

Shi Yan was struck as he could confirm the demon on that drawing was Lao Luo.

From the Blood Vein Ring, he got a streak which said that Lao Luo was one of the Eight Cortege of Bloodthirsty, and he was the weakest. He must be the entourage of the Blood Vein Ring's previous owner.

"Have you ever heard about anybody that Lao Luo had submitted to?" Shi Yan suddenly asked. He was quite tense, as he thought

that he was about to get the answer for the mysterious profile of the Blood Vein Ring.

For the previous owner of this ring, the ring that had given him so many miracles, he had sincere respect.

It was because even if he had reached the True God Realm, he hadn't gotten the approval from the ring spirit. This spirit didn't even care about him, as it thought his power was too weak to be worth being the ring's new master.

"What kind of joke is that?" Jie Ji intervened, shaking his head continually. "In that period, Lao Luo was invincible. There was no hotshot of any clan who dared to provoke him. How could he be someone's entourage? By the time he left the Grace Mainland, he was the most intimidating existence of that time. I can't think of anyone who could subdue him."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

He had a new conclusion: The Blood Vein Ring didn't belong in the Grace Mainland.

Lao Luo was apparently one of the Eight Cortege of Bloodthirsty. If he were so strong at that time as one of the most mighty existences of the Grace Mainland, there would be no one eligible to subdue him and make him call that one master.

Then only one possibility was left. It had happened after Lao Luo had left the Grace Mainland. Someone in the endless starry sea of the universe had subdued him. And this person was the previous master of the Blood Vein Ring.

From this point, the Blood Vein Ring apparently didn't belong to the Grace Mainland.

As this train of thought crossed Shi Yan's head, he had a better understanding of the universe. Now he knew that the universe had existences that went beyond his imagination.

"If we're prepared, we should do it now. I've been waiting for this

moment for such a long, long time." Bao Ao rubbed his hands, talking excitedly.

Shi Yan nodded, pressing down the thoughts of the Blood Vein Ring and Lao Luo. He smiled faintly. "How to open it?"

Bao Ao didn't answer him. Instead, he walked with Jie Ji towards the pond in the center of the Hall of Demogorgon. When their reflections appeared in the pond, the black burning flame flew and got into the seven Demogorgon statues.

The sight at the lake bottom revealed little by little. It was an enormous demon drawing, which was inexplicable to the acme, containing endless mysteries. The seven Demogorgon statues had become seven nodes of that mysterious drawing, as if they were some kind of a formation eye.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji stood right at the center of the seven Demogorgon statues. Under their feet was a magic formation sketched by demonic patterns. Demon energy was seething, releasing the aura that could distort people's souls.

Shi Yan was stunned looking at it.

"Come here," Bao Ao waved at him, signaling him to come. He laughed contentedly. "The entrance's here. However, once it opens, this place will be ruined. The Hall of Demogorgon won't exist anymore. The seven Demogorgon statues will go with us. Anyway, it's not important. As long as we can find the top-grade Demogorgon statues in the First Demon Area, we will get a better inheritance. At that time, we can escape this place."

"We don't need to prepare anything?" Shi Yan asked with uncertainty.

"Don't worry. We've prepared everything before you came here," Bao Ao smiled. "We just need only one thing, your Demogorgon Blood. With the Demogorgon Blood as the key, we can activate the other things we've prepared."

"Hurry up. Don't delay here. We've been waiting for you for almost one year." Jie Ji was hurried. "You brat, you told us it would take only half a month. Turns out you wasted one year. If we weren't so bored, we wouldn't play with the Ghost Mark Clan, leading to their rebellion."

As they had been waiting for Shi Yan in boredom, they came to the Ghost Mark Clan to see if they could use their secret technique to contact the Demogorgon statues in the First Demon Area.

However, when they arrived at the Shady Firmament Old Mound, they found something abnormal. Not only Cassidy was resurrected, but many clansmen of the Ghost Mark Clan had also become stronger.

Members of the Ghost Mark Clan had used the Yin Written Charm Scripture to convert heaven and earth energy into Mysterious Yin Qi to supply to the shriveled clansmen, making them vigorous again.

The heaven and earth energy was a limited source. The two leaders of the Demon Clan were afraid that if they let the Ghost Mark Clan convert natural energy massively like that, they wouldn't have enough energy to open the First Demon Area. So, they attacked the Ghost Mark Clan immediately to erase this threat.

In the next moment, an immense will spread out from the Yin Written Charm Scripture. At that moment, they realized the scripture had changed and revived the patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan. Although his power had been recovered just a little, they had to struggle hard.

That fight ended with Bao Ao and Jie Ji's defeat. They returned immediately. Not long after that, the four clans had joined hands and started to attack them.

As the patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan knew it would take a lot of energy to open the First Demon Area, he had led the other three



clans to attack the Demon Clan. They all knew what they should do to prevent the Demon Clan and save time for their clans.

If Shi Yan had broken through the True God Realm in half a month, the Demon Clan wouldn't have suffered such a significant loss. That was why Jie Ji got mad at him.

Shi Yan rubbed his nose as he felt a little bit embarrassed. As Jie Ji urged him, he didn't delay and walked to them.

Under his feet were the extremely complicated demonic patterns. They looked like an unceasing, exquisite sketch drawn by the Almighty.

Although Shi Yan had knowledge of formations, even after scrutinizing the formation for a while, he couldn't understand any of its subtle features. The magic characteristics of this place had surpassed his knowledge.

"Where should I drop the blood? And, how many drops does it require?" Shi Yan put on a bitter face. "I've just condensed the altar, which consumed a lot of my Immortal Demon Soul. You've given me a high price."

"Three drops is enough," Bao Ao glared at him and chuckled. "Of course, we know the Immortal Demon Blood's precious. We won't trap you. Ah, yeah, I forgot to tell you that if you can complete replacing your blood, you can increase your body's competence tremendously. At the same time, you can receive the ancient power of the Demogorgon's Seal. And, besides this stuff, you can restore the real body of the Undying Demon Tribe, the immortal body."

Shi Yan was struck, feeling dizzy. "Replace blood? How?"

"You have the Immortal Demon Blood in your body, which carries the infinite, refined energy. Use it to replace your own blood. Only the clansmen with the Demogorgon blood can do that. You're that sort of clansmen, you lucky b\*stard," Bao Ao smilingly said.

Shi Yan got stirred up, but then he went begrudgingly.

Was it a piece of cake to condense the Immortal Demon Blood?

Each drop was extremely precious. Although he had the mysterious martial spirit to condense it, he had created just a little number of drops until now. Building the soul sacrificial altar had taken half of the drops he had. At this moment, he had to spend three more, leaving only ten drops stored in his body then.

Using the Immortal Demon Blood to replace all the blood running in his vessels was a construction that would be many times tougher than building the Utmost Eight Purgatories City. He felt his scalp tingling thinking about it.

However, the benefit he could have was quite desirable. Shi Yan couldn't help but dream about it. 'Maybe if I can kill enough for the mysterious martial spirit to refine the energy, I can do that, right?' Shi Yan thought.

# Chapter 697: Desolate deathly stillness

---

Three drops of Immortal Demon Blood fell from Shi Yan's fingertip, onto the subtle demon drawings underneath his feet.

A dazzling red halo expanded from the patterns under their feet. That massive formation sparkled while flows of black flame which were as viscous as a flaming liquid, pouring on the demon patterns.

At that moment, the patterns were filled with energy, which activated some mysterious formations.

The strange formation arrayed with demon patterns and drawings seemed to become the giant, gloomy mouth of a beast, releasing a powerful suction force. Shortly, all the Demon Qi in the Hall of Demogorgon was drawn. The suction force from the patterns raked through the place, covering everywhere.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The massive pillars in the hall trembled, as a giant passage that was drawing energy appeared above their heads.

An immense, torrential energy wave shot out from the energy passage towards the Grace Mainland. Just like a powerful pump, it started to suck the heaven and earth energy of the Grace Mainland.

Instantaneously, all the experts in the Grace Mainland could sense the change of heaven and earth energy. They discolored in fright, as fear rose in their hearts.

Leaders of the other four clans in the other corners of the Second Demon Area soared up to the sky, flying towards an abyss in the horizon where a massive energy passage had just appeared, their faces grimaced.

They understood that the operation to open the First Demon Area of the Demon Clan had begun.

No one hesitated. Leaders and their hotshots of the four clans dashed towards the general direction of the Demogorgon Hall. They had to stop the others at any cost.

Shi Yan looked at the lively patterns under his feet, which were like a surging sea. It was seething while the patterns were like sponges taking in energy.

"It has started!"

Bao Ao was stirred up. He kneeled down above the patterns, looking at the seven Demogorgon statues respectfully while humming in Demon language.

The seven Demogorgon statues diffused turbulent waves of energy with the abundant heaven and earth energy. When that energy reached the acme, a faint light dot appeared under their feet.

The faint light enlarged gradually, until a glorious five-colored light passage emerged. A colorful light was moving dazzlingly in the passage, that hindered people from seeing what was happening inside.

The seven Demogorgon statues trembled, falling precisely into that light passage before the Hall of Demogorgon collapsed. They disappeared instantly.

"Quick!" Jie Ji shouted, "All clansmen line up and get in orderly. Do not panic!"

Hearing his shout, members of the Demon Clan urged their beasts, disappearing into the light passage one by one.

"We should move!" Bao Ao glared at Shi Yan, shouting amidst the mess of falling rocks. "The Hall will be destroyed soon. Then it will blast. It should also be the time the four tribes get here. We have to get in before the explosion happens. Or else, we'll get hurt badly."

Shi Yan wasn't familiar with this place. Of course, he would follow the other's words. He ran after Jie Ji, entering the light

passage.

Members of the Demon Clan rode their beasts and retreated from this place under Bao Ao's direction.

Bao Ao suddenly paled, shouting in fear. "Hurry up! Move quickly!"

He could feel the formidable energy fluctuation of living beings outside the Hall of Demogorgon. This meant the experts of the four clans had arrived.

At this moment, massive pillars that supported the Hall of Demogorgon collapsed. Pieces of rock scattered everywhere. Many big chunks of rock, that were as big as a windmill, brought with them a massive energy of impact. If they hit someone, they would smash him or her into a pulp of meat.

Although the Demon Clan's members all had sturdy bodies, they would still not be able to endure such damage. Hence, Bao Ao was worried a lot.

Under his shouts and screams, clansmen of the Demon Clan took their beasts and stormed into the passage.

When the last demon and his beast disappeared, Bao Ao shouted and turned into a black beam, disappearing into that light passage.

In that fraction of time, the Hall of Demogorgon blasted. Pieces of rock scattered everywhere. Demon Qi condensed and exploded, generating tremendous tremors.

Corpse Chief, Kante, the Yin Written Charm Scripture, and a distorted dim halo appeared above the energy passage in the Hall of Demogorgon. No one stood behind them, or no one could catch up with their speed, to be exact.

Two people and the two magical objects felt the blast under their feet right when they appeared above the Demogorgon Hall.

The four were a little bit hesitant. They didn't care about the

strong explosion, plunging into the ruins of the Hall.

As the two pagans, a scripture, and a dim halo descended on the Demogorgon Hall, they seemed to trigger some furious barrier. The explosion under their feet became fiercer, and the shockwaves dizzied these people.

Kante and Corpse Chief got hurt differently from that blast. They had to consume a big part of the energy to maintain their immortal bodies.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture seemed to be affected by the explosion, as it was bouncing and trembling disorderly.

However, the dim halo wasn't affected. It plunged through the ruined hall, flying towards the light passage

As Kante and Corpse Chief saw the dim halo descending, they immediately followed it with their best speed.

The Yin Written Charm Scripture trembled, swaying in the air to avoid the furious explosion center. It was the last one descending. As it recognized the formation was open completely, it had no method to stop it anymore. The scripture had no choice but to follow Kante's team to get into the light passage.

Rumble rumble rumble!

Not long after the four entered the passage, the Hall of Demogorgon collapsed completely. Big blocks of rock covered the place, leaving only a slit from where heaven and earth energy was seeping through to the passage.

Comoros and the three Yama Kings arrived later. Seeing the ruins of the Hall of Demogorgon under the thousand-meters-tall pile of debris, they didn't know how to get into the place.

"How about you guys? You know how to get into the earth well. Shouldn't you be able to dig a passage?" Comoros looked at Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea with hope. "As long as you can make a passage, we can all get there."

Corpse Mount and Corpse Sea tried for a while and then shook their heads. Corpse Mount then said, "The Five Elements are disordered now. We can't get in. If we want to go there, we have to remove the ten thousand meters of rock."

After he said that, the others turned grim, but they couldn't utter a word.

"We should wait and see," Hei Tian contemplated for a while then continued. "Our leaders got there earlier. I think if anything happens, they can solve it. And if our leaders can't solve the matter, even if we get there, we still won't be able to do anything."

Hearing him, the others could only nod begrudgingly. They stopped all operations, waiting in silence above the Hall of Demogorgon.

...

The gloomy sky hung above the dark ground. Deathly, desolate, deep chasms scattered here and there. It was the world Shi Yan saw at first glance.

There was neither Demon Qi nor any heaven and earth energy in this place. This world only had a rough, uneven ground, with scattered dried bones everywhere. Those bones belonged to the members of the Demon Clan and giant beasts.

Shi Yan could see so many dried bones in this world, which seemed about to be gone with the wind at any minute.

Shi Yan, Bao Ao, Jie Ji, and the hotshots of the Demon Clan were all stunned on seeing the background of the First Demon Area. They were petrified, not knowing what to say.

Looking at the horizon, they could see some mountain ranges jutted up to the sky, hiding in the dark, while the endless darkness occupied the further areas.

There was no life.

This place was even more desolate and barren than the Second Demon Area. It wasn't as beautiful as they had imagined. And, they couldn't see the Demogorgon statues.

The seven Demogorgon statues from the Second Demon Area were placed in front of them in the order they had been in the Hall of Demogorgon. It seemed their functions hadn't been changed, and the Demon Clan's inheritance was still there.

"It... Is it the holy land you've yearned for? The First Demon Area?" Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then asked Bao Ao gingerly. "We've spent one-third of the Grace Mainland's heaven and earth energy to open the First Demon Area for this?"

Bao Ao was startled, but he couldn't answer.

People would always imagine the best things. Bao Ao and Jie Ji were the members of the younger generation of Demon Clan, who had never experienced the Antiquity War. So, the things they knew about the First Demon Area had stopped at ten thousand years ago.

Dozens of thousands of years ago, the First Demon Area had been filled with Demon Qi. It had so many hotshots of the Demon Clan and the top Demogorgon statues, where they could receive the strongest inheritance. They had the ancient experts to teach them the power Upanishad and give them the treasures of the Demon Clan...

Those memories were their assumptions and the motivation that had urged them to open the First Demon Area.

Today, this place was barren and desolate. Looking at the dried bones on the ground and the scarce energy, all members of the Demon Clan gawked, as they felt they were deceived.

"We haven't explored the place yet. This place should have something we haven't known! I'm sure!" Bao Ao seemed to try to persuade himself to not believe in what they had seen here. He



shouted, "Follow me. We should check this place out!"

Many clansmen of the Demon Clan felt dispirited. They stooped as despair filled their hearts, riding their beasts and following their masters.

Jie Ji wasn't foul-mouthed anymore, as he knew that if he showed his dispirited mood at this moment, it would affect all of his men. He talked to his people in a calm and relaxed voice, saying that it wasn't as bad as it seemed.

Shi Yan kept silent the whole time. He knew talking was no use in this case. At least, they had to know why the First Demon Area had turned into this current appearance.

Once they reached the thing that looked like the big mountain, everybody screamed in fright.

# Chapter 698: Hope of dawn in the middle of the ruins

---

It was not a mountain range! They were the ruins of seven collapsed Demogorgon statues!

Each statue was as imposing as a high mountain. Although they had collapsed, they were almost one thousand meters tall.

Situated between the Demogorgon statues was a group of temples. Those temples were ruined and desolate, no longer having the ambiance they used to have. Skeletons of demons and beasts scattered here and there in the temples.

As Shi Yan, Bao Ao, and Jie Ji reached this place, they were silent while looking at the ruins, as if they didn't know what to say to feel better in this situation.

There was no beam of energy surging on the massive seven Demogorgon statues. There was nothing mysterious now. Apparently, these statues no longer functioned.

According to Bao Ao, the top seven Demogorgon statues in this place could absorb the power Upanishad and the knowledge of the seven Antiquity Demogorgons from the foreign land, which was a miracle.

Bao Ao's group was persistent to come here with the hope that they could receive the guidance of the Antiquity Demogorgons, or they could receive their inheritance at least.

With this inheritance, they could break through to the King God Realm, which could help them find the way to escape, perhaps.

It was too bad that the seven Demogorgon statues had all been damaged. They lied in the ruins of the temples without any waves of energy around them.

Bao Ao kept quiet for a long time and then asked his men. "Get in

the temples. Check everything there. If you find anything abnormal, report it to me immediately."

Jie Ji gave his men the same order.

For the time being, members of the Demon Clan rode their beasts, jumping into the temples and starting their quest with anxiety.

Everyone was worried and suspicious, but no one dared to utter a word.

They didn't dare, but Shi Yan did.

After hesitating for a while, he frowned and then spoke up, "This place...seems to have had a purge."

Bao Ao and Jie Ji discolored abruptly. Light shot out from his eyes while fear rose in their hearts.

How could they not notice that?

Dried bones were scattered everywhere in the vast First Demon Area. There was no life to be found. And, those were bones of the Demon Clan's members and their beasts, not of any other clans.

If a war had happened here, this place should have had bones of other clans as well.

That's why Shi Yan said 'purge,' which also implied that the ones who carried the operation had the ability to clean all the Demon Clan's clansmen and beasts in the First Demon Area. Moreover, they had retreated intact with triumph.

This conclusion had struck Bao Ao and Jie Ji severely, dragging their hearts into a deep abyss.

They didn't want to believe it was true.

Whatever era it was, the Demon Clan was always strong. Although they had had to hide in the Demon Areas during the rise of Human Clan that year, they had never received such a significant loss.

They couldn't imagine who had such supernatural powers to carry out a purge on the First Demon Area, their holy land. It seemed all the ancient hotshots of the clan were eradicated!

This related to the dignity of the Demon Clan. If it were true, it would be a terrible humiliation to their entire race, as it dirtied their glory from the past.

That was why Bao Ao and Jie Ji couldn't say anything. They didn't want to believe in what their eyes saw.

The two then released a powerful soul magnetic field, covering the entire temples to search for energy fluctuation of living beings or something abnormal.

Too bad, no matter how hard they tried, the result was the same. They didn't get anything.

Shortly, their men came back, shaking their heads in distress, indicating that they found nothing.

This group of large temples had no barriers or formations with a streak of energy left. This meant that they would never find what had happened here.

Each demon returned from a vain search was glum. They could see the truth, and a deep despair rose in their hearts.

Who? Who was so heartless to kill all members of the Demon Clan in the First Demon Area? No one remained. They had even destroyed the seven Demogorgon statues, cutting their path of further development.

All members had a big suspicion in their hearts, but they were helpless, unable to untie this knot.

"What should we do?" Shi Yan was worried, asking the other two. "If it's the result, I think we all have the answer. Perhaps we should leave this place and return to the Grace Mainland to continue cultivating. It's the right thing to do."

"It's tough," Bao Ao forced a smile, shaking his head. "Heaven and earth energy of the Grace Mainland is maybe enough to facilitate only one or two King God Realm warriors. Perhaps you don't know it yet. When a warrior is breaking through the King God Realm, he has to collect thick heaven and earth energy sufficiently. If the energy isn't enough, even if he has reached the realm, he will definitely fail. At this moment, the heaven and earth energy there has been consumed by one-third. To restore the patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan, it requires half of the remaining energy. We... we don't have many opportunities."

Shi Yan was struck.

Their situation was that alarming?

"I'm telling you, Xuan Ming, the lord of the Monster Clan in the Perpetual Night Forest could reach level 10 already. He's patient and not taking the heaven and earth energy to break through because he's worrying that once he does that, he will speed up the draining speed of the energy in the Grace Mainland. At that time, his Monster Clan will have to bear disasters. That monster has the God's domain already. He has almost comprehended the mysteries of the King God Realm. If he wants, he can break through easily," said Bao Ao, looking deep into Shi Yan's eyes.

Shi Yan's countenance became grimaced.

"Xuan Ming, the patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan, and that guy from the Dark Clan, they all need a tremendous amount of heaven and earth energy to support them. At this moment, energy in the Grace Mainland's only enough for one of the three. No matter who breaks through or recovers, we won't have even the soup to eat. Not to mention breaking through the King God Realm, I'm afraid we can't even continue cultivating."

Bao Ao shook his head and sighed. He felt begrudging and distressed at the same time. He didn't know which path they should take for now.

Shi Yan didn't say a word. He stood there emotionlessly as he was trying to squeeze his brain for a solution. He realized that no matter how hard he tried, this situation wouldn't be overturned.

Suddenly, he remembered the Blood Vein Ring.

From the information he got about Lao Luo, the Blood Vein Ring wasn't something that belonged to the Grace Mainland. Its previous owner had subdued Lao Luo, the one who used to be invincible in the Grace Mainland, in the foreign land. So, he must be an absolute existence in the universe.

Although Shi Yan didn't know why the Blood Vein Ring had fallen to this land, he could confirm that it would never want to see him die that way slowly.

Without the heaven and earth energy, it would be hard for him to advance. The amount of energy required to reach the King God Realm was intimidatingly formidable.

He pondered for a while and then sent his thought to the Blood Vein Ring, explaining his difficult situation and wishing for instructions.

The immense rainbow-like light overflowed from the Blood Vein Ring, as if the Ring Spirit was considering something. That colorful light extended from Shi Yan, covering the temples and the seven collapsed Demogorgon statues.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were startled, looking at him bewilderedly.

Shi Yan wasn't bothered. He gathered his mind, Essence Qi, and soul, waiting silently inside the Blood Vein Ring.

Swoosh!

A flow of sharp and enormous energy gushed out from the Blood Vein Ring. The remaining Immortal Demon Blood drops in Shi Yan's body instantly shot out from his body, lining up in front of him.

Drops of ruby Immortal Demon Blood revolved in the air, carrying the tremendous Blood Qi. Under the guidance of some power, they divided into seven parts, flying to the core of the seven Demogorgon statues.

At the same time, the negative energy stored in each of his acupuncture points was drawn out, turning into beams of gray energy that shot towards the seven Demogorgon statues. It seemed they were condensing the vessels for the seven Demogorgon statues. It was a miraculous scene.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

He could vaguely feel a gossamer-like aura from the seven Demogorgon statues.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji shivered in fright, their faces disbelieving, looking at Shi Yan with astonishment.

All members of the Demon Clan were stunned. They were gazing at Shi Yan as though they were watching ghosts. They all could see that the ring on his hand was transforming the seven Demogorgon statues.

Pfff!

Shi Yan spurted blood from his mouth. He turned pale immediately. This was the sign of significant blood loss. At the same time, his negative energy had been drawn completely.

Countless beams of negative energy had been sent to the seven Demogorgon statues. Suddenly, this supply was cut off. They could feel a feel energy fluctuation, as thin as the spider thread on the seven Demogorgon statues. Seven flows of weak energy shot out from the core of the seven Demogorgon statues, gathering at one spot. A small door was generated in the sky above the temples.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were dumbstruck, gawking at the seven Demogorgon statues.

They were astounded on seeing that the seven Demogorgon

statues seem to be healed due to the strange energy from Shi Yan. It seemed... if Shi Yan had enough energy, these statues could be restored wholly.

Unfortunately, Shi Yan's energy wasn't enough, so it couldn't reach such a level. However, they were still thrilled because of the small door above the temples, although they didn't know where it would take them.

Rainbow-like light on the Blood Vein Ring ceased and disappeared. The Ring Spirit seemed to be exhausted. It became quiet, as if it would take a relatively long time to restore.

However, it was enough for Shi Yan.

He knew that the Blood Vein Ring could receive his thought and had shown him the way to survive.

He didn't know where that door led to, but he knew that there was a solution behind that door. And, whether it was the solution for his matter or for all the clans in the Grace Mainland, only God knew.

"Bao Ao, as you dare to open the First Demon Area on your own, your clan will be destroyed!"

Right at this moment, a feeble but melodious voice came from the Yin Written Charm Scripture. The scripture swayed and showed itself.

A gloomy shadow also appeared behind it, followed by Kante and Corpse Chief. They stood at the four corners of the temples.



# Chapter 699: Meteorolite Sea

---

Kante of the Dark Devil Clan, Corpse Chief of the Corpse Clan, the patriarch of the Ghost Mark Clan, and the creature of the Dark Clan with the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame were the strongest four existences of the Grace Mainland. Right now, they all were present in this desolate area.

They had chased after the Demon Clan to this place despite the formidable explosion. Each of them had suffered different levels of damage. This time, they came here to ask the Demon Clan to pay a big price.

As Bao Ao and Jie Ji saw these four, they were astounded. They didn't expect that those people were so stubborn. They knew they had no chance to overturn the situation once the First Demon Area was opened, but they still got here, which was beyond the Demon Clan's estimation.

"Why do you need to do that?" Bao Ao frowned, but he seemed not worried at all. "Strong warriors of our Demon Clan are all here. Jie Ji and I can stop Kante and Corpse Chief. Zenith, you haven't restored your power yet. You can't recover the part you consumed. It's just a dream if you guys want to kill our Demon Clan. Don't make both sides bear damages. Nobody can gain anything in the end then."

Bao Ao's words weren't meant to threaten them.

Jie Ji's and Bao Ao's power was intimidating, which wasn't less than Kante's and Corpse Chief's. They could even gain the upper hand.

That creature of the Dark Clan hadn't had a body yet. It just depended on so many Yin spirits and wandering ghosts, so it wasn't enough to kill Bao Ao and Jie Ji.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were afraid of Zenith of the Ghost Mark Clan

the most. Anyway, Zenith hadn't had recovered fully yet. Facing many hotshots and beasts of the Demon Clan, he couldn't gain the upper hand.

As the heaven and earth energy on the Grace Mainland was about to run out, if Zenith continued to consume his energy, his recovery would be much more difficult. If he didn't have the competence of the King God Realm, using his body's power to escape this continent would result in his death.

Thus, if they wanted to fight until both sides got damaged severely, it wouldn't benefit anyone.

Kante and Corpse Chief quieted down. However, they were still hostile towards Bao Ao and Jie Ji. Their eyes didn't show the emotions that humans should have, only the cold murderous intention.

A faint laughter came from the Yin Written Charm Scripture. "Bao Ao, is it the holy land in your hearts which could solve the matters of your sorrows and your clan's future? This is just a desolate area without a beam of energy. The seven Demogorgon statues are all damaged. Do you really think that it's still your hope?"

Bao Ao pointed at the door the Blood Vein Ring had generated from Shi Yan's Immortal Demon Blood while smiling. "We still have hope."

Shi Yan stood there, hesitating as he was pondering if he wanted to get in there or not.

He didn't know where that door would lead them to, but it was the solution the Blood Vein Ring had given him. This exit was created by the energy of the seven Demogorgon statues stimulated by his Immortal Demon Blood. Shi Yan wasn't so sure whether it was an effective solution or not.

Kante and Corpse Chief looked at the door, their eyes brighter.

"Where does it lead to?" Zenith had seen the door from the Yin Written Charm Scripture. Hearing Bao Ao mention the door, he seized the chance and asked.

"Ghosts know," Bao Ao beamed a forced smile. "But I think it should be a solution. What do you think about getting in there and exploring instead of spending time quarreling here?"

Kante and Corpse Chief kept silent. That gloomy halo didn't say anything, either. Zenith also kept his mouth shut, as if he were considering Bao Ao's suggestion.

While standing in front of that door, Shi Yan had constantly checked the energy fluctuation from the seven Demogorgon statues. Gradually, he found that the magical beam of energy maintaining that small door was getting weaker from over time.

He sensed for a while and his face paled. He said quickly, "This door can't be maintained for a long time. It will disappear due to lack of energy."

Pausing for a while, Shi Yan suddenly shouted. "I don't care if you want to get in there or not, I gotta go now."

Then, his body flashed like a dark light, disappearing into that small door.

At the moment he disappeared, a shaking energy wave transmitted to the door, and the halo the seven Demogorgon statues were projecting got weakened by a little bit.

Everybody observed carefully. Seeing that change, they were startled as they suddenly got it.

After one person walked through the door, the energy that maintained the door would weaken by a little bit. In other words, the energy supplied to this door wasn't enough to let many people get through the door.

After each entry, the energy would reduce. Once this energy was drained, the door would disappear.

No one knew what stood behind that door. However, since this place was the First Demon Area, and that door was created by the last beam of energy from the top seven Demogorgon statues, of course, it wasn't just a normal door.

As the Grace Mainland has come to the end of its energy cycle, all clans understood this situation, and were trying to find the way out for their clans, to seek a chance to survive.

Perhaps, behind the door was a solution, or maybe it was perilous. But at least they knew they had a possibility.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were a bit hesitant. They exchanged looks, then dashed towards the door.

They disappeared into the door after Shi Yan.

The energy supporting that door got weakened the second time. If it continued this way, the door would disappear not long afterward.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si exchanged looks, then harshly stormed forward, turning into two beams of light and disappearing.

Corpse Chief and Kanta kept silent for seconds and then shot out. Right at the moment they started to move, the Yin Written Charm Scripture and the dim halo also flew towards that door.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Four light silhouettes disappeared.

Crack Crack Crack!

Shattering sounds echoed from the seven Demogorgon statues as they started to crack into smaller pieces rumblingly. At this moment, as their energy had been used up, that door was dispelled.

Many members of the Demon Clan were dumbstruck on their mounts.

Many of Jie Ji's subordinates stormed to the door, but they

couldn't find anything. They were all grim, as regret rose in their hearts.

...

It was a vast space with many meteorolites hovering in the dark, starry sky. Those massive meteorolites suspended in the void motionlessly.

Each meteorolite was as big as an entire island in the Grace Mainland. They were bare and smooth, without a single grass. Those meteorolites had many shapes. Some were connected with each other, but most of them were separated, hovering still in the void.

They couldn't see the end of this space, in which uncountable meteorolites floated still.

Shi Yan stood on one of the meteorolites, which wasn't small or big. His face was grimaced and darkened, as he was urging powers to cover his body.

A fire flower sparkled out of Shi Yan's body. The scorching flame slowly arose, keeping his body comfortable.

The meteorolite under his feet was dark brown and rigid. There was no heaven and earth aura, or air. This place was several times colder than the Cold Bitter Land.

When Shi Yan appeared here, his body was stiffened, as if even his blood was frozen. His energy oozed, struggling slowly inside his body.

Breathing was just a routine of warriors at his realm. It wasn't an essential condition to survive. The energy in their bodies was the root to protect their perpetual lives.

Shortage of air wasn't important, and low gravity wasn't a matter. The most horrible thing was that this place didn't have any heaven and earth energy. This place was cold with radiation and unknown dangers.

There were dozens of giant meteorolites above his head, under his feet, in front of him, and behind him; meteorolites were everywhere.

The nearest meteorolite was around one thousand miles away from him. In this dark space, energy tornados seemed to hide everywhere. Such kind of energy could even shake his soul.

This place looked like a meteorolite sea. Countless meteorolites were scattered disorderedly and chaotically, seeming to hide tremendous dangers.

In front of Shi Yan's eyes, he often saw explosions in the farthest place naked eyes could see. The shockwaves of those explosions transmitted from unknown distance, and created formidable impacts that were like ferocious aura attacking people, cracking their hearts.

Under his feet was a formation built of hundreds of giant bones. That formation was obviously broken, as Shi Yan could see many broken bones. There was no energy moving anymore.

Those bones, which still had energy, shimmered faintly. Not long afterward, Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Bo Ruo, Gu Da Si, and Kante appeared one after another.

Until Corpse Chief, the last one who emerged from the bone formation, arrived, the bones that still had energy shattered immediately. They exploded, leaving only dust.

Under the energy impact, all bones turned into dust. In this weightless environment, bone dust was like sand grains scattering into the immense darkness.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji appeared one by one. They immediately urged their power to protect their bodies from the bitter cold, and created the power armor to avoid the unknown radiation.

Kante and Corpse Chief weren't an exception. Zenith, who was hiding in the Yin Written Charm Scripture, seemed to mobilize his

energy too. An immense, gray mist engulfed the Yin Written Charm Scripture, just like a cloak, covering the scripture. However, the gloomy halo wasn't affected. No energy wave rippled from it.

After eight people from the First Demon Area arrived, they hadn't said anything yet as they were quietly observing the situation, dumbstruck.

There was no heaven and earth energy to be supplied. Dangers were waiting everywhere, and they needed to use energy to protect their bodies continually in this cold, dark, vast area, where energy tornados were hiding everywhere.

This place was much more dangerous than the First Demon Area. Everything in their sight was perilously dangerous.

"I think... we've escaped the Grace Mainland," Shi Yan said after being frightened for a while. "This is the foreign land you've mentioned. However, our fortune seems not good, as we couldn't find the place with abundant heaven and earth energy. Perhaps, this is where we bury our bodies."

Everybody fell into silence.

# Chapter 700: Volunteer

---

This place should be the foreign land, but it neither had the sun, moon, stars, nor usable heaven and earth energy. This environment was too extreme.

It wasn't easy to survive in such a meteorolite sea, let alone cultivating or breaking to the higher realms. It was just a dream here.

The hope in their hearts collapsed directly as soon as they arrived. They had a feeling that they could never see the dawn again.

For the time being, everybody kept silent.

After a while, Kante of the Dark Spirit Clan suddenly shouted with his gloomy face. "Bao Ao, is this the place of hope you said? You've brought me to a dead road."

Corpse Chief, Zenith inside the Yin Written Charm Scripture, and the creature with the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, got angry. Energy rippled from them, as if they wanted to take back justice.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji couldn't snap back. Looking at the meteorolite sea in front of them, which was even more desolate than the First Demon Area, they smiled miserably, as they had no solution.

"If we start a fight in this place, no one could get any benefits." Shi Yan glared at the Yin Written Charm Scripture, talking faintly. "Without the energy to supply, when we fight, we can't refill our power. I think we will die earlier."

Even if the True God Realm warriors used the top-grade Essence Crystals in the Grace Mainland to refill their power, it was like putting salt into the ocean.

Although Shi Yan had many top-grade Essence Crystals in his Storage Ring, if they battled, those crystals couldn't supply the energy used by even one strike.



If they ran out of energy, it was impossible to survive in this perilous area.

His words worked. The four people calmed down their intention of attacking them.

"Can we go back?" Zenith's feeble voice came from the Yin Written Charm Scripture. "The Grace Mainland's our homeland. Although its energy was about to reach the end... at least we still have some. It's much better than this place. If we can return, I won't care about what your Demon Clan's done anymore."

Bao Ao and Jie Ji beamed a forced smile while shaking their heads, as they had no way to come back.

Shi Yan snorted. "The bone formation has exploded into dust. How could we get back? Don't talk nonsense."

"Kid, it's all because of you! You're Shi Yan, right? You weren't nice at all in the Grace Mainland. You killed my fellows. If you provoke me, even if I have to waste my energy, I will still kill you!" Zenith shouted from the Yin Written Charm Scripture.

Waves of soul fluctuation surged vehemently from the Yin Written Charm Scripture like a soul tornado, engulfing Shi Yan.

Shi Yan didn't change his face, but he was shivering inside. He could feel the sacrificial altar in his head seeming to be urged, as if it wanted to get out of his head.

Zenith had reached the King God Realm, but his energy had been lost significantly. That was why he couldn't take the upper hand in the battle with Bao Ao and Jie Ji.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were both at the Third Sky of True God Realm, with one step in the King God Realm. Before Zenith could recover his competence, he still would have to struggle hard.

However, it wasn't a big deal to fight with Shi Yan.

"Zenith, you can try. I'm not sure who will die first." Jie Ji

grinned fiendishly, his face crazy. This man was inborn savage. He would never stand any threat.

Bao Ao kept silent, but fighting will was seething in his dark pupils. He looked like he would burst out insanely if someone provoked him.

The Demon Clan was combative. It was the wildest and most ferocious clan among the big clans. Sometimes, even if they knew it would be harmful, they would drag the opponents to death together.

As Zenith saw Bao Ao and Jie Ji protect Shi Yan, he was enraged. However, he didn't dare to call for a battle at this moment, so he kept his mouth shut.

"What to do then?" Corpse Chief was calm. He spoke up when he saw the others were quiet now. "Who knows how to get out of this place? Staying here isn't a good solution. We have no idea about this place, and we are consuming our energy every second. We can't endure for a long time. We need to find the exit quickly."

Bao Ao shrugged, swinging his arms begrudgingly. "I have no idea."

"This place's a meteorolite sea. Seems like there's something outside the meteorolite sea, preventing the stars from entering this place. If we can cross this meteorolite sea, perhaps we can find the way out." Pondering for a while, Shi Yan suddenly said. "However, I'm afraid of dangers hiding behind those meteorolites. I don't know what would happen if we do that."

"Nonsense!" Zenith couldn't help but scold. "Who doesn't recognize the dangers in between the meteorolites. Your words are useless. If you have the guts, and you aren't afraid of death, you can try first. Let's see if you can cross it."

Shi Yan got angry as he harrumphed. "If you have a good solution, I want to hear if you don't mind."

Zenith didn't say anything.

"We can only cross the meteorolite sea. We have no choice, and we can't stay here for a long time. If we've consumed much of our energy, it would be harder to cross the sea," The dim halo suddenly said, after having been silent since the beginning. "I can go there first. If it's too dangerous, I can always come back."

He paused for a while and then continued. "You, that human kid, you come with me. I don't have a body. I'm afraid I won't be able to sense dangers. If you go with me, we can see the dangers between the meteorolites clearer."

Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith got cheered up and nodded continually.

"Yin Spirit, your suggestion is not bad. We agree," said Zenith.

He didn't know what the name of the other was, but since he had the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, he always called him Yin Spirit. The other had no objection, as he accepted this addressing.

Kante and Corpse Chief nodded to show their agreement.

"No!" Jie Ji suddenly laughed evilly. "Good calculation, Yin Spirit. You think we don't know you want Shi Yan's heaven flames? Aren't you still waiting for such a good chance to snatch Shi Yan's heaven flame to increase your power?"

Bao Ao beamed a faint smile. His attitude was clear - he didn't agree.

"This way would benefit us all," Zenith couldn't help but talk from the Yin Written Charm Scripture. "Bao Ao, Jie Ji, if you don't agree, don't blame us for having no mercy! This way doesn't work, that way doesn't work... And you have no solution. Hurry up, or don't blame us later on."

"Yin Spirit has volunteered, so of course, you guys have to find someone to cooperate with him. We won't let you take advantage of us," Kante shouted. "If Shi Yan can't go, you Demon Clan should

send another one to try the dangers in between those meteorolites. Send someone to replace him. We won't have any objection then."

After Kante said that, they immediately divided into two sides. Shi Yan and the Demon Clan was one team, and the other four formed the other team.

According to him, Yin Spirit from their team had volunteered to go, so the Demon Clan should send someone to survey this area too. If Shi Yan didn't want to go, one from Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Bo Ruo, or Gu Da Si had to go with him. This was to be fair, they said.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji wanted to stay something, but Shi Yan spoke up, "I have no problem with that."

He turned around, looking at the two leaders of Demon Clan and chuckled. "Don't worry. I think I can survive those energy tornados."

"What we worry isn't only the tornadoes. We are worried about someone else!" Jie Ji put on his savage face, looking at Yin Spirit. "Some beings are more dangerous than the energy tornados. You shouldn't take responsibility recklessly. These folks can trap you badly, you know?"

Normally, soul class living forms could be immune to almost all kinds of dangers. Although Yin Spirit looked generous as he volunteered to take risks, he surely had some dark schemes. Otherwise, he wouldn't want to drag Shi Yan with him.

"It's alright. I think people should be calm and honest in the given situation." Shi Yan grinned, and didn't wait for Bao Ao and Jie Ji to talk more. He said abruptly, "I'm going now. I'll wait for you in there. You have to go, okay?"

Then, before Bao Ao and Jie Ji could stop him, he turned into a beam of light, shooting into the dark, cold void in front of them like a meteor.

As soon as he got into the void, he disappeared immediately, and

his living energy fluctuation seemed to vanish into thin air too. The hotshots standing on the meteorolite couldn't sense him anymore.

Everybody was startled, as fear arose in their hearts. They were scared of the areas between those meteorolites even more.

Even though Yin Spirit had said that he wanted to pioneer that area, seeing the anomaly of space, he regretted his decision immediately. He lingered, not wanting to go anymore.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji put on a cold visage. Evil light sparkled in their eyes, looking at that dim halo.

Kante, Corpse Chief, and the Yin Written Charm Scripture also looked at him, as if they were urging him to move.

Yin Spirit had to go. He swayed at his spot for a while before gingerly flying towards the direction Shi Yan left. At this moment, everybody could see bunches of Yin spirits and wandering ghosts appearing from that dim halo. They were showing their fangs and claws, which could tingle people's scalp.

"After surveying the place, you should hurry to come back. We will discuss and find the solution." Zenith pretended to be nice, giving advice. Then, he continued to talk calmly. "Be careful. This foreign land's dangerous. Don't fall into any traps."

Yin Spirit cursed under his breath. Anyway, he had no choice but to follow Shi Yan.

Bao Ao's team exchanged looks. They quieted down, gazing at the cold, dark area in front of their eyes, releasing the Soul Consciousness to sense their journey, in vain.

Everybody felt more insecure. As anxiety rose in their hearts, their eyes got distressed, thinking that they were too careless in entering the foreign land this time.

# Table of Contents

## [God Of Slaughter](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601: Refining secret treasures](#)

[Chapter 602: Ghost Hunter breaks through!](#)

[Chapter 603: The Race Catastrophe](#)

[Chapter 604: Dark Sea overflows](#)

[Chapter 605: Underworld God Sacrifice](#)

[Chapter 606: Separate](#)

[Chapter 607: Catastrophe](#)

[Chapter 608: Ringleader](#)

[Chapter 609: Opportunity](#)

[Chapter 610: Bao Ao](#)

[Chapter 611: The Ancient 'Bao' \(Cruel\) Family](#)

[Chapter 612: Ancient Mark](#)

[Chapter 613: Blood animosity](#)

[Chapter 614: Change](#)

[Chapter 615: I have something to say!](#)

[Chapter 616: Run counter](#)

[Chapter 617: Rupture](#)

[Chapter 618: Later happiness?](#)

[Chapter 619: Frantically great refining!](#)

[Chapter 620: New situation!](#)

[Chapter 621: Befriend Monsters](#)

[Chapter 622: Good friendship](#)

[Chapter 623: Demonic beast sheds the mortal skin](#)

[Chapter 624: Breaking rules!](#)

[Chapter 625: Mirror Lake](#)

[Chapter 626: The Star Original Essence](#)

[Chapter 627: If we want to do it, leave no room for maneuver!](#)

[Chapter 628: Kill him!](#)

[Chapter 629: Everyone takes a step back](#)

[Chapter 630: The Creator's Divine Pond!](#)

[Chapter 631: Fire and Ice Secret Domain](#)

[Chapter 632: Wicked genius!](#)

[Chapter 633: Apprehend](#)

[Chapter 634: Mind perception](#)  
[Chapter 635: Yang Tian Emperor gets crazy!](#)  
[Chapter 636: Fierce man!](#)  
[Chapter 637: Tit for tat!](#)  
[Chapter 638: Negative field !](#)  
[Chapter 639: Repercussion](#)  
[Chapter 640: Demon Clan? God Clan?](#)  
[Chapter 641: Parting ways](#)  
[Chapter 642: Upgrade the whole body!](#)  
[Chapter 643: King of Perpetual Night Forest](#)  
[Chapter 644: Corpse Clan's Soul Sacrificial Altar](#)  
[Chapter 645: Contact the foreign land](#)  
[Chapter 646: No return!](#)  
[Chapter 647: Impasse?](#)  
[Chapter 648: Deep affection – Generous love](#)  
[Chapter 649: A beam of hope for dawn](#)  
[Chapter 650: Construct the city walls](#)  
[Chapter 651: Dispel visitors](#)  
[Chapter 652: I'm the Master!](#)  
[Chapter 653: Wind and clouds move!](#)  
[Chapter 654: Master Acceptance Ceremony](#)  
[Chapter 655: No way back!](#)  
[Chapter 656: Qi Tian Odie](#)  
[Chapter 657: Inextricable!](#)  
[Chapter 658: Then we fight!](#)  
[Chapter 659: Headshot!](#)  
[Chapter 660: Offer sacrifices to the divine weapon!](#)  
[Chapter 661: The perpetual light that never extinguishes!](#)  
[Chapter 662: Five Elements Primitive Realm](#)  
[Chapter 663: Leave the rest to me](#)  
[Chapter 664: Change the structure!](#)  
[Chapter 665: Naked provocation!](#)  
[Chapter 666: The Utmost Eight](#)  
[Chapter 667: Purgatory of heart](#)  
[Chapter 668: Hit until she vomits the pellets!](#)  
[Chapter 669: Changes in earth and heaven !](#)  
[Chapter 670: Engulf!](#)  
[Chapter 671: Behead!](#)  
[Chapter 672: We believe in Old Long!](#)

[Chapter 673: Hundreds of flowers blossom](#)  
[Chapter 674: I don't need them!](#)  
[Chapter 675: Marvelous law](#)  
[Chapter 676: Destiny pronounces your sentence](#)  
[Chapter 677: Another entrance of the Secret Domain](#)  
[Chapter 678: Soul fragments](#)  
[Chapter 679: Drink](#)  
[Chapter 680: Demon Testing Needle](#)  
[Chapter 681: That's how we work!](#)  
[Chapter 682: A new world!](#)  
[Chapter 683: Advance together](#)  
[Chapter 684: The Seal of Upanishad of the lasting mark](#)  
[Chapter 685: The Three-tiered Soul Sacrificial Altar](#)  
[Chapter 686: True God Realm](#)  
[Chapter 687: Put down](#)  
[Chapter 688: Ancient Desolate Area, Border Sea](#)  
[Chapter 689: The Second Demon Area](#)  
[Chapter 690: Yin Spirit Ghost Flame](#)  
[Chapter 691: The statues of the Demogorgon](#)  
[Chapter 692: Derive the inheritance!](#)  
[Chapter 693: The Mark](#)  
[Chapter 694: Drawing of Lao Luo](#)  
[Chapter 695: Undying Demon Tribe](#)  
[Chapter 696: Open](#)  
[Chapter 697: Desolate deathly stillness](#)  
[Chapter 698: Hope of dawn in the middle of the ruins](#)  
[Chapter 699: Meteorolite Sea](#)  
[Chapter 700: Volunteer](#)